

Jaxen frowned. He suddenly felt a piercing pain in his hand holding the gun.

He lowered his head and saw that his finger on the trigger, together with the front half of the submachine gun, was directly cut off and fell to the floor.

Before Jaxen could scream, Liam had already made a move. He raised the bayonet and stabbed between Jaxen's eyebrows.

Jaxen's eyelids twitched violently. Regardless of the pain in his severed finger, he quickly pulled out the bayonet from his waist and fought back. At this moment, the small passage seemed to have turned into a battlefield.

Jaxen and Liam were fighting like soldiers, using the most primitive weapons.

Jaxen kept fighting back. He moved away Liam's bayonet and said with a sinister smile, "I must cut off your neck with my own hands."

The harsh sound of two bayonets clashing echoed in the passage.

Liam's cold and ruthless bayonet responded to Jaxen's attacks.

In the darkness, Liam's and Jaxen's bayonets sparkled as they kept colliding.

Liam's attacks were fatal.

And the more they fought, the more panicked Jaxen became.

He didn't expect Liam to be so powerful.

He couldn't keep up with Liam's speed.

Suddenly, a sharp silver light flashed.

It turned out that Liam's bayonet pierced Jaxen's eye directly.

"Ahhh! Ahhh!"

Jaxen felt a piercing pain.

The pain was unbearable.

Liam just ignored Jaxen's screams. He kicked the lower part of Jaxen's body and pulled the bayonet out of Jaxen's eye with great force.

Blood immediately gushed out of Jaxen's eye.

Jaxen covered his eye and begged for mercy desperately. "I will give you

one hundred million dollars. Just spare my life. Please don't kill me."

But Liam just turned a deaf ear to Jaxen. He stepped on Jaxen's shoulder with his hands against the handle of the bayonet. Then he poked hard at Jaxen's empty eye.

The bayonet pierced straight through Jaxen's head and came out from the back of his head.

He was dying now.

"If I had known it earlier, I wouldn't have accepted this job. Sure enough, only a few mercenaries can have a good ending..."

Jaxen's other intact eye widened.

And there was only endless regret in it.

Liam let go of the bayonet, turned around, and walked to the iron door of the basement. He only said coldly, "Keep the money to yourself."

He looked at the dark basement and first threw a corpse down. When there was no movement inside, he turned over and jumped down.

Chapter 216 Bloodstained Driver's License

Down below, a vast expanse waited in the basement, surpassing the area above in its magnitude.

Due to the suboptimal lighting, the absence of clutter was apparent. The premises revealed an assemblage of no less than twelve chambers.

"Julie, where are you? I'll be there shortly!"

Liam's resonating voice echoed as he scoured each room to search for Julie. Despite his efforts, every chamber lay barren, devoid of human presence.

At long last, he stumbled upon an operating room of considerable size. On the sterile operating table, copious amounts of blood remained, juxtaposed with a haphazard stack of female attire and labeled blood bags denoting the unique nature of the crimson liquid.

Beneath the heap of garments, Liam retrieved a driver's license, prompting a surge of astonishment within him as his eyes expanded in disbelief.

Julie was the owner of this bloodstained driver's license!

A sharp pain coursed through his body as he swiveled his head towards the blood bags beside him.

All the blood in the bags had been extracted from Julie's veins!

The contemplation of Julie lying motionless on the frigid operating table, stripped of her blood, provoked a sense of despair within him, causing great sorrow to befall his spirit.

With immense force, Liam clamped his teeth together, eliciting a blood oozing from the crevices of his teeth.

With an eruption of fury, he struck the frigid, unyielding operating table with his clenched fist and bellowed, "How could you commit such a heinous act, you vile wretches! I want you all to perish! I shall not rest until every last of you has met your demise."

At the time, he was insane, and with his crimson eyes, he was anxious to rip up everything before him!

"Julie, where have you gone? I'm here to help!" In a frenzied state, Liam's voice echoed through the empty basement, calling out for Julie with desperation.

A feeling of hopelessness consumed him.

Liam's entire being lost its strength, and he slumped onto the edge of the operating table, his head hanging low.

The shrapnel embedded in his shin remained lodged, exacerbating the profuse bleeding that continued due to his relentless struggle just moments before.

Liam was so severely blown that his grip was slipping.

His bloody palm caressed Julie's driver's license, attempting to cleanse it of the bloodstains.

"I refuse to accept that death is your fate!"

Liam's hands trembled as he held onto the clothing that belonged to Julie, and tears streamed down his face uncontrollably as he tried to regain his composure.

He had sustained eight bullet wounds in the battleground before, including one which was close to his heart, yet he didn't shed tears.

He saw all his comrades die before him but didn't shed any tears.

For three long years, he had poured all his love into Yolanda. When he was cheated, not even a single tear escaped his eyes.

But now, Liam couldn't contain his tears as he gazed at Julie's stained clothes. ①

His body was wracked with unbearable pain.

The memories of his past flooded Liam's mind relentlessly.

Julie's unwavering loyalty to him was absolute, regardless of the choices he made. She would stand by his side with unshakeable belief.

However, during Julie's dire need, he failed to offer her the timely companionship and support she required. ①

"I refuse to believe you have passed away until I see your lifeless body with my eyes."

Liam lifted his head and immediately sensed a chill running down the nape of his neck.

Breeze?

With a sudden jolt, he rose to his feet and sprinted toward the origin of the rushing air.

In the corner of the operating room was a door disguised as a wall!

With sudden determination, Liam opened the door, and a narrow passageway appeared before his eyes.

He was struck by the distant roar that echoed in his ears.

"Could that be the sound of a helicopter? Are they planning to escape?"

Instantly, his years of battlefield experience served him well as he discerned that the sound was that of a helicopter's propeller.

As he ran desperately along the passageway, Liam's eyes turned red with urgency. ①

Chapter 217 One Hour To Survive

Five minutes ago.

Inside the operating room, the old doctor's scalpel had already made a big cut on Julie's skin. Suddenly, a deafening explosion sounded outside. When Jarrod, who was pacing back and forth anxiously, heard the explosion, he was almost scared to death.

He directly collapsed on the ground.

The entire basement shook because of the violent explosion.

Dust kept falling from the ceiling.

The old doctor withdrew his scalpel and shouted angrily, "How can we do the surgery in this way?"

He took the needle and thread on the side, roughly stitched Julie's wound, and shouted at Jarrod, "Carry her. Let's go!"

Since the old doctor urged them, the other doctors hurried out of the operating room through the secret passage. They even forgot to take the blood bags with them.

A group of people came out of the secret passage, passed through the sewer, and climbed up.

The old doctor took the lead. He pushed open the lid of the sewer, got out, and ran straight to the dock.

Due to the violent jolt while they escaped, the rough stitches on Julie's wound were broken. The blood flowed uncontrollably, drenching Jarrod all over.

The stinky smell of blood instantly attracted the flies on the dock. They flew over, stopped at the wound, and gathered to lick it.

The old doctor checked Julie's pupils. When he saw her pale face, he frowned and said, "If this woman can't be operated in an hour, she will die. Damn! If that happens, her heart will be greatly affected."

He looked at the dark red blood on Julie's chest, slapped Jarrod's face, and roared, "You fucking loser! You can't even carry a person well. If she dies, we will all be killed. Do you fucking understand that? You're

useless trash! You bastard!"

Jarrold thought it was only as simple as taking Julie's heart out.

He never expected that things would become so complicated and horrible.

So Jarrold hastily evaded the responsibility and pinned all the blame on Julie. "It's all Julie's fault. She is so heavy that I find it difficult to carry her. Anyway, she has so much blood. She won't die if she bleeds a little more, right?"

He had no medical knowledge, so he didn't know that Julie was in danger after so much blood was drawn from her.

Now that Julie had gone through so many jolts, it was very likely that she couldn't hold on for an hour.

When the doctors carried Julie to the helicopter, Jarrold quickly said with a smile, "I have given Julie to you. Can you give me the fifty million dollars now?"

Upon hearing that Jarrold still dared to ask for money, the old doctor trembled with anger.

He cursed aloud, "You bastard! This is all your fault! Why didn't you make it clear to me that you have provoked such a fierce man? Many people have already died, and I am in such a mess now. Do you still want money? Fuck off!"

Jarrold immediately realized that the old doctor didn't want to pay him. His cowardice disappeared in an instant.

The fierceness in his eyes intensified. He hugged the old doctor and threatened, "She is my wife's niece. Give me the fifty million dollars you've promised. Otherwise, no one can leave."

Now that he couldn't leave, the old doctor became more and more anxious. He quickly said to his subordinate beside him, "Go get my bag."

When Jarrold thought that the old doctor was willing to give him money now, he immediately stared at the old doctor with full attention. His eyes were full of expectation.

But to Jarrold's surprise, the old doctor took a gun from his bag. He looked at Jarrold, sneered, and shot Jarrold's legs.

Two gunshots sounded.

Two holes suddenly appeared on Jarrod's legs.

"Ahhh!" Jarrod screamed in pain.

He covered his legs and instantly collapsed to the ground.

The old doctor curled his lips, turned around, and climbed onto the helicopter. Then he roared, "We must arrive at the capital in an hour!"

But as soon as he said this, a bayonet flew into the air and hit his throat like a bullet.

Blood immediately spurted out.

Recommended for you



Unexpected Fortune: The Long-lost Heir Returns Home

Poverty is a terrible disease. Most humans want to be wealthy.
Are you also one of them?...

Concealing identity

Read

Chapter 218 The Helicopter Would Explode

"Argh!"

The old doctor clutched his neck and fell out of the helicopter with his eyes wide open.

He stared ahead in disbelief, and he saw a man walking out of the darkness.

The bright moonlight fell on the man's handsome face, which was a stark contrast to his bloodshot eyes.

The hatred in his eyes was like a flame that kept burning.

"Liam..." Jarrod's face was full of horror when he recognized the man.

Liam's cold voice and the corpses all over the ground on the monitor were still vivid in his mind. He couldn't erase them.

His body wriggled desperately, as he tried to escape.

But since both of his legs were pierced by the bullets, he couldn't stand up at all. He could only grab the ground with both hands and crawl away. He wanted to go farther and father.

The people in the helicopter looked at the dead old doctor. One of them shouted, "Let's go! Speed up!"

When the pilot saw that Liam was about to approach the helicopter, he quickly moved the joystick.

The helicopter began to take off slowly.

Everyone looked down. And when they saw that they were getting farther and farther from the ground, they finally breathed a sigh of relief.

However, something terrifying suddenly happened.

Liam, who walked out of the darkness, ran at the fastest speed.

Everyone shouted in horror, "Speed up! Hurry!"

The pilot tried his best to pull up the joystick. "Damn! We're almost four meters away from the ground. What are you guys afraid of?"

As soon as they heard that they were already four meters away from the

ground, they instantly relaxed.

How could Liam possibly jump into the helicopter?

He was not Superman, after all.

One doctor patted his chest and sneered, "Oh, that loser is running. Does he intend to jump into the helicopter? Ha-ha! He is overestimating himself."

As soon as the doctor finished his words, there was a creak.

The helicopter had been rising steadily just now. But suddenly, it shook violently to the side.

Then a hand holding the edge of the hatch appeared.

Liam turned over and jumped in.

He shook his right hand that held the hatch just now, and his face was stern.

The blood from his hand fell on the faces of the doctors, and they immediately screamed.

Liam straightened up, looked down at those people, and asked in a harsh voice, "Did I let you go?"

He then turned and looked at Julie. And when he saw that she was wearing a breathing device and her face was deathly pale, he was shocked.

Liam's chapped lips curved into a cruel smile. He slowly approached the doctors beside him.

When the pilot saw this, he swallowed his saliva hard, quietly took out a pistol from below, and aimed it at Liam.

The pilot plucked up the courage to pull the trigger.

Then gunshots rang out.

As bullets hit someone's body, blood splashed out.

But it wasn't Liam's body. It turned out that he grabbed the old doctor's body in the blink of an eye and used it as a shield.

Then he pulled the bayonet from the old doctor's throat and threw it at the pilot in front of him.

The sharp bayonet instantly pierced through the pilot's neck.

What came next was a slaughter.

"No, don't come over. Spare me."

"Please, let me go. I'm just a doctor."

"Mom, please come and save me."

But Liam just ignored the wails. He broke their necks one after another mercilessly.

When he saw the stitched wound on Julie's chest, his heart broke.

He took off his coat and covered her naked body. He murmured, "They all deserve to die, right?"

Boom!

Since no one was controlling the helicopter now, it constantly descended.

Liam rushed to the pilot's seat and skillfully controlled the helicopter to take off again.

At this moment, he suddenly understood why his family made him learn all kinds of skills.

If he hadn't received different trainings, he and Julie would die today.

Perhaps a person of high status like him was not destined to live an ordinary and stable life.

However, when the pilot shot several times just now, some of the bullets pierced through the fuel tank on the side.

The oil had been leaking, and the helicopter could explode at any time.

And it couldn't possibly have enough power to reach the nearest hospital.

Chapter 219 A Big Shot Would Protect Me

Liam tried his best to maintain the balance of the helicopter. He had no choice but to return to the dock.

When the helicopter got closer to the ground, he saw Jarrod again.

Fierceness filled Liam's eyes. He maneuvered the joystick and went straight in Jarrod's direction. He was full of killing intent.

Jarrod lay supine on the ground and stared at the approaching helicopter. Extreme fear was written all over his face.

Just now, he saw with his own eyes that Liam jumped up at least two meters from the ground.

The doctors were already short of time, so he knew they wouldn't come back. Could it be that the person in the helicopter was Liam?

The helicopter shook for a while before it landed on the ground steadily. And when Jarrod saw the man sitting in the pilot's seat, his eyes widened.

Indeed, it was Liam. He was so scared that he trembled. Although he had already guessed it was Liam, he was still surprised. How could Liam know how to drive a helicopter?

Jarrod was in a daze. And before he could come back to his senses, Liam started kicking the dead bodies that were blocking his way to the ground.

Then he gently carried Julie in his arms.

Her body was so light at the moment that he didn't need to use much strength at all.

Liam suddenly remembered the blood bags in the operating room.

At the thought of this, his heart ached. The pain was so unbearable that it made him hard to breathe.

"Julie, hold on a little. We're going home."

When Jarrod saw Liam jump off the helicopter, he hurriedly begged for mercy. "Liam, please spare me. It's not my fault. They only forced me. I have nothing to do with this."

Liam stepped on his wound and said coldly, "I will make your life a living hell."

At this moment, engines roared in the silence of the night. And bright lights lit up the dark surroundings.

Then super luxury cars surrounded them one by one.

Strong men in black got out of the cars.

The sound of the car doors being slammed shut echoed in the dock.

Jarrold was too stunned to react. Even his mind seemed to freeze.

For a moment, he didn't understand why so many people appeared on the dock all of a sudden.

Then he remembered that the old doctor had said Julie's heart was prepared for a big shot.

Jarrold saw a glimmer of hope. He now had a chance to survive.

These people must have been sent by that big shot.

At the thought of this, Jarrold shouted, "Help! Please help me! That man is Liam, and he is holding my wife's niece Julie."

As he thought that he would survive, a sense of joy filled Jarrold's mind.

He looked at Liam in front of him and laughed out loud. "Liam, this is fate! A loser like you should serve me and die. Do you dare to kill me in front of so many people? What can you do to me now? Let me tell you, everything I did today was for a big shot in the capital. I did this to save his life, so he will definitely protect me."

"Oh, yeah?" Liam sneered coldly, looking at Jarrold condescendingly.

He didn't want to talk to Jarrold anymore, so he walked toward the group of strong men with Julie in his arms.

Suddenly, all the strong men stood upright, bowed their heads, and shouted respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman!"

Chapter 220 Selection Of Good Doctors

Jarrold's eyes widened. He was confused as to what was going on.

Wasn't Liam just an ordinary employee of the Rinku Group?

Why did the men who got out of the luxury cars show him respect?

What was Liam's true identity?

At this moment, Klaus also got out of the car. And the first thing he saw was Jarrold lying supine on the ground.

He quickly ran to Liam and asked concernedly, "How is Miss Fiber?"

Liam shook his head and said coldly, "That man on the ground is not allowed to die until we find out who's behind all this."

Klaus nodded heavily with a serious expression that no one had ever seen before. He promised, "Don't worry. I will let him tell us everything. And I will make him suffer a lot."

Jarrold heard everything, and he was utterly scared. The fear in his heart made him find it difficult to breathe, and he couldn't help trembling.

The joy he felt just now was replaced by unprecedented fear.

Then a foul smell came from his crotch. It turned out that he wetted his pants in fright.

Regardless of his painful legs, he tried his best to climb to Liam's feet and wailed, "Mr. Hoffman, I'm blind, and I'm a jerk. But please spare my life. I don't want to die."

But Liam just turned a deaf ear to Jarrold. He got in the car with Julie in his arms without looking back.

"Take him and keep an eye on him. If he dies before I interrogate him, I will kill all of you,"

Klaus shouted at the strong men behind him. Then he turned around and sat in the driver's seat.

He drove Liam and Julie to Furi Hospital.

While sitting in the car, Liam felt that Julie's body in his arms was getting colder. He felt that a boulder pressed his chest, and his heart

was in so much pain, making him extremely uncomfortable.

He gently stroked her face and said softly, "Julie? Julie, it's me, Liam. Wake up, okay?"

Julie's eyelashes flickered slightly. It was as if she had heard Liam's words.

Liam had been staring at Julie all the time, so he immediately noticed this small movement.

He held her hand carefully and whispered in her ear, "Julie, it's me, Liam. Wake up, please."

Julie opened her eyes slightly. She said weakly, "I... I knew you... would definitely come..."

She tried to lift her hand. But before she could touch Liam's face, her hand fell heavily.

Liam quickly grabbed her hand and put his face close to her. "I'm sorry, I was late."

"No... It's not too late..." Julie tried her best to smile. Then her eyes closed again.

When Liam saw this, he shouted desperately, "Hurry up!"

Klaus immediately honked the horn and stepped on the accelerator even harder.

The car galloped at full speed. In just five minutes, they arrived at the hospital.

Liam got out of the car with Julie in his arms and ran all the way to the emergency room while shouting, "Doctor, help!"

However, there was no one at the front desk except for a nurse yawning. The nurse just glanced at Julie and said impatiently, "Why are you shouting? You're so noisy that you disturbed my sleep."

It was not the right time to argue, so Liam held back his anger and said anxiously, "The patient has lost too much blood. I need a doctor urgently."

The nurse crossed her arms over her chest and sneered, "Recently, there has been a selection of good doctors in Salem. The doctors went to take group photos. They are not here now."

Instead of saving patients' lives, the doctors went to take group photos?

And for the selection of good doctors?

Liam's face darkened at once. He said coldly. "I said call the doctor over."

But Liam's expression didn't scare the nurse at all. Instead, she put her hands on her waist, stared at Liam, and scolded, "Didn't you hear what I said? Poor people like you are insignificant. You deserve to die." ③

"I don't need a doctor anymore. Take me to the operating room now."

When Liam looked at Julie's pale face in his arms, his patience was completely exhausted.

He had no choice but to do the surgery himself.

The nurse looked Liam up and down and sneered, "What are you going to do in the operating room? I think you are sent by another hospital to make trouble here. If there is negative news about our hospital, the doctors of your hospital will be good doctors, right?"

Then she turned her head and shouted, "Guards! Guards! Come here. Someone is making trouble here."

Chapter 221 Doing The Surgery Himself

At this moment, Klaus also entered the hospital with a big box in his hands. He heard the nurse calling the security guards.

He didn't say anything and just directly kicked the nurse to the floor. Then he rode on her, pressed a knife against her neck, and shouted harshly, "Now, take us to the operating room and prepare all the equipment. Otherwise, I will kill you directly."

The nurse nodded quickly. "Okay, I'll lead the way. Don't kill me."

Klaus' threat made her run immediately, leading Liam to the biggest operating room.

Liam turned to Klaus and said with a solemn expression, "Stand at the door and never allow anyone to come in."

Klaus turned around and was about to go out when Liam stopped him. "Wait! The blood bags." Klaus handed the box in his hands to Liam. Inside the box were the blood bags from the operating room in the illegal clinic that contained Julie's blood.

Liam nodded, asked the nurse next to him to take the box, and turned to the operating table.

He carefully put Julie down, took the blood bags from the box, and began transfusing blood immediately.

Liam only breathed a sigh of relief when he saw that Julie's face had become a little ruddy again. He then took off the coat she was wearing. The huge cut on her chest was instantly exposed.

This shocking wound made Liam's heart tighten again. His hands trembled uncontrollably.

He closed his eyes and took a deep breath, reminding himself, again and again, to calm down. At this moment, he was a doctor, and Julie was just a patient.

While watching this scene, the nurse sneered, "Her wound is so big. Who do you think you are to deal with it? I'm telling you, not everyone can perform surgery. You will only kill her and make the operating room

dirty."

Now that Klaus stayed outside, the female nurse was not afraid anymore.

After all, Liam didn't resist the insults just now. So she thought that he must be a useless idiot.

She wanted to vent all her anger on him.

Liam just closed his eyes and did not refute. But his reaction made the female nurse more certain of her thoughts. She sneered again, "I've already said this just now. If poor people like you die, it's nothing."

Liam suddenly opened his eyes this time.

He gave the nurse a piercing stare.

The nurse felt cold all over, and she couldn't help shivering.

"Cooperate with me and make sure to do your job well. If the operation fails, you will die with her," Liam said in an emotionless and icy voice.

The nurse swallowed her saliva hard. She suddenly realized that the man in front of her was not joking at all.

He was even more terrifying than Klaus.

She nodded and stammered, "Okay... I... will."

Liam took a long deep breath to suppress all the emotions that surged in his heart. Then he began to examine Julie's injury rationally.

"Too much blood loss, three-centimeter-long wound on the chest..."

The nurse just listened to Liam without saying anything. But deep in her heart, she despised him. She felt it was so funny that he really regarded himself as a doctor. If this woman died because of him, she wouldn't take responsibility.

But what happened next completely stunned her.

Liam performed the surgery with stable hands.

The scalpel and suture in his hands seemed alive. These two pieces of equipment automatically shuttled through the patient's wound with his help.

Liam carefully cut the rough stitches, cleaned the wound, and stitched it carefully again.

This kind of surgery usually took half an hour to complete. But he did it in less than ten minutes.

And since most of the blood had been transfused, Julie's pale face finally recovered a little.

Liam breathed a sigh of relief. She was breathing steadily now.

At this moment, a woman suddenly shouted outside the door, "Where do you think this is? You even did surgery without permission. Get out of here!"

Recommended for you



The Legendary Billionaire

In an effort to save his girlfriend's life, Randall's right hand was severely injured, rendering him disabled for life....

Modem

Billionaires

Read

Chapter 222 If The Patient Dies

Klaus stood firm outside the operating room.

He raised the bayonet in his hand and shouted at the doctors in front of him, "Step back! I'll kill whoever dares to approach me."

But the middle-aged woman in the lead didn't show any fear at all. She even stretched out her neck and sneered, "Just do it. Here, slash my neck. If you don't dare to kill me, you are a coward."

When the other doctors saw this, they flattered Zahra Riley for her bravery.

"Do you know who she is? She is Zahra Riley, the director of this hospital."

"That's right! She is the sister of the head of the Riley family, a big and powerful clan in Salem. Do you understand? She is not someone you can offend."

"The Riley family has been a big and powerful clan in Salem for a long time. And some time ago, Tyler became a member of the Norris family, a very powerful clan in the capital. So the Riley family has a stronger background now."

Zahra crossed her arms over her chest. She looked at Klaus with a face full of pride and said disdainfully, "You won't dare to hurt me at all. You're a piece of rubbish!"

Klaus had also heard things about the Riley family.

But Liam was from the Hoffman family, a more powerful clan. An ordinary woman who relied on her connections with the Norris family couldn't affect him.

Klaus sneered. He remained unmoved despite Zahra's threat.

He didn't say anything anymore. But he still raised his bayonet and blocked the door.

When the doctors saw Klaus' expression, they became more disdainful. They began shouting one after another.

"Get out of here! Otherwise, we'll call the police."

"If you dare to hurt our director, we will make you live in jail for the rest of your life."

"How dare you make trouble in the hospital of the Riley family! Don't you know your place?"

Inside the operating room, when the female nurse heard that Zahra and the other doctors had returned, she immediately regained her courage. She hurriedly pushed the door of the operating room open, walked past Klaus by walking along the edge of the wall, and cried to the doctors, "These two gangsters abducted and locked me in the operating room. They threatened that if I didn't listen to them, they would kill me."

The nurse exaggerated what had happened just now, shirking responsibilities.

While in the operating room, Liam also heard Tyler's name.

A murderous intent flashed through his eyes, and he snorted in his heart. It was so coincidental. He didn't expect to meet someone from the Riley family in this small hospital.

The quarrel outside intensified, and the noise was getting louder and louder. This seriously affected Julie's rest.

Liam frowned. He walked out of the operating room and closed the door behind him.

When Klaus saw Liam come out, he immediately bowed respectfully to Liam.

"Step back," Liam said, patting Klaus on the shoulder. Then he walked straight to Zahra.

Zahra looked at Liam up and down. And when she saw that his trousers were stained with blood, she smiled disdainfully.

Her face was full of arrogance. She poked Liam's chest with her fat finger and said contemptuously, "Look at your clothes. You are just a poor bastard. How dare you come to our operating room to make trouble! Do you know that if the patient dies in our hospital, the reputation of the entire hospital will be affected?"

It was already late at night, but Zahra and many other doctors were still in the hospital.

They deliberately took videos and group photos at midnight to show others that they were selfless and hardworking.

Only in this way could they get a good ranking in the selection of good doctors and improve the reputation of their hospital.

If this happened, more patients would come to their hospital, and they would make more money.

When Liam heard Zahra curse Julie, his disgust for the people of the Riley family immediately rose to a higher level.

He retorted coldly with a grim face, "I wanted your doctor to do the surgery, but you were all busy taking group photos just now. So I had no choice but to do it myself. But you said I would make the patient die? Is this your way of being a doctor?"

Upon hearing that Liam was questioning her, Zahra sneered and said even more disdainfully, "If such a poor waste like you also has medical skills, do we still need a hospital? Why don't we all resign and give this hospital to you?"

As soon as these words came out of her mouth, the doctors around them burst into laughter.

Liam squinted his eyes and asked coldly, "Do you think people like you who ignore the patients deserve to be called doctors? And you still aim to gain the title of good doctor? Are you worthy of it?"

Zahra wiped her finger that had just touched Liam and said with disgust, "We only serve the rich. And for those people, we are good doctors. We don't even want poor people like you to come here."

Liam was so angry with Zahra's shamelessness. He waved at Klaus behind him and said coldly, "Break her hands. Those hands are only suitable for sweeping garbage, not treating patients." 2

Chapter 223 Bring More People

Zahra was from the powerful Riley family. So all her life, she had never been threatened like this.

And recently, as long as anyone in Salem knew her identity, they all bowed to her, treating her with great respect.

But this poor man in front of her, the rubbish she hated the most, shamelessly said that he wanted to break her hands.

Zahra was so furious that she shouted, "How dare you say that! I'm a member of the Riley family. Are you courting death?"

With Liam's support, Klaus was naturally not afraid. After all, he knew very well that Liam was a member of the Hoffman family in the capital. So he smiled sinisterly, strode forward, and slowly approached Zahra.

Zahra was shocked. She didn't expect Klaus to be so reckless as to make such a move.

She panicked for a moment. Then she shouted, "Guards! Where are the security guards? Someone wants to beat me."

When the security guards heard Zahra's voice, more than a dozen of them rushed into the empty hospital.

Zahra pointed at Klaus and shouted, "This bastard wants to hurt me. Go and beat him to death."

The security guards immediately rushed to Klaus without saying a word. They raised their batons in their hands and smashed them at his head. But Klaus only sneered. After all, he was a leader of an underworld organization. In the eyes of a gangster like him, these security guards were nothing.

He clenched the bayonet in his hand, pushed away the batons of several security guards effortlessly, and stabbed them in their thighs.

"Ha-ha! This is great!" Klaus exclaimed, laughing out loud. He felt extremely happy to see them fall one by one.

Before, he only watched Liam fight against many people alone.

Now that he had also experienced it, he didn't expect it would feel so

wonderful.

Zahra was shocked to see the more than a dozen security guards fall to the floor, wailing.

When she saw the bayonet full of blood, she took a few steps back and hid behind several male doctors. Then she said in a panic, "You... Do you know who is guarding this place? The people of the Axe Gang are protecting us. They are the biggest gang in Salem.

The security guards in our hospital are from Axe Security. I advise you to get out of here as soon as possible."

The doctors behind were also afraid that Klaus would hurt them, so they only wanted to drive him away. They hurriedly echoed.

"That's right! I'm afraid you don't know how powerful the people of Axe Security are."

"Get out of here now. Otherwise, you won't be able to leave anymore."

But Klaus just ignored them. He wiped the blood off the bayonet and walked towards Zahra with a sinister smile.

Upon seeing this, the male doctors standing in front of Zahra shook off her hands and stepped back.

For a moment, Zahra was left alone in front.

Seeing that Klaus was getting closer and closer, she stammered, "You... Don't come over. If you dare to hurt me, the security guards of the Riley family and Axe Security will not let you go."

"Wait..." Liam suddenly spoke up, stopping Klaus.

Zahra thought Liam stopped Klaus because he was afraid to offend her, so she breathed a sigh of relief.

She patted her chest, and the trace of panic on her face quickly disappeared. Her previous arrogance returned, and she sneered, "Don't pretend to be strong if you have no guts. Otherwise, you will be a loser all your life. Stop pretending to be powerful. You're only making me sick."

Liam shook his head. It was as if he didn't hear what Zahra said.

"Axe Security, right? Since you rely on Tyson, I'll ask him to come over and break your hands in person."

When Zahra heard this, she suddenly laughed out loud. It was as if she

had heard the funniest joke in the world.

"Ha-ha! You're so funny. I don't know where you've heard of Tyson. But you want to call him over? You are so arrogant."

Liam didn't want to talk nonsense with Zahra anymore, so he took out his phone and was about to call Tyson.

Zahra just watched him disdainfully.

She pursed her lips and said contemptuously, "I can see that you have a serious mental problem. I advise you to get treatment as soon as possible. But since you are so poor, I can introduce you to an acquaintance, so you can get a discount."

When Klaus heard that Zahra was still insulting them, he was so angry that he couldn't hold back any longer.

He walked up to Liam and said respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman, don't bother anyone else. Let me just kill this bitch."

But Liam shook his head and stopped him. "The doctors here are bad people. I will not let them harm more patients. Besides, if they continue making trouble, it won't be good for Julie's rest."

Zahra glanced at Liam even more disdainfully.

She thought Liam was good at finding excuses for himself.

"You want to call Tyson? Fine! I will call him too."

After saying this, Zahra took out her phone and made a call.

As soon as someone answered on the other end of the line, she immediately complained, "Tyson, come here quickly. Someone is making trouble in my hospital."

Tyson said in a heavy voice, "Who the hell is that? I'll be right there."

Now that Tyson was willing to help her, Zahra didn't think too much. She shouted, "Take more people with you. I want these two idiots dead."

After hanging up the phone, she looked at Liam and Klaus, crossed her arms over her chest, and sneered, "I want to see how you two will die later."

Since Zahra had already called Tyson, Liam put his phone away with a sneer.

They were in a stalemate for about five minutes.

Outside the hospital, the sound of screeching tires broke the silence of the night.

Then came a series of messy footsteps.

Obviously, many people were coming.

A man's deep voice sounded outside.

"Who dares to make trouble in Furi Hospital? Don't you know that I, Tyson, protect this place? Who is it?"

Chapter 224 Do You Take Me Seriously

Tyson barreled into the hospital, accompanied by a crowd of over a hundred people.

Clad in the same security uniforms and brandishing sleek batons, they exuded an air of ferocity that made them formidable adversaries.

At the sight of Tyson, Zahra's countenance lit up with a captivating smile, and she dashed into his embrace with a flirtatious air. "Why did you keep me waiting? If you had arrived any later, my delicate hands would have been utterly shattered!"

With a mischievous glint in her eyes, Zahra playfully balled her fist and delivered a gentle punch to Tyson's chest after her teasing remark.

Tyson enveloped Zahra in a warm embrace, his laughter ringing out. "Ha ha, I've arrived!"

Having already shared a profound intimacy, Tyson and Zahra were now entwined in a passionate love affair.

Indeed, Zahra, a woman in the prime of her life, found herself yearning for a fulfillment that her husband could not provide. Her insatiable sexual desires burned with an intensity that left her longing for more.

For Zahra, Tyson was the epitome of masculinity, having once served in the armed forces. His robust physical strength and commanding presence made him the perfect match for her, both in physique and demeanor.

They liked each other's power and thus naturally fell in love!

Tyson's fingers boldly grazed Zahra's ample bosom, an act of intimacy that conveyed affection and possessiveness. He said tenderly, assuring her with unwavering devotion, "Fear not, my love. Anyone who dares to provoke you today won't make it past this door."

Zahra's cheeks flushed with a sense of gratification as she heard Tyson's unwavering commitment to her well-being.

With a coy gesture, Zahra pointed towards Liam outside the operating room. She said in a flirtatious tone, "He's over there, outside the

operating room."

The medical personnel gathered at the periphery, casting playful glances at the couple with a knowing smile.

Renowned for his unwavering ruthlessness, Tyson, the formidable leader of the Axe Security, was notorious among his peers.

Liam and Klaus, in their opinion, would perish!

At that moment, Tyson's entire focus was consumed by the woman nestled in his embrace, leaving no room for distraction. His eyes remained fixed on her, captivated by her presence, oblivious to his surroundings.

With a dismissive wave of his hand, Tyson issued a command with a hint of disdain in his voice. "Render him incapacitated and then bring him here!"

The cohort of security guards behind Tyson turned their heads in unison, encircling Liam with predatory grins plastered on their faces.

Klaus furrowed his brow as he surveyed the formidable group standing before him. He addressed Tyson immediately, speaking in a powerful, authoritative voice. "Tyson, I am a friend of Aikin, the most influential figure in the underworld of Salem. Consider your actions carefully before you harm me!"

Hearing the mention of Aikin's name, Tyson remained resolute, refusing to raise his gaze. He scoffed with a mixture of disdain and amusement at Klaus's words. "Aikin? How dare you be haughty knowing he left Salem? I now have control over Salem!"

"How powerful are you from the Axe Gang? How about me?" Liam retorted in a cold, unwavering tone.

Tyson involuntarily quivered at the sound of Liam's voice.

The voice sounded so familiar!

The memory of that dreadful man lingered in Tyson's mind like a haunting specter, refusing to fade even in the face of death!

Nestled in the comforting embrace of Tyson, Zahra remained oblivious to the subtle shift in his demeanor.

She scoffed and said arrogantly, "Do you consider yourself a big shot?"

Tyson doesn't take even Aikin seriously. What the heck are you? You're a loser."

Hearing Zahra's condescending words, Liam didn't succumb to anger. Instead, he let out a hearty laugh.

"Really? Do you take me seriously, Tyson?" Liam's tone suddenly shifted to icy.

Tyson gently raised his gaze to the man before him. His pupils shrank unexpectedly!

It was indeed Liam!

Tyson took a big gulp.

His last bit of hope was shattered at this same time!

Zahra felt furious when she saw Liam's stubbornness and cursed, "Fuck you! Can't you put a stop to it?"

Tyson was terrified when he heard this, and his entire body trembled!

Incessantly replaying in his head were the events of that day!

Fear had entirely taken over his body!

Slap!

Tyson snatched Zahra's hair and smacked her across the face!

He had bloodshot eyes. He yelled at Zahra on the floor, "Bitch, shut up!"

Chapter 225 Break One Of Her Legs

Zahra fell to the floor. She covered her face with her hand, and her mind went blank.

The people around her were all shocked when they saw this scene.

Tyson and Zahra were hugging each other just now. Why did Tyson suddenly hit Zahra?

Zahra suddenly got up from the floor, pointed at Tyson, and questioned loudly, "Why did you hit me? What is wrong with you?"

Tyson snorted coldly and scolded, "Be reminded that there are some people even I can't afford to offend, let alone you."

Zahra didn't expect this was Tyson's reason.

It made her furious. With one hand on her waist, she pointed at Liam with her other hand and snapped angrily, "So you think I can't afford to offend a loser whose clothes cost less than one hundred dollars? Tyson, what is wrong with you? If you don't give me an acceptable explanation, I won't let you go today."

Zahra still looked so unruly that Tyson didn't bother to talk to her anymore.

Instead, he walked straight to Liam. And suddenly, he bent down right before everyone's eyes.

Then he apologized in a loud voice, "Mr. Hoffman, I didn't know that the person she asked me to deal with was you. I'll leave right away."

But Liam shook his head and asked indifferently, "Is Zahra your lover?"

Tyson suddenly straightened up and nodded awkwardly.

"And she asked you to come here to kill me?" Liam added expressionlessly.

As soon as Liam said this, fear appeared on Tyson's face. And he felt a dull pain in his groin again.

He quickly shook his head and said, "No, it's not like that."

After their fight earlier, Tyson had sent some people to investigate Liam.

So he knew that Liam was kicked out of the Hoffman family and developed Funbuy independently. What was more, Liam had once defeated over a hundred people from the Axe Gang alone.

These things told him that he couldn't afford to offend a person like Liam. It didn't matter whether Liam was kicked out of the Hoffman family or not.

Liam fought against others with his fists. He couldn't afford to offend a man like Liam.

When Liam saw that Tyson looked embarrassed, he frowned and said, "I won't make it difficult for you. Just break one of Zahra's legs, and I will let this matter go."

Everyone was even more shocked when they heard this.

Would Tyson really dare to break one of Zahra's legs?

Sure enough, Tyson hesitated for a while. Then he said, "She is the sister of the head of the Riley family. The Riley family is very powerful now. If her leg is really broken, her family won't let it go."

When Liam heard this, he looked fiercer. He stared at Tyson coldly.

Klaus sneered, "Even my boss, Aikin, doesn't dare to disobey Liam. You should think it over."

Tyson was shocked this time. He felt bad in his heart.

It seemed that he couldn't resolve this matter peacefully today.

Even the former most powerful man in the underworld of Salem didn't dare to defy Liam. How dare he?

At this moment, Tyson had a faint feeling that Liam had not been kicked out of the Hoffman family.

He took a deep breath as many possibilities came to his mind.

Perhaps Liam could be the key to his career progression.

At the thought of this, Tyson stopped hesitating.

"Mr. Hoffman, I will do as you say," Tyson replied respectfully. Then he turned around, stared at Zahra coldly, and walked towards her step by step.

Zahra stared at Tyson in utter disbelief. She didn't expect that he would listen to Liam and break one of her legs.

The murderous look on Tyson's face scared her so much that she stepped back. But she still shouted, "Tyson, every time we had sex, you kept saying you love me. But now you will break my leg only after being scolded by a loser? Are you fucking a man? I am so blind. I should have known long ago that you're nothing but a loser, bastard! Don't you dare touch me. Otherwise, the Riley family will not let you go."

When Tyson heard Zahra's threat, the last bit of guilt in his heart disappeared.

He strode towards her and said with a sinister smile, "If you want to blame someone, it should be yourself. How dare you offend Mr. Hoffman! Anyway, it's just one leg. The Riley family is very rich. Even if your leg is broken, it can still recover."

Chapter 226 Owing The Hospital

Tyson waved his hand and ordered his men, "Hold her down!"

The men immediately rushed forward and held Zahra firmly.

At this moment, there was no trace of nobility and elegance in Zahra anymore. Instead, she now looked very pitiful with her disheveled hair and torn clothes.

She struggled desperately, twisted her body, and shouted, "Tyson, you bastard! The Riley family will not let you go. I'll kill you."

But this time, Tyson didn't stop, no matter how Zahra insulted him.

He raised the baton his man gave him and smashed it heavily on Zahra's shin.

"Ahhh!" Zahra screamed loudly.

The piercing pain instantly spread throughout her body and rushed straight to her head.

Her miserable screams resounded through the entire hospital.

Tears streamed down her face uncontrollably. She grasped Tyson's trouser legs tightly, and her eyes were full of resentment.

She swore she would take revenge on him later.

Liam and Tyson would pay for this. She wouldn't let them go.

The loud noise annoyed Liam, and this was not what Liam wanted to happen.

Julie's condition was still unstable now. Any jolt or accident might worsen her condition.

Liam thought for a while. Then he decided to let her stay in the hospital to recuperate.

He turned to Klaus and said, "Send Julie to the intensive care unit and take good care of her."

Tyson had always wanted to flatter Liam, so he immediately offered, "Let me do it. I'll have my men guard the ICU. Rest assured that no one can come near there."

Liam glanced at Tyson. He couldn't find a reason to refuse, so he nodded. And Klaus would also send some people to guard the door, so he was not worried about Julie's safety.

Since Tyson wanted to help guard Julie, he would let him.

As he walked away, he took out his phone, and called Theo. "Theo, I want to buy Furi Hospital in Salem."

"Okay. I will investigate it first."

Theo was silent for about a minute on the other end of the line before he said again, "The director of this hospital is Zahra Riley, but the real boss is Issac Potter of the Potter family. He and Zahra studied in the same university before. Their two families have some business cooperation, so he let Zahra be the director. Coincidentally, the Potter family has been wanting to earn a project from the Hoffman family. They have been begging us for a long time. Last month, the Potter family gave the Furi Hospital to the Hoffman family as a gift. We don't like this kind of small hospital, so we didn't send anyone to take it over. We just let it keep its original operation."

Liam was stunned upon hearing this.

He didn't expect that this hospital was now owned by his family.

He immediately told Theo everything that happened in the hospital and the current situation.

After listening to Liam, Theo was so angry that he shouted, "Since we let go of the Riley family last time, maybe they think the Hoffman family is easy to bully. I will deal with it myself right away."

Later that night, some medical staff surrounded Zahra in a room. They were all her trusted subordinates.

The female nurse who led Liam to the operating room was now putting a plaster cast around Zahra's leg.

As soon as the two planks were tied to her leg, she screamed hysterically before the nurse could even exert any strength.

Zahra pulled out the stethoscope around her neck and smashed it directly at the female nurse's head.

The nurse's forehead was hit hard, and it instantly bled.

But despite the nurse's scream, Zahra was still angry.

She grabbed the nurse's chin, smiled sinisterly, and said, "I heard that it was you who brought them to the operating room."

The people around them were afraid of being hurt, so they all showed support for Zahra.

"How did you become a nurse? How could you bring strangers to the operating room?"

"That's right! If it weren't for you, how could our director be injured? This is all your fault."

"Yes, you must take full responsibility."

One female doctor said indignantly, "Our director has a high status. That Liam is just rubbish. He only relies on Tyson."

When Zahra heard this, she sneered and said, "It is said that this hospital is now owned by the Hoffman family. I just received a notice from the Potter family that the person in charge will come to deal with the matters of the hospital in person."

The woman doctor asked in confusion, "The Hoffman family? It seems that there is no such a powerful family in Salem."

"In Salem?" Zahra smiled disdainfully and said proudly, "The Hoffman family is a very powerful family in Salem." ①

As soon as they heard this, everyone burst into an uproar and began to discuss.

"Oh, my God! So Director Riley has connections with another very powerful family?"

"Tyson is doomed now. He is just from a gang. How can he compare to the people from a very powerful family?"

"He is doomed. I'm afraid that Liam and Tyson won't be able to get out of this hospital today."

Zahra felt greatly flattered upon hearing the discussion around her. She gritted her teeth and said coldly, "Tyson, Liam, since you dare to hurt me, I will let you pay a hefty price."

Chapter 227 The Person In Charge Arrived

The person in charge of the hospital, who was sent by the Hoffman family, was about to arrive at the hospital.

Zahra thought for a moment. Then she said, "It's his first time coming here, so we must show enough sincerity. Let's go to the door to welcome him."

The female doctor next to her immediately suggested, "When the person in charge arrives, we must act as if we were seriously injured because we valiantly guarded the hospital. In this way, the Hoffman family will surely sympathize with us and think we are really working hard."

Zahra was silent upon hearing this. She was lost in thought.

The Hoffman family was very powerful. As long as the person in charge knew that they tried their best to stop the gangsters and maintain the hospital's image, they would be rewarded for sure.

Her eyes lit up at the thought of this. She immediately said to the female doctor, "Hurry, remove my plaster. Then apply some makeup to make yourselves look miserable."

At this moment, a doctor ran in from the outside and reported, "Dr. Riley, a row of luxury cars suddenly stopped at the entrance of our hospital."

Zahra immediately realized that the people from the Hoffman family had come.

It was too late to remove the plaster now.

She grabbed the hammer beside her, gritted her teeth, and smashed it directly at her leg.

The sound of bones breaking sounded.

"Ahhh!" Zahra screamed.

She felt a sharp pain in her shin.

Her entire leg swelled up quickly. It turned red and purple at a very fast speed.

Everyone gasped when they heard her scream. They couldn't help

admiring Zahra's decisiveness.

No wonder she became the director of the hospital. She was cruel not only to others but to herself.

They sighed in their hearts when they witnessed the scene.

Although Zahra was the elder sister of the head of the Riley family, it was a pity that she had nothing to do with the inheritance right. Otherwise, she wouldn't have come to this small hospital and worked as a director. So did she really have to be cruel to herself?

It seemed it was not easy to be a member of a wealthy family.

But at this moment, Zahra was not in the mood to care about what others thought about her.

All she cared about now was the person in charge.

She limped towards the gate with the support of the others.

These people had their hair and clothes in a mess. They also applied makeup to their faces and bodies to make them look miserable.

If it weren't for the white coats they were wearing, others would think they were refugees from a certain battlefield.

As soon as they arrived at the hospital entrance, they saw an old man in a tuxedo get out of a black Rolls-Royce.

It was Theo.

As soon as Zahra saw him, she cried out loud, "You are finally here. You have to know that our hospital is surrounded by gangsters. Look at my leg. They broke it. Please uphold justice for me."

The people behind her hurriedly supported her words.

"As soon as they came into the hospital, they invaded the operating room without scruple."

"Yes, that's right. Those gangsters don't take the Hoffman family seriously at all. They even broke our director's leg."

"Those people are bandits. They are villains. We fought with them, and they beat us like this."

For a while, they all belittled Liam and the others.

Theo looked Zahra up and down and sneered, "Lead the way. I want to see those troublemakers."

Zahra was overjoyed when she heard this. The doctors behind her also showed a righteous expression.

Now that the people from the Hoffman family were here, Liam was doomed.

The crowd surrounded Theo, and they quickly walked towards the intensive care unit.

The corridor of the intensive care unit was already full of Tyson's men. When these men saw the doctors rushing up, they quickly stood up and stopped them.

Zahra pushed through the crowd, walked to the front, and shouted angrily, "Do you know who this man in front of you is? He is the butler of the Hoffman family in the capital. The Hoffman family is a very powerful and rich clan. Don't get in the way!"

The men looked at each other. They were still hesitant.

For them, a powerful family like the Hoffman family was beyond their reach.

When they were about to make way for them, the door of the intensive care unit opened.

The crowd automatically split up, creating a way in the middle.

Liam, Tyson, and Klaus walked toward Zahra.

Chapter 228 Hello, Mr. Hoffman

When Zahra saw Liam come out of the intensive care unit, she got so emotional that she seemed to have forgotten the pain in her leg.

She pointed at Liam and shouted angrily, "That man! He is the main culprit here. Just now, I argued with him because I was trying to protect the hospital. But he still occupied the hospital stubbornly. And he even wanted to rape me. I resisted, so he hurt me and broke my leg."

Anyone who heard Zahra's words would think she was very miserable. It also showed that Liam was a pervert who forced a woman.

The doctors behind her naturally stood on her side.

"Don't think you are superior to others just because you are from the underworld. In front of rich people, you are nothing."

"That's right! You are only in cheap clothes, but you dared to break Dr. Riley's leg. Who do you think you are?"

"Look at the people from the Hoffman family, and look at you. You are just a lowly bastard. You are so disgusting."

Theo's face darkened. The more he listened to their words, the angrier he became. He immediately raised his hand to stop them from insulting Liam.

Under the crowd's expectant gazes, he led his subordinates to meet Liam. Zahra's face flushed with excitement. She had never felt this happy before.

She never had a relationship with the people of the Hoffman family. But she thought that although Theo was a little old, she could still hook up with him.

Everyone was also gloating. They all crossed their arms over their chests and looked at Liam smugly, waiting to see him being beaten.

But what happened next was beyond their expectations. Their eyes widened, and they couldn't believe what they saw.

As soon as Theo walked to Liam, he suddenly bowed deeply and said respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman..."

"This is impossible!" Zahra screamed, pushing away the female doctor who was supporting her.

She couldn't believe what she was seeing. She limped to Theo with one foot and questioned, "Sir, are you making a mistake? How can you bow to this poor man?"

For a moment, everyone held their breaths. They all looked at Theo, waiting for his answer.

Theo raised his head and looked at Klaus.

Klaus immediately understood. He strode forward, smiled sinisterly, and raised his hand. He slapped Zahra hard in the face.

The crisp slap sound echoed in the corridor.

But Klaus wasn't done yet. He raised his hand again and gave Zahra another slap.

This time, the sound was much louder.

The doctors were so scared that they unconsciously shivered.

Klaus looked at Zahra and shouted angrily, "You snob! Do you really think everyone is as stupid as you?"

At this time, Liam quickly walked to Zahra and said coldly, "You and the people behind you are fired. Get out of here!"

These words were like a basin of ice-cold water poured on everyone's head. A sense of despair filled their hearts.

They didn't understand what was going on. Liam was just a poor gangster. Why did he suddenly become a member of the powerful Hoffman family?

For a moment, all Zahra's pain and grievances erupted in an instant.

Zahra felt the unbearable pain in her broken leg. She looked down and found that the wound was already a little inflamed.

However, the pain in her leg was nothing compared to the pain she felt when her dignity was trampled down.

Liam was a loser she had always looked down upon and bullied at will. How could he be a member of the Hoffman family?

Zahra looked at Theo and shouted hysterically, "No! This can't be possible! You are not sent by the Hoffman family at all. You must be an

actor hired by Liam. That's right! You are an actor. I won't believe you unless you show evidence that you are sent by the Hoffman family."

The doctors behind Zahra thought her words made sense. And they all felt they grasped the last hope.

The female doctor immediately echoed, "In my opinion, this is all this poor man's acting. I guess the Rolls-Royce outside the hospital is rented. Tsk, tsk, tsk. I just don't know if he can afford even the brakes of that car."

As soon as the female doctor said this, Zahra's phone suddenly rang. She took out her phone and checked. She saw Issac's name flashing on the screen.

Issac was Zahra's schoolmate and the person with total control of this hospital. They had a close relationship.

Zahra raised her phone and sneered, "Someone from the Potter family is calling me. I guess the real people sent by the Hoffman family have arrived at the gate. Let me see how you are going to continue your acting."

Chapter 229 Service Pistol

Under the crowd's gazes, Zahra answered the phone and put it on speakerphone.

She wanted everyone to know that Liam and Theo were just buffoons pretending to be rich.

As soon as the call was connected, Issac's anxious voice came from the other end of the line.

"Zahra, I'm on my way now, and I'll be there in five minutes. You must be prepared in advance to welcome the people sent by the Hoffman family. This is a chance for us two to achieve prosperity."

When Zahra heard this, her mood lightened up a lot. She said, "Okay, come here quickly."

She wanted to say something more, but Issac seemed to have something urgent to attend to and hung up first.

But she didn't care at all. From the conversation just now, she already knew that the people sent by the Hoffman family must be coming with Issac.

In other words, the people in front of her were not really sent by the Hoffman family.

With this thought, she felt that the pain in her leg immediately disappeared. She laughed and mocked, "Liam, you son of a bitch! You are really good at acting. To prove yourself right, you've even spent money hiring actors. You're making me sick."

Since Zahra put the phone on speakerphone, everyone heard her conversation with Issac just now.

Normally, Zahra's deduction had too many loopholes. No one would easily believe it.

But since the hospital staff had just experienced despair, they would subconsciously believe it as long as there was a glimmer of hope.

So all the doctors sneered at Liam.

"Really? He even hired actors? How can he be so disgusting?"

"That man is old, so I really thought he was sent by the Hoffman family. It turns out he is a fake. How disgusting!"

"When the real people sent by the Hoffman family arrive here and know that these people are pretending to be them, they may suffer something more miserable than death later."

Zahra didn't care about her injured leg anymore. Although the pain was unbearable, she didn't intend to deal with it.

She had to continue trying to gain others' sympathy.

She shouted at the crowd, "Everyone, come on! Let's go to the entrance to welcome the real people sent by the Hoffman family."

All of a sudden, the doctors hurriedly followed Zahra to the hospital entrance.

Liam looked at the group of people in front of him and sneered.

He thought that since they wanted to deceive themselves, he would fulfill their wish.

Liam only left some men to guard the door of the ICU and followed Zahra with the others.

When the female doctor saw them behind her, she deliberately sneered aloud, "Do these people want to run away? If they are afraid, why don't they just kneel and beg for mercy now? Maybe Dr. Riley will spare them."

Zahra heard the female doctor. She sneered and said to the medical staff beside her, "Remember to keep an eye on them. Don't let them run away. When Issac arrives, these bastards will be dead meat."

But the injury on Zahra's leg had worsened, so she couldn't walk fast.

The others could only follow behind her, so they were slow and wasted a lot of time.

When they reached the entrance, a police patrol car happened to be driving from a distance.

The police car pulled over in front of the hospital entrance, and Issac, in a police uniform, got out of the driver's seat alone.

Zahra saw him and immediately walked up to him.

Tears streamed down her face, and she looked very sad. It was as if she had seen her parents she hadn't seen for a long time. She said in an

aggrieved tone, "Issac, we are here to welcome the people sent by Hoffman family. This villain barged into the hospital, forcibly occupied our operating room, and broke my leg."

Issac hurriedly held Zahra's arm to support her. Seeing her miserable appearance, he frowned and said, "What happened? Tell me."

Zahra wiped her tears and cried pitifully, "He used the operating room without permission and performed the surgery himself. And that patient is dying now. If the Hoffman family knows about this, they will think someone has died in our hospital because of our mistake. He must have known that the people sent by the Hoffman family were coming today, so he deliberately made trouble. Obviously, he doesn't take the Potter family and the Riley family seriously."

Issac instantly flew into a rage.

The Potter family had given this hospital to the Hoffman family for the sake of a project.

He wouldn't allow anyone to ruin the Potter family's chance of working with the Hoffman family.

Issac raised his voice when he said angrily, "Damn it! Who is that son of a bitch? He is so bold! I will let him spend the rest of his life in jail."

At this moment, a cold voice suddenly sounded in his ears. "I didn't expect a member of the Potter family to be so brainless that he doesn't even do the most basic investigation. It seems I need to consider the risk of cooperating with the Potter family again."

When Issac saw a young man in cheap clothes, he took his service pistol from his waist and sneered, "Who are you?"

"Liam Hoffman," Liam replied calmly, showing no trace of fear on his face.

Issac laughed hideously. He raised his pistol, aimed it at Liam, and shouted angrily, "I don't give a fuck who the hell you are. Do you really take yourself as something? Kneel and apologize to me now."

"I dare you!" Theo suddenly said, looking at Issac's pistol.

He stood in front of Liam, looked at Issac coldly, and snapped, "You want to shoot? Shoot me, then."

Issac was utterly dumbfounded when he saw Theo.

His hand holding the pistol trembled uncontrollably.

Since Zahra was behind Issac, she couldn't see his expression.

But when she noticed that he had stopped moving, she immediately shouted, "That son of a bitch pretended to be a member of the Hoffman family just now and acted with that old bastard who claimed to be sent by the Hoffman family. He even wanted to fire me. They are both rubbish. Issac, don't let that old motherfucker go. Arrest him and break his legs."

As soon as these words came out of her mouth, everyone was stunned, and their eyes widened.

Because what they saw next was Issac turning to Zahra and pointing his service pistol against her forehead. With his eyes wide open, he threatened, "What did you say just now? I dare you to say it again!"

For a moment, Zahra didn't know what was wrong with Issac. She said in a trembling voice, "Issac, he is the old motherfucker..."

"This gentleman is Mr. Theo Reed, the butler of the Hoffman family. You fucking idiot!" Issac interrupted. His hand holding the pistol kept trembling in fear.

After Issac said this, you could have heard a pin drop at the entrance of the hospital.

No one dared to say a word.

Chapter 230 Driving Them Out

"This is Theo Reed. He is the butler of the Hoffman family."

These words were like a bell that kept ringing in Zahra's mind.

If this old man was really Theo, it meant that Liam was the heir of the Hoffman family.

At the thought of this, her legs became weak, and she collapsed to the floor. Obviously, she was scared to death.

The doctors around her exchanged shocked glances. But no one dared to say a word.

The words they used to mock Liam just now replayed in their minds again and again.

For a moment, they didn't know what to do. Their faces flushed despite the purple makeup they put on their faces, making them look extremely embarrassed.

Theo's sharp gaze swept across the people in front of him, and he snorted coldly. He looked at Issac and snapped, "Deal with this!"

"Yes, Mr. Reed. Rest assured, you will be satisfied." Issac put his pistol away, nodded, and bowed.

Theo nodded back at him and walked directly into the hospital with Liam. As soon as they disappeared at the corner, Issac immediately straightened up and roared at the crowd, "Fuck you all! Tell me what happened exactly. If you dare to lie to me, I will shoot all of you in the head."

Upon hearing this, everyone shrank their necks. No one dared to speak. They had already offended Liam. If they spoke now, it would only mean they would offend Zahra. Then they would have no way out.

At this moment, a female nurse with blood all over her head squeezed out of the crowd.

She was the nurse who was hit by Zahra.

She glared at Zahra resentfully and said with a sinister smile, "It's Zahra. She doesn't receive patients in the hospital. She only deceives people."

The female nurse didn't show mercy at all. She told Issac about Zahra's rude and unreasonable behaviors.

The more Issac listened, the more shocked he was. He didn't expect that this old classmate of his was so lawless in his hospital.

Especially when he heard that Zahra wanted to kill Liam, his heart almost jumped out of his chest.

He glared at Zahra and roared, "I am now officially informing you that you are fired. Zahra, you don't deserve to be a doctor at all. I will ask my family to issue an announcement in the medical circle of Salem that you are banned from working in this city." ②

After saying this, Issac looked at the embarrassed doctors behind him and said disdainfully, "And you! Look at yourselves. Do you still look like doctors? All of you will be blacklisted by the hospitals of the Potter family. You will not be hired for the rest of your lives."

When the group of doctors heard this, they all begged for mercy.

"This has nothing to do with us. We were only instigated by Zahra."

"It's all over. I'm blacklisted now. No hospital will hire me anymore."

"Mr. Potter, I'm sorry. I know I was wrong. But I'll be a new person from now on. Please don't fire me."

"Ha-ha! This is interesting! Now you're blaming each other. You took pleasure in my misfortune when Zahra beat me just now. So you deserve to be treated like this."

The female nurse clapped her hands. She looked at the sorehead Zahra and cursed, "You bitch! You only deserve this. You deserve this retribution."

While cursing, she staggered into the dark night and gradually disappeared.

At this moment, all of Issac's attention was focused on the people sent by the Hoffman family, so he was not in the mood to care about whether these people begged for mercy.

He waved at the security guards and shouted, "Guards, drive all these people out! And never let them enter the Furi Hospital again."

The security guards in this hospital were all from Axe Security. They

had already received an order from Tyson and had been waiting at the side, ready to deal with these people.

So even without Issac's order, they would still make a move.

The tall and burly security guards drew out their batons and walked toward the group of doctors with ferocious faces.

As long as they saw someone unwilling to leave, they raised their batons and smashed those people mercilessly.

"Get out of here!"

"Don't ask for trouble. Get out!"

These delicate doctors were kicked out of the hospital by the security guards. How could they bear the pain?

At this time, they didn't have time to care about Zahra anymore.

Zahra's leg was broken, and she didn't bandage it to show that she was very abject. She couldn't walk at this moment.

But despite her condition, she struggled to get up. However, she was pushed and fell to the floor again.

"I'm the elder sister of the head of the Riley family. My family is very powerful. How dare you trample on me!" Zahra screamed at the top of her lungs. But with so many people gathered together, her voice drowned in the crowd. She could not be heard at all.

For the second time, her leg was injured. She was so scared that she wetted her pants, making her look extremely miserable.

Zahra felt a stabbing pain in her leg. With or without medical knowledge, she clearly knew that if her leg was not treated in time, it would be amputated.

She covered her leg desperately, cried, and begged, "Don't step on me. Please don't step on me. Please help me. Take me to the nearest hospital."

This time, many doctors around heard Zahra's voice. But how would they help her if they were full of resentment? They even blamed her for everything.

So instead of showing mercy to her when they heard her wail, they all raised their feet and stepped on her body heavily.

If they didn't take revenge or vent their anger now, they wouldn't get a chance to do it after Zahra left.

While the security guards were driving the doctors out, one security guard led Issac to the door of the director's office.

When Issac walked in, he saw the young man named Liam sitting on a chair.

Theo stood aside, pouring a glass of whisky for Liam respectfully.

Issac realized that Zahra really made trouble for him this time. If they lost the project, the Potter family would let her suffer.

At this moment, Issac was very clear that the man in front of him was the heir of the Hoffman family.

Chapter 231 Take Off Your Trousers

Issac straightened up to make himself look more respectful. He put on a smile and greeted, "Hello, Mr. Hoffman."

But Liam didn't even look at Issac. He just took a sip of wine and said lightly, "Stand aside. I have something to ask you."

"Yes, Mr. Hoffman." Issac nodded and quickly stood at the side.

At this moment, Klaus suddenly rushed inside the office.

He strode to Liam, handed over a pile of documents, and said respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman, they are all here."

These documents were just sent to the door by people of the Hoffman family, and Klaus went to get them.

They contained all information about the illegal clinic, including the identity and background of those doctors.

Liam flipped through the documents. And the more he looked at them, the more his frown deepened.

Despite the background and strength of the Hoffman family, they could only find out that those doctors were just medical staff in the capital.

Liam handed the files to Issac and said coldly, "Take a look at these."

"Okay, Mr. Hoffman." Issac was afraid he might say something that would irritate Liam, so he simply responded, took the documents, and read them.

But what he had read made his heart skip a beat.

What happened in the illegal clinic was shocking.

It turned out Liam had an emergency. But that bitch Zahra dared to stop Liam at such a critical moment.

She was absolutely courting death.

Issac closed the files abruptly and said respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman, don't worry. The Potter family still has a certain position in the medical industry. I will definitely use all our resources to investigate this matter thoroughly."

Liam waved his hand and said, "There is one more thing. I don't want my identity to be exposed. Deal with those people today by yourself."

Issac nodded repeatedly and promised with trepidation, "Rest assured that everyone in the hospital today will zip their mouths. No one else will know about what happened here."

"All right. Go ahead with your work." After saying this, Liam stood up and went straight to the intensive care unit.

When the security guards at the door saw him coming, they all moved to make way for him.

Julie was in the intensive care unit, lying quietly on the bed.

Looking at her face wrapped in gauze, his eyes unconsciously turned red. He stroked her face through the gauze and couldn't help blaming himself. "Julie, it's all my fault. I was late. If I had been faster, you wouldn't have been hurt like this."

Liam stayed in the intensive care unit the entire night without even closing his eyes. He just held Julie's hand and stared at her pale face.

The night was still and lonely. Inside the intensive care unit, only the breathing of the two people could be heard.

The next day, the sun rose high in the sky, shining brightly. It was already almost noon.

The sunlight seeped through the gaps in the curtains and fell on Liam's face.

He didn't know when he had fallen asleep, but he was awakened when he felt his face itchy. It was as if a bug was crawling there.

He suddenly opened his eyes, only to meet Julie's bright eyes.

Liam was overjoyed to see her awake. He said excitedly, "Julie, you're finally awake. How are you feeling now? Are you okay?"

The excitement on his face made her smile.

She coughed weakly and said softly, "I'm thirsty."

"Do you want water? Wait, I'll get it right away." Liam suddenly stood up, walked to the bedside table, and poured a glass of water for her.

Then he picked up the small spoon and used it to feed her water slowly.

Julie took a sip and smiled. "This water tastes so sweet."

Liam didn't expect Julie still had the strength to comfort him like this and ease the atmosphere around them.

He couldn't help giggling and saying, "Silly girl! It's just ordinary water. How can it be sweet?"

Julie shook her head slowly and said softly, "No, the water you fed me is sweet."

For a moment, the two of them fell silent. They just stared at each other for a while.

Liam fed Julie some more water and put down the glass.

She hadn't recovered yet, so it was not suitable for her to drink too much water.

After he put down the glass, she looked at him and asked, "How did you save me?"

"Huh?" Liam was stunned for a moment. Then he said, "When I got there, I saw two people guarding the door. I drove the car to them and directly hit them. Then I called the police. As soon as they arrived, I got out of the car and saved you."

He didn't mention the dangerous fight because he didn't want her to know about it.

She was still weak. If he told her, it would only give her pressure and make her worry.

Julie stared at Liam suspiciously. Obviously, she didn't believe his words. She clearly remembered it was Liam who saved her in the helicopter.

She looked him up and down and complained, "I don't believe you. Stand up and turn around."

Liam had no choice but to stand up. He endured the pain in his shin and turned around.

But he could see that Julie still didn't believe him, so he jumped.

Julie snorted and pouted. "I still don't believe you. Take off your clothes and show me your body."

But as soon as she said this, not only Liam but also she blushed.

Liam scratched his head and said awkwardly, "You want me to take off my clothes? I don't think it's a good idea."

Julie held back her shyness and said flirtatiously, "It doesn't matter. I want to see it, so you must take your clothes off."

After saying this, she suddenly coughed.

"Okay, I will take them off now." Julie's face still looked pale, and Liam was afraid that her condition would get worse. So he had no choice but to grant her wish. He hurriedly took off his clothes.

As soon as he removed his shirt, his good figure and strong muscles were exposed.

The golden sunshine outside the window shone on his perfect figure. He was so handsome that he looked like a Greek god.

Liam was strong and handsome. What kind of a woman wouldn't get attracted to him?

When Julie saw his half-naked body, her pale face turned a little red.

Liam hurriedly covered his muscular chest and said awkwardly, "Is it okay now?"

For the first time, Julie saw him shy.

If she hadn't known him well, she would never have connected this innocent man in front of her now with that domineering CEO.

For a moment, Julie's mood changed. She became playful.

She blinked and said naughtily, "Take off your trousers."

Liam felt even more awkward. He cleared his throat and said, "Do I really need to take off my trousers?"

Upon hearing this, Julie pretended to cough again.

Liam quickly raised his hand and said anxiously, "Okay, I'll take them off."

He knew he couldn't hide it anymore, so he took off his trousers obediently.

As a result, his wounded leg was immediately exposed.

There were a total of eight bullet holes of different sizes on his right leg. Some of the wounds had already rotten, making them look shocking.

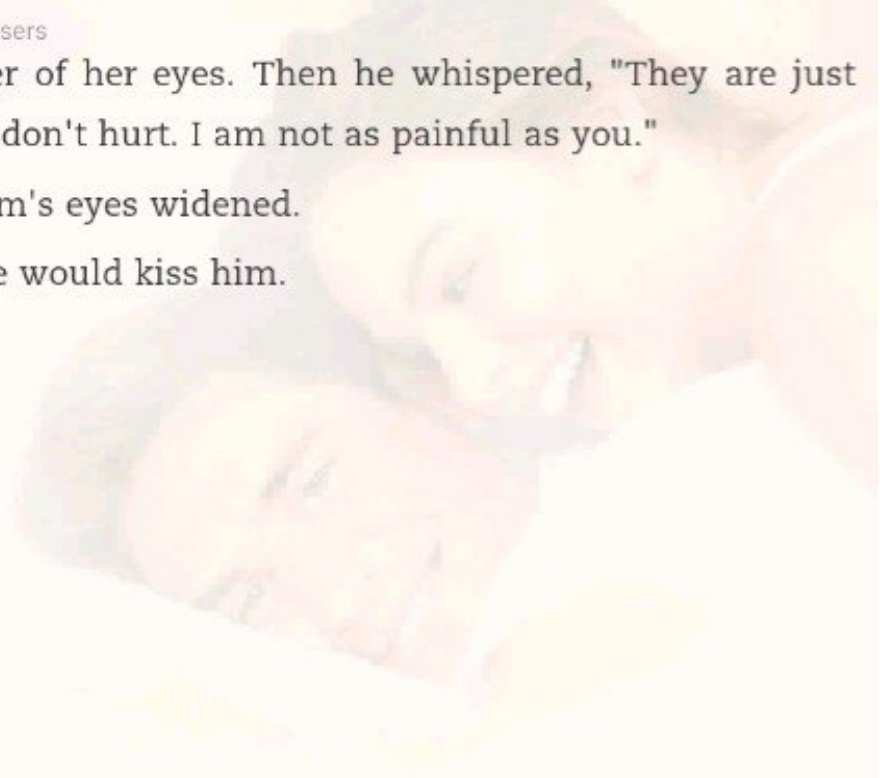
Julie's eyes turned red at once. She choked. "Do they hurt?"

Liam leaned against the edge of Julie's bed, bent over, and wiped off the

tears from the corner of her eyes. Then he whispered, "They are just small wounds. They don't hurt. I am not as painful as you."

The next second, Liam's eyes widened.

He didn't expect Julie would kiss him.



Chapter 232 Marry Me

Liam subconsciously responded to Julie's kiss. And before he could know it, he had already taken the initiative to deepen the kiss, invading the inside of her mouth with his tongue.

Their kiss lasted for a long time, and Julie felt like she was out of breath. Liam was intoxicated by the kiss. He only came back to his senses and let go of Julie when he felt her hands patting his chest.

When they parted, they were both blushing. And for a moment, neither of them spoke.

And when Liam heard Julie's rapid breathing, he suddenly realized that he had kissed her too vigorously just now.

He looked at her and hurriedly said, "I'm sorry. Did I hurt you?"

Julie touched her lips and pretended to be angry. "Look at what you've done. You bit my lips."

It was only then that Liam felt the taste of blood in his mouth.

Maybe because of the too much pain caused by his previous relationship, he completely lost control when he was cured by Julie's pure love.

When Julie saw Liam's apologetic eyes, she turned her head, and she couldn't help blushing. She said gently, "Don't use too much strength next time."

Liam was stunned when he heard the words "next time."

Did it mean that...?

He suddenly realized that Julie was not angry. He couldn't help giggling. Julie glared at Liam. She pouted and asked, "By the way, how did you know I was in that illegal clinic?"

Her question stunned him again.

He realized that he had forgotten to call her parents to inform them that she was safe now.

Liam stood up in a hurry and looked for his phone. It took him a long time before he found it in the pocket of his coat on the floor.

However, his phone was damaged during the fight.

The bullet hole was clearly visible at the center of the screen, and a bullet was stuck in it.

Liam didn't want Julie to worry, so he subconsciously wanted to hide his phone from her.

However, Julie noticed it. She glared at him and snapped, "What are you hiding? Show me your phone."

He knew he couldn't hide it anymore, so he had no choice but to hand over his phone to her.

And as soon as Julie saw the bullet hole, her eyes turned red.

She didn't see it wrong just now. The phone was taken out of the pocket on Liam's chest.

If it wasn't there to block the bullet, he would have been dead long ago. Julie stroked the bullet hole with her fingers. Her eyes were full of fear. It was as if the scene where Liam fought for her was right in front of her. Tears streamed down her face like a waterfall.

When Liam saw this, he hurriedly said, "Hey, don't cry. It's just a phone. Since it's broken, I'll just buy a new one."

Julie curled her lips, still sobbing. "Do you think I'm crying because of the phone?"

But she didn't ask for more details. She just wiped her tears and said softly, "Liam, thank you."

She meant to thank him for risking his life to save her.

But she didn't say it out loud. She just hid this in her heart.

Liam reached out and held up the bangs on Julie's forehead lovingly.

Then his slender fingers gently slid across her ear and finally landed on her chin.

Liam raised Julie's chin slightly. This movement made Julie's ears turn red, and her heart beat wildly.

He saw her reaction, and this softened his heart. He couldn't help kissing her.

But this time, his kiss was extremely gentle.

After a while, their lips parted.

Liam looked at Julie and said solemnly, "Marry me."

The smile on Julie's face vanished. She suddenly fell silent.

Then sadness filled her eyes.

She was a disfigured woman now, and she was not qualified to marry Liam anymore.

At this moment, there was a knock on the door.

Then a voice came from the outside.

"Mr. Hoffman..."

The door suddenly opened, and a man poked his head in.

It was Klaus who wanted to talk to Liam.

Liam frowned. He turned to Julie and said, "Have a rest first. I'll be back soon."

Julie nodded slightly. Then she turned her head and closed her eyes.

Liam walked out of the intensive care unit and gently closed the door behind him. He gestured at Klaus to follow him to the corner of the corridor. Then he said coldly, "You came at the wrong time. What's the matter? Tell me quickly."

Klaus scratched his head, looking embarrassed. He reported, "Jarrod told us everything he knew. Tami was the one who told him that someone wanted to buy a heart for fifty million dollars. As for the more specific information, it was said that the heart would be sent to the black market by the owner of the illegal clinic."

When Liam heard this, a murderous look flashed across his eyes. His voice was even colder when he asked, "What's the information about that owner?"

Klaus shook his head and said seriously, "The owner of the clinic, who was behind all this, is very mysterious. The owner has never shown up. Even the people in the clinic have never seen the owner. They only communicate online. This owner is very resourceful. As long as there are employees who break the rules, they will immediately be dealt with."

Liam didn't expect that the enemy would be difficult to deal with.

At this moment, their only hope was in Tami. She was the only one who

could give them the information about the owner of the clinic.

So he immediately asked, "Where is Tami? Do you know her whereabouts?"

But when Klaus heard the name, a look of embarrassment appeared on his face. He said with difficulty, "Tami has been missing since last night."

These words made Liam look very fierce.

His face became stern, and he said in a cold voice, "Use all your resources to look for her. Search every corner of Salem. I must see her dead or alive."

Chapter 233 Yolanda Came To Salem

Since Liam went out to talk with Klaus, Julie was left alone in the ward. She gently touched the gauze on her face in a daze.

Julie looked around the empty ward, feeling lost. Tears streamed down her face and fell to the quilt, making it wet soon.

That moment when Tami scratched her face again and again was still vivid in her mind.

So when Liam proposed to her just now, she was extremely scared. If her face couldn't be fixed, she would be ugly for the rest of her life. How could she be with him?

However, what happened just now kept replaying in Julie's mind.

When Liam proposed, her face flushed, and her heartbeat went abnormally fast.

She had been looking forward to this for so long. How could she not fantasize and long for it?

At this moment, Julie heard a sound.

The door creaked when it was pushed open from the outside.

Julie quickly turned to the other side of the bed and wiped her tears.

Liam came in with lunch in his hands. And when Julie looked at him, he saw that her eyes were red.

He quickly put the food on the table, strode to the bedside, and asked, "What's wrong? Do your wounds hurt again?"

Julie bit her lower lip, stared at Liam, and asked in a trembling voice, "Can my face be fixed?"

When Liam met her red eyes, his heart trembled.

She looked at him eagerly.

Stubbornness filled her eyes, but there was also a trace of despair, making her look very pitiful.

Julie was only in her early thirties. How could she not be afraid of being disfigured?

All Liam felt now was a lump in his throat and a terrible pain in his heart.

He took a deep breath to calm himself down. Then he said firmly, "Don't worry. The doctor has checked your wounds, and they are not deep. With the current medical technology, they will heal without leaving any scar on your face."

Upon hearing this, Julie couldn't help but burst into tears.

Liam held her in his arms, wiped her tears gently, and comforted her, "Hey, don't cry. If you keep crying, your tears will run into your wounds. Then you will be in trouble." ①

Julie immediately held back her tears and wiped the corners of her eyes. Then there was a grumbling sound.

It turned out that she was already hungry.

She raised her head. And when she saw that Liam was trying hard to hold back his laughter, her face flushed.

She pursed her lips and said angrily, "I'm not crying."

After saying this, she raised her little fist and hammered his chest.

But her fist was soft and feeble. So when it hit his chest, he didn't feel the pain. Instead, he felt tickled a little.

This time, Liam couldn't hold back his laughter anymore.

Julie also laughed with him.

They laughed and giggled for a long time like innocent children.

The pain in Julie's heart completely dissipated, and the sunlight shone in. She felt much better now.

She looked at the porridge on the table, pouted, and said, "I'm hungry. Feed me."

Liam nodded dotingly. He scooped up a spoonful of porridge, blew it, and put it in front of Julie's mouth.

The porridge tasted light. But in her heart, she felt it was sweet.

As a result, she ate up a small bowl of porridge in less than ten minutes.

Liam put down the bowl. Then suddenly, he remembered that he had something to say.

He turned around in a hurry and said, "By the way, I've called your parents. They said they would be here in about half an hour."

Julie smiled and nodded. But there was a trace of disappointment in her heart.

Actually, she wanted to spend more time with Liam alone.

When she saw that Liam was about to peel an apple for her, she immediately stopped him and said with a faint smile, "Don't do it. Let's just watch TV for a while."

Liam nodded. He stood up and gently raised the head of the bed to make Julie lie more comfortably.

As soon as he turned the TV on, the local news channel was broadcasting news.

Tyler and Yolanda were standing in front of a building, cutting a ribbon. It was a ribbon-cutting ceremony.

Then a reporter appeared on the screen, holding a microphone.

"Telmar Company is a new cosmetics company under Riley Group. Yolanda, Tyler's fiancée, will be the CEO of this company. It is reported that the company is the former Callechelys Cosmetics. But for some reason, this small company got the attention of the Riley Group."

When Julie heard the name Callechelys Cosmetics, her expression changed. She clutched the quilt tightly, and even her breathing quickened.

Liam sensed that something was wrong with her. He said, "What's wrong? They live their lives, and we live ours. We have nothing to do with each other. Nothing will happen."

Julie shook her head, curled her lips, and said, "The Callechelys Cosmetics is Tami's company. And the money she used to build it was ours. She stole it from us. Now that the Riley Group has acquired it, I'm afraid we won't be able to get our money back."

Liam turned his head to the screen and stared at Yolanda and Tyler.

He immediately understood.

Tyler and Yolanda came to Salem together and bought Tami's company. They must be here for him.

However, they didn't come directly to him. Instead, they attacked the Fiber family.

After what had happened before, they dared to target Julie now. They were obviously challenging Liam's bottom line.

Liam looked at the two people on the screen and sneered in his heart. Telmar Company? Since they dared to provoke him, they should expect their company to go bankrupt soon.

At this moment, Yesenia's voice suddenly rang out in their ears.

"You brat! Stay away from my daughter. Do you want to take advantage of her?" ①

Chapter 234 Erase

Liam and Julie turned their gazes to the door at the same time.

Yesenia, who was decked out in an expensive dress and jewels, stood at the doorway looking perfectly unruffled.

In contrast, Ulises, who was standing behind her, was noticeably paler, and his hair was almost entirely white. It looked like time had aged him.

Liam looked at the couple and scoffed to himself. They could not be any more different from each other.

Yesenia approached the bed, nudging Liam out of the way. She sat on the chair and gripped Julie's hand firmly. "Julie, how is your face? Can it be healed?"

Liam looked at Ulises, who was just as tense as his wife was, sighed, and repeated what he had said.

Ulises and Yesenia let out a sigh of relief upon hearing that their daughter's face would be fine.

Ulises's hand trembled. With tears in his eyes, he clutched his daughter's hand and sobbed, "This is all my fault. I put you in danger."

When Julie saw how pale her father was, she immediately felt sorry for him.

She brought a hand to the man's face to wipe his tears, shaking her head. "It's not your fault, Dad."

"Of course, it's his fault!"

Yesenia wrenched apart Ulises' and Julie's joined hands before glaring at her husband.

"I'm sure you already know how incompetent you are, so you should concentrate on the project you're working on with the Rinku Group. Our livelihood depends on it."

Ulises nodded before turning to Julie again.

"Don't worry, Julie. The Rinku Group has transferred fifty million dollars to our company. We're no longer on the verge of bankruptcy. Everything's all right now, so don't think of anything else and just focus

on your recovery."

Julie was visibly relieved to hear that.

She grabbed her father's hand again and nodded.

Yesenia finally decided to refrain from interfering as the two had their moment.

Instead, she turned a distasteful gaze toward Liam.

"Our company's stock value will continue to rise now that we've partnered with the Rinku Group. We'll keep getting richer while you'll stay poor, so it's best if you cut ties with Julie now."

Julie glared at her mother in indignation. "Mom, what on earth are you talking about?"

Yesenia ignored Julie and continued, "I had someone look into the Porsche that you drove last night. That's how I found out that it's not yours. It actually belongs to Mr. Vasquez. Listen here, young man. Don't grow too big for your britches; the only reason you got accepted into the Rinku Group is that you saved Watkins once. He was just returning the favour."

Liam frowned, but his tone was unperturbed as he replied, "I didn't say it was mine."

"Shut up!"

Yesenia scowled in displeasure and snarled, "I never believed you when you said you had twenty million dollars to hand away last night. I know you don't have that much money. You were so arrogant and stubborn about the whole thing! If the police hadn't intervened and handled the situation so quickly and effectively, you would've gotten Julie killed!"

Liam did not respond, but his expression had turned cold.

The explosion that took place last night was a terrible accident that took the lives of many people. It was completely impossible to keep it a secret from anyone.

Theo was the one who took covert measures so that the authorities quickly decided that the explosion was an accident, rationalizing that the clinic had been hiding explosive materials.

Julie's patience finally ran out, and she snapped, "What police? It was

Liam who saved me last night. His leg..."

Yesenia cut her off mid-sentence, saying loudly, "Is that what this loser told you? God, he's so shameless! Julie, don't let him deceive you. The police told me this morning that Jarrod hid you at the clinic and that you got injured while you were there. They were the ones who saved you!"

Liam chuckled to himself at the absurdity of her words.

The truth was, he had Isaac handle everything including covering up Jarrod's whereabouts and the clinic's location.

The only people who would have known what had really happened were already dead or severely injured.

Suddenly, Liam remembered what Klaus had told him last night.

"Jarrod has told us everything, Mr. Hoffman. As is customary for those who transact business on the black market, Julie's identity remains unknown to the big shot from the capital."

That was why Liam spent the whole night erasing any record of Julie's blood type.

Long story short, as long as Tami and Jarrod did not talk about it, everyone would forget about it, and Julie would be safe.

Liam sneered to himself as he thought about the mastermind behind the scheme.

Well, since that person preferred to remain anonymous, Liam would do the same. He would figure out who they were eventually. He just hoped they were still alive when that time came.

Being the scion of a prominent family was just too conspicuous a background. If that person found out who Liam was, they would likely get rid of any evidence that could link back to them. Then, it would be more difficult to track them down.

Liam glanced at Julie, who was still lying on the bed, and sighed.

Once he found out the truth, he would secure her place in the Hoffman family, and everyone would envy her. Before then, he had faith that Julie could weather any storm.

Chapter 235 A Heartbreaker

Yesenia stared at Liam, getting more annoyed by the second. "Why the hell are you still here? We know the truth. Now, get out!" she shouted angrily.

Liam had originally planned to give them some alone time after explaining what happened.

But he changed his mind after Yesenia spoke to him so rudely. With a huff, he turned and left the ward with the explanation he had prepared.

"Liam, wait!" Ulises called from behind, running after him.

He was not as clueless as Yesenia. It was obvious from Liam's ragged clothes that the young man had done all he could just to save Julie.

"I'm so sorry." Ulises sighed and continued, "I apologize on my wife's behalf. She can be clueless at times. I can't thank you enough for saving Julie. I will never forget this."

This warmed Liam's heart. In that second, all the anger he felt towards Yesenia faded away.

He gave Ulises a genuine smile and said, "I was just keeping my promise, and honestly, I did it for myself. Julie is really very important to me."

Ulises almost teared up when Liam said this. He held Liam's hand tightly in his and said seriously, "I give you my permission to be with Julie. Please, do take good care of her from now on."

The ward was suddenly pushed open from inside.

Yesenia stuck her head out and said coldly, "He may have your permission, but he will never have mine. How can you let Julie be with such a useless man? Look, he has no money, no power! It will never work."

She rolled her eyes, then looked at Ulises. "Now that my daughter is safe, I'll go and play cards with my friends. Stay here and take care of her," she said and immediately walked away in her high heels.

Liam's face folded into a deep frown as he stared at the woman's

retreating back. He couldn't understand how Yesenia could play cards when her daughter was badly injured. Was she being indifferent, or was she plain heartless? Liam shook his head in disbelief.

Used to Yesenia's attitude, Ulises sighed helplessly and looked at Liam. "You should go and get some rest. You need it. I'll stay and look after Julie."

Liam nodded curtly. He did have something else to attend to.

So, it was a relief knowing that Julie wouldn't be alone, or with that calculative mother of hers.

Ulises went back into the ward, and Liam also went on his way.

First, he went to the monitoring room of the Furi Hospital.

Klaus was observing all the screens that filmed every part of the hospital.

At the same time, the hospital was surrounded by men ready to intercept anyone who looked suspicious.

Liam was happy to see Klaus so focused. He nodded in satisfaction and said, "You're doing well. Keep up. Give me the car key. I have to leave."

Klaus took out the key and handed it over to Liam with a smile on his face. "Don't worry, boss. No suspicious person will get into the hospital. We're keeping guard."

Liam nodded curtly and left.

He got into Klaus' car and drove to the Telmar Company.

Staring at the tall building in front of him, Liam took out his phone and dialed Yolanda's number. ④

It had been a month since he last called her.

He thought he would be excited to talk to her again, but strangely, he felt rather calm and undisturbed.

In the CEO's office of the Telmar Company.

Dressed in a customized lady's suit, Yolanda looked very sexy, yet very arrogant.

Andrew held out a document to her and said, "Yolanda, this is the personal information of the personnel of the Beauty Cosmetics. The Rinku Group just invested fifty million dollars in Beauty Cosmetics. So,

they are now operational."

With one hand supporting her chin, Yolanda let her long and thin hair fall on the desk.

She flipped through the document in disdain and sneered. "Fifty million dollars? That's so little, right?" Yolanda made a clicking sound with her tongue and said, "So Julie is so good now that she won the project of the Rinku Group, huh?"

"I don't think so. She must have sold her body to get this deal," Andrew said with a smile.

Yolanda squinted her eyes, then looked up at Andrew who was standing respectfully in front of her, waiting to please her.

"Andrew, since we are family, I will appoint you as director of the human resource department of the Telmar Company. All you have to do, is poach talents from the Beauty Cosmetics, okay?"

Yolanda's phone suddenly started vibrating.

When she looked down at the screen and saw Liam's name flashing on it, her heart began to beat faster and she felt a wave of emotions crush her.

"Get out!" she snapped at Andrew, carelessly waving him out.

When Andrew left, she took a deep breath before answering the call.

"I'm in front of the Telmar Company." Liam's magnetic voice came through the phone, sending a shiver down Yolanda's spine. She hadn't realized how much she had missed his voice.

She took another deep breath and tried to reign in her overwhelming emotions. She cleared her throat and tried to sound as though she didn't care. "You can come up."

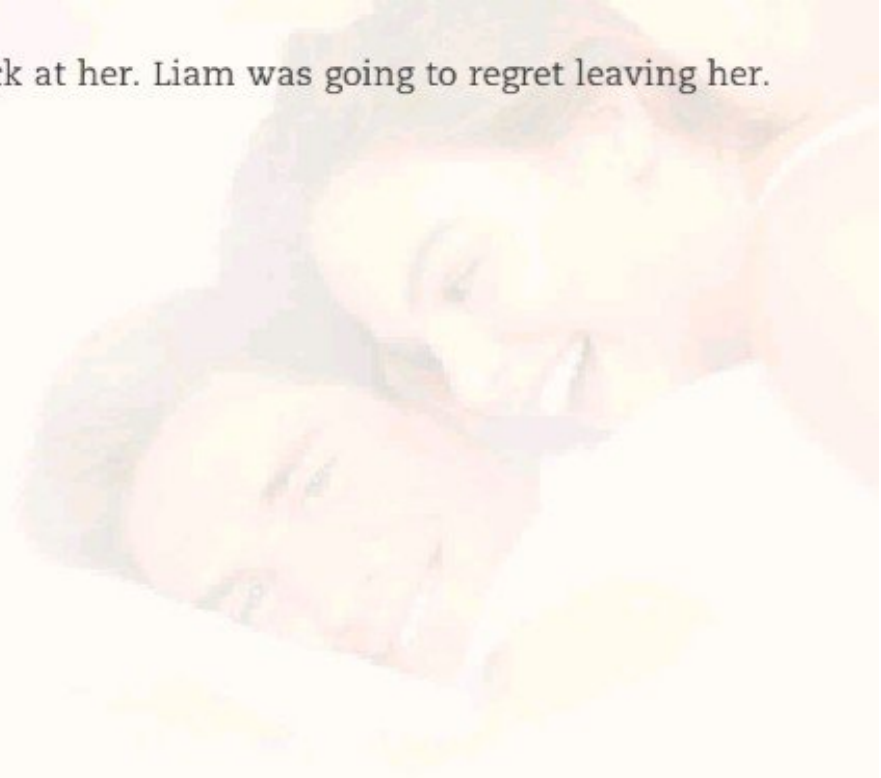
As soon as she hung up, she took out her makeup and mirror from her bag. Then, she freshened her makeup as fast as she could.

Admittedly, she looked really good with her smooth skin, beautifully shaped eyebrows and her black, bright eyes.

The small blush on her cheeks made her look both innocent and sexy. Any man wouldn't be able to resist her.

Yolanda stared at her face in the mirror and smiled in satisfaction at the

reflection staring back at her. Liam was going to regret leaving her.



Chapter 236 Be My Secret Lover

Yolanda had informed those at the reception about Liam's coming, so they let him in without any problem.

Yolanda's secretary personally led Liam to the CEO's office where Yolanda was waiting for him.

When Yolanda heard the sound of the door opening, she took a deep breath and kept her emotions in check.

When she turned around and looked at Liam, she couldn't explain the sadness that engulfed her.

He looked so wretched, yet, he was still very handsome. Even with the cheap suit he had on, he looked just like a respectable man.

Yolanda discreetly pinched herself to focus on the present. She couldn't let this hateful man pull her in again.

She couldn't forget the reason why she came to Salem. It was to get revenge on Liam, and she was hell-bent on doing it.

Her desire to bring him down became even more powerful after she found out that Liam was dating Julie. Yes, she was jealous. He had no right to date some other woman. ❗

With a cold gaze, she waved the secretary away and said, "No one should interrupt us."

After the secretary closed the door behind her, Yolanda fixed her cold gaze on Liam. "What can I do for you?"

"I'm looking for Tami. I thought you could tell me where she is," he said casually, as though he was talking to a stranger.

Yolanda frowned when he mentioned Tami's name.

That was the woman who sold this company to her.

How was she to know where the woman was?

All of a sudden, Yolanda burst into laughter.

If Liam was really interested in finding Tami, then she would make it her life mission to make sure he never did.

One way or the other, Liam was going to regret being heartless to her.

She had never been able to forget that cold rainy night when she knelt outside his villa for hours, and still, Liam didn't take pity on her.

Yolanda smiled wryly at the man in front of her and said, "Right, Tami. I do know where she is. However, you'll have to do something for me if you want that piece of information."

"I'm listening," Liam said coldly, raising his eyebrows.

Yolanda was expecting anything but this complete indifference from him. She had to struggle not to show how hurt she was.

Her hurt quickly turned to anger. Who the hell did he think he was talking to her like that? As though he didn't care? Did he think he was still the CEO of a big company? Just wait and see!

She could have easily cursed him out loud like she used to before. But over time, she had come to realise that throwing insults were unnecessary. Only the weak did that as a last resort, and she was most definitely not weak.

With this in mind, Yolanda crossed her arms over her chest arrogantly and said, "Kneel down and apologize for what you've done to me."

Liam couldn't believe his ears.

However, his face remained stoic as he said, "Name something else. I'm not doing that."

Yolanda had expected him to say that.

It would be boring if he just accepted like that, and she would lose interest.

A smile spread on her face as she stared at him. "In that case, break up with Julie and become my secret lover. You'll be mine day and night."

Yolanda only wanted to do something that would make her forget the humiliation of kneeling down before Liam and begging him.

The only thing that could make her forget, was if Liam equally knelt down in front of her and begged her.

Liam looked at her as though she was crazy and shook his head. "That's still a no."

Yolanda couldn't take his refusal this time.

This was literally the best arrangement Liam would have. He wouldn't have to pay any price, and he would have a very beautiful woman like her to himself.

Numerous men wanted her. All she had to do was pick one.

And here was Liam, openly rejecting her. What did he think of himself? Yolanda couldn't take this humiliation. She glared at him and asked coldly, "On what grounds are you refusing such a generous offer? You have no money. Or are you still living in a world where you are the CEO of the Kingland Group? Those days are over. Besides, what's so good about Julie? I'm better than her in every single way. Besides, I'll be supporting you like she does. Just in a better way. You only have two options, Liam. You either kneel before me, or you become my lover. If not, I'm afraid I don't know where Tami is."

Liam was truly surprised. He knew she was going to be difficult, but he didn't expect Yolanda to be so unreasonable.

To make matters worse, she had a man. What did she want with him? Since Yolanda was clearly not going to help him out, there was no need entertaining this conversation with her. With that in mind, Liam turned and left the office without looking back.

There were many other ways he could find Tami. He just thought he would try the easiest and direct one. It was a shame that Yolanda didn't want to help him.

Yolanda watched Liam leave with a smirk on her face.

She was certain that he was only trying to save his dignity by playing hard to get.

He was expecting her to call him back. Maybe that would help him keep some of his pride.

However, Yolanda refused to let him win. He would come back on his own.

So she waited. One minute had gone by.

Then... Two minutes.

She waited again, but Liam wasn't coming back. She paced back and forth in the office, anxiously staring at the door from time to time.

It had been too long already. She couldn't take the wait anymore. So, she called her secretary who was working just outside the door. "Where is Liam? Has he been standing at door since then?"

The secretary shook her head in confusion and said, "No, Miss Lambert. He left already."

Yolanda froze. She felt her heart fall into her stomach. With bloodshot eyes, she clenched the phone in a tight grip.

With a shrill scream, she threw the phone at the wall across the room. "Loser! You damn loser, Liam! How dare you still act arrogant in your position and after abandoning me? I'll make you and Julie pay for this!"

Chapter 237 A Favor

"Miss Lambert, are you okay?" The secretary rushed into the office upon hearing the noise.

Yolanda's head snapped towards the secretary and all she saw was a way to vent out her anger and frustration.

Without any warning, she slapped the secretary hard on the cheek, shouting angrily, "Why didn't you tell me he had left? What's your use, huh? Get out of here!" ②

The secretary held her cheek, feeling extremely wronged. She didn't deserve that.

But she was just a secretary and had to take it in if she wanted to keep her job.

She apologized and left the room, but her eyes were filled with resentment as she walked to her seat.

It was rumoured that Yolanda was just from an insignificant family. She was a divorced woman who was with Tyler of the Riley family only thanks to her beauty.

Her divorce with Liam had been the talk of Ninverton for a while after it happened.

The Riley family had used their power to suppress the news, but one just had to search for it, and they would be in the loop of what happened.

Back on her seat, the secretary looked in the mirror at her now ruddy face. Anger surged up in her, and she just wanted Yolanda to pay. As soon as she thought of this, a thought crossed her mind.

She took her phone without hesitation and called Tyler. "Mr. Riley, Liam came to the Talmer Company today and spent a considerable amount of time in the office with the CEO. In fact, they ..."

the secretary explained, exaggerating Yolanda's actions and her presumed shyness when Liam came.

She used her words so expertly that anyone that heard her would think

that Liam and Yolanda fooled around in the office.

In the CEO's office of the Riley Group.

Tyler gripped the flat armrest of the sofa so hard that it lost its original shape.

His face was as hard as stone. "Send the surveillance footage of the CEO's office to me."

The secretary bit her lip nervously. What was she going to do now?

She had just watched the footage, and there was nothing wrong with it. There was nothing to reproach.

They didn't even get close enough to each other to have physical contact.

It would be over for her if Tyler found out she was lying.

She took a deep breath and took the risk to delete all the footage.

"I just checked the surveillance footage, Mr. Riley, but it seems that Miss Lambert turned it off when Liam went in."

This got Tyler burning with anger. ①

He hung up and called Yolanda immediately. "Tell me, did something special or unusual happen today?"

Yolanda blinked in confusion. Where was that sudden question from?

She would have just played it cool, but then, she decided against it and chose to be honest. "Liam came by the office to ask me where Tami was. Can you believe it? I think he's crazy. Like how the hell am I supposed to know where Tami is? Anyway, I told him off and he left soon after."

Tyler frowned. Her version sounded too honest and concise to be a lie.

So, he hung up, but he still had his doubts.

If nothing happened, why did Yolanda turn off the surveillance video?

Did they end up doing something they shouldn't have done in there?

Tyler couldn't help himself. Images of Yolanda and Liam having sex in her office flooded his brain and made him go crazy.

His eyes were so red. He grabbed the golf club by his desk and smashed everything in front of him. ②

He destroyed everything he could lay his hands on. When the office was

in a complete mess and there was nothing left to destroy, Tyler gained control of himself again.

He threw the broken golf club to the floor in anger and said through gritted teeth, "You bastard! I let you be, Liam, but you had to come for me. Don't come crying later, because you asked for it."

Tyler took out his mobile phone, looked for Watkins' number and called him.

The Riley Group and the Rinku Group were both powerful groups in Salem. Tyler and Watkins both belonged to the upper class, so they stayed in touch.

As soon as the call went through, Tyler greeted and said, "Mr. Vasquez, I'm calling today, because one of your employees has offended me. I hope you can do me a favor and teach him a lesson. Of course, I will owe you one for this."

Before coming back to Salem, Tyler had done some research on Liam's life here, and he found out that after saving Watkins, Liam got a job in the Rinku Group.

However, Watkins had already returned that favor by offering him a job. So the man owed him nothing.

Tyler was the young master of a powerful family. Surely, Watkins wouldn't choose that piece of trash over him.

On his end, Watkins was surprised that the distinguished young master of the Riley family would want to owe him a favour just so he would take care of an employee.

This was a good opportunity. If he did this for Tyler, then he would use the opportunity to grow even bigger.

Watkins had no reason to think it over. He agreed easily. "Just give me his name."

Tyler smiled evilly on his end and said, "I'm quite sure you know him. His name is Liam Hoffman."

Chapter 238 Attending The Wedding

The moment Liam's name was mentioned, Watkins was stunned.

For a moment, he thought he was hallucinating. Following that, he immediately asked, "Could you repeat that, Mr. Riley? Who did you say you wanted me to deal with again?"

Tyler frowned and asked in confusion, "What's wrong with you, Mr. Vasquez? Remember your savior, Liam? He is an ordinary worker of your marketing department now."

The moment Watkins heard Liam's name again, he felt upset.

He had offended Liam because of what had happened in the marketing department last time. He was worried about how to make it up!

Yet, Tyler had the audacity to suggest this!

If Liam were to get wind of this, he would have to give up on his position as vice president!

Watkins was beside himself with fury as he roared at the phone, "Fuck you, Tyler! Who the hell do you think you are? How dare you interfere in the business of the Rinku Group? Fuck off! From now on, our company will cease all forms of cooperation with the Riley Group, now and forever!"

He didn't even give Tyler a chance to react before hanging up the phone!

Tyler sat in silence, stunned by Watkins's words.

He cursed, "Damn it! What's wrong with Watkins? We were catching up like best friends earlier. What on earth is going on? I merely asked him to deal with an employee. How could he become so angry?"

Just as Tyler was throwing a fit, the door of the CEO's office was suddenly pushed open from the outside.

A middle-aged, bald man with extraordinary temperament rushed in in a hurry.

He was none other than Tyler's father, Cartwright Riley!

"Dad, why are you here?" Tyler looked at his father and asked in confusion.

However, Cartwright's face was flushed.

Without uttering a word, he rushed to Tyler and gave him a resounding slap!

The slap echoed loudly across the room.

Tyler covered his face. At the moment, he could feel a burning pain across his cheek.

His eyes turned bloodshot. He was about to lose his temper, but when he raised his head and remembered that the man was his father, he stopped.

He was in a really foul mood at the moment as he screamed internally about his misfortunes today. He was scolded and beaten up today! What on earth went wrong today?

Tyler covered his face and said in an upset tone, "Dad, why did you hit me?! Why?"

With a dark look, Cartwright trembled with anger as he pointed at his son and shouted at him, "Did you think that you can get away with anything just because I've been too good to you?! Why on earth did you provoke Watkins?! We were going to sign the contract for a project worth five hundred million dollars. However, I have received a call from Rinku Group telling me that they have terminated our cooperation!"

Tyler's eyes widened in disbelief.

He stuttered, "I ... I just asked Watkins to fire Liam. Liam is just a loser who has been expelled from the Hoffman family. He ... he has no power or influence. So why can't I get rid of him?"

No one would have thought that Watkins would give up such a big project just because of Liam. For Christ's sake! He just gave up five hundred million dollars!

Hearing this, Cartwright frowned. Did Watkins really care so much about his savior?

Between a loser and five hundred million dollars, even a fool knew which to choose!

Besides, who was the boss of the company, Watkins or Liam?

Although he was confused, his resentment towards Liam did not

diminish at all!

The Riley family was a very powerful family in Salem. Did they really think that he couldn't deal with a loser?

Cartwright snorted and looked at his son with disdain. "You're such a disgrace! You can't even deal with a trash like him! Aren't you going to hold a wedding ceremony with Yolanda in a month? Invite Liam!"

For a man, it was humiliating to see his ex-wife having sex with another man in front of him.

As Cartwright thought of this, a hint of smugness flashed across his eyes. Ah the joy of revenge!

Hearing this, Tyler immediately forgot the pain on his face and laughed maniacally.

"Okay! Moreover, I will use our resources in Salem to make sure he would never be able to live in Salem ever again! I will make him a poor, homeless man!"

At the same time, on the other side of the city.

After leaving the Telmar Company, Liam headed back to the Furi Hospital.

As soon as his car arrived at the gate of the hospital, he received a call from Tyler.

Tyler's mischievous voice was heard from the other end of the line, saying, "Liam, I'm going to hold a wedding with Yolanda in a month. As her ex-husband, you should come over."

Liam frowned. Why was he behaving in such an abnormal manner?

He refused subconsciously. "No. You guys should continue with your lives. I want no part of it."

Tyler hurriedly said, "Don't be quick to refuse me. I purchased Callechelys Cosmetics and negotiated with Tami. If you want to know where she is, just come to my wedding!"

When Liam heard this, his eyes turned cold. He replied in a stern manner, "Fine! I'll come."

After hanging up the phone, he leaned against the seat with narrowed eyes.

Obviously, Tyler was after him. It wasn't a simple wedding invitation. Tyler must have something in store.

He was sure that Tyler would use the power of the Riley family to humiliate him at the wedding.

But he wasn't afraid.

With a sneer, Liam murmured, "Tyler, you provoked me first. Don't blame me for being ruthless!"

Tyler tried so hard to humiliate him. Since he was going to attend the wedding, he should at least give Tyler a big gift!

Chapter 239 Will I Get My Old Face Back

Liam parked his car in the parking lot of the hospital and rushed upstairs.

Klaus rushed out of the monitoring room not long after and bumped into Liam in the corridor.

"Mr. Hoffman, the plastic surgeons and other doctors we called just got here," Klaus said.

With the number of people they fired last night, it was a little complicated for the Furi Hospital to run as it usually did.

Liam had no choice but to call on personnel from the Hoffman family.

"Great!" Liam nodded and opened the door to Julie's ward gently.

The first thing he saw was Julie on the bed with her eyes closed.

When he entered fully into the ward, he saw Ulises dozing off on a chair.

With a small smile on his lips, Liam picked up a blanket and covered him with it.

Seeing as they were both sleeping, he turned to leave, but saw Julie looking at him.

Her eyes were so bright, as though she wasn't asleep just moments ago. Liam couldn't help the smile that spread on his face when their eyes met.

When Julie heard the sound of footsteps in the room, she opened her eyes and saw Liam taking care of her father.

The sincerity in his action warmed her heart.

She had made the right choice.

"Hey, you," she said, her voice a little rough from not saying anything for long.

Liam smiled gently and said, "You woke up just in time. The plastic surgeons just got here."

Julie's heart beat a little faster at this news.

She had been waiting for this moment for so long. No woman wanted to live with an ugly face.

About five minutes later, a middle-aged female doctor came into the ward, followed by a group of other doctors and nurses.

After a curt nod in Liam's direction, the female doctor went close to Julie, looked at her face for a moment and then slowly removed the gauze on it.

The ointment that was rubbed on the face before made the gauze stick to her face. Each time the doctor successfully tore off a gauze, Julie's wounds would sting.

Julie closed her eyes and bit her lower lip to hold in the whimper that almost escaped her lips.

She held the quilt tightly until the doctor removed everything from her face.

Ulises woke up at this time, and when he saw his daughter's face, his heart broke.

Even the doctors and nurses couldn't keep an indifferent look on their faces.

Julie didn't miss the fear or pity flashing in their eyes.

She looked down, so that they wouldn't see how hurt she was. She was so used to being admired and fawned over. But now, she instilled fear in people.

Julie gulped and forced the tears down. She couldn't cry now. Not in front of them.

She pulled herself together and said softly, "Give me a mirror. I want to see my face."

Liam's warm hand covered her cold one.

He smiled down at her and said in a his deep voice, "You should wait and see after the operation."

Julie looked up at him with tear-filled eyes.

Liam was looking down at her with so much love it was suffocating.

The way he looked at her warmed her heart.

He took away her sadness.

However, she still wanted to see her face. "I still want to see it. Don't worry, I'll accept whatever I see. I won't break down or anything."

Ulises couldn't hold his tears in anymore.

With a sniff, he took the mirror on the table and handed it to her.

Julie closed her eyes, took it with apprehension, then took a deep breath before she opened her eyes slowly.

She gulped when she saw what she looked like. Deep scars ran across her once very beautiful face.

The wounds had been treated, but red bright scars still remained. Even with the ointment on them, it wasn't an easy thing to see.

With a sob, tears streamed down Julie's cheeks.

After a while, she sniffed and let out a mocking laugh. "So ugly, huh?"

Julie took a deep breath and wiped her tears. She looked at the doctor with hope in her eyes.

"Will I get my old face back, doctor?"

Chapter 240 Yolanda Came To See Liam

The female doctor looked at Julie with admiration and surprise.

In all her years as a plastic surgeon, she had had the opportunity to treat countless women, but this was the first woman that looked so hopeful despite her condition.

She admired Julie's strength. She nodded reassuringly and said, "The wounds are not deep, and I came with all the advanced devices and products we might need. I give it a month for your face to recover fully. You might even be more beautiful than you were before."

Everyone in the ward seemed to let out a breath of relief when the doctor said this.

They seemed to be more worried about her condition than the person concerned.

On hearing this, Ulises sniffed and nodded rapidly. "Okay, great! That's great!"

After that, the doctor examined Julie's face carefully and made a surgical plan.

Since Julie was in a haste to get it done, they got ready to begin the operation at once.

Liam and Ulises sat in front of the operating room, anxiously waiting for Julie to come out of the door.

Time went by rather slowly. Finally, the doctor opened the door at twelve o'clock.

Liam and Ulises quickly stood up with worried looks on their faces. "How did it go?"

"Better than expected actually," the doctor answered with a smile.

Liam and Ulises both sighed heavily, relieved by the news.

The female doctor couldn't help but feel jealous of Julie in this moment. Not every woman out there had up to two men that cared so much about her.

With a small smile in their direction, the doctor added, "I will stay here

for about a month. That way, I can follow her up until she fully recovers."

This doctor was too big a doctor for the small Furi Hospital.

She only agreed to come here for this case because the Hoffman family called on her.

She had to take special care of Julie.

Liam and Ulises nodded gratefully at the doctor, and followed after Julie as she was pushed back to her ward.

Tyler's wedding announcement was made almost at the same time. In no time, it had spread in the upper class of Salem.

Naturally, the guest list was filled with names of big wigs.

Liam only went back home the next morning. He took a bath, got into comfortable clothes and was about to rest when someone knocked on the door.

With an impatient groan, Liam walked to the door and opened it.

Yolanda? What the hell did she want?

Yolanda looked up at him with a sly smile, tilting her neck and exposing her delicate neck.

"Here. I came to give you my wedding invitation."

She pushed the invitation into his arms and strode into the house like she owned it.

Yolanda took the liberty of looking around, then looked at Liam with a shake of her head.

"Liam, I don't get you. You are so poor, yet, you insist on living a luxurious life. I mean, your only source of income is a meager monthly salary of thousands of dollars. Why would you decorate your house with so many expensive things? If I'm not wrong, it looks just like a replica of your house in the Cloudhigh Resort."

Yolanda scoffed and continued, "You're so used to living a rich life that you don't know how to adapt to your reality."

Liam sighed with impatience and snapped coldly, "Just say what you want to say and get out. If you have nothing to say, you might as well get out now!"

Yolanda faced him with a cold stare. Then she took out a bank card and

held it out for him.

With furrowed eyebrows, Liam asked, "What is this for?"

"I will transfer twenty thousand dollars to this account every month from now on," she answered smugly.

After looking at his house, she was even more certain that Liam was trying to act tough and act like he didn't lack anything.

She couldn't blame him for acting this way though. Liam was born into a rich family. Then, he lived in the Lamberts' villa. It was quite understandable that he wasn't used to living a poor life.

Liam, however, was lost. "Twenty thousand dollars every month? Why would you give me money? What are you trying to imply?"

Yolanda didn't think Liam would be so stubborn. She squinted her eyes at him and laughed dryly.

"Don't play dumb, Liam. That Julie bitch has been keeping you for so long. Why are you acting like this is new to you? I'm only doing this because the Beauty Cosmetics Company of the Fiber family will soon go bankrupt, and your woman wouldn't be able to keep providing for you."

With a proud aura about her, Yolanda went to the fridge, took out a bottle of red wine and two wine glasses from the table.

Like the mistress of the house, she walked to the sofa and filled both glasses for herself.

When she sat down, her ultra short dress rode up a bit and exposed her long legs. Then, she crossed her legs, leaving barely anything to the imagination.

Yolanda shook the wineglass gently and leaned against the back of the sofa. She took a sip, then looked up at Liam with a confident smile. "You know what this is, Liam. I'm proposing to provide for you."

Chapter 241 More Important Than Money

Liam laughed a little, but there was no humour in it.

He looked at the confidence on Yolanda's face and shook his head. Who could believe that this same arrogant woman once knelt in rain and cried for his forgiveness?

The last thing he wanted on this earth, was to deal with Yolanda again. He sighed and threw the bank card in front of Yolanda. "I don't like you anymore, and I definitely do not want to be your lover."

Yolanda's hands trembled so much that some wine almost spilled over. She had thought she was indifferent towards Liam, but hearing him say those words affected her beyond belief.

She felt like he had ripped off the very essence of her being.

Yolanda clenched her fists so hard that her finger nails dug into her palms and drew blood. ③

For a moment, it felt like she had forgotten how to breathe. After taking a deep breath, Yolanda looked up at Liam and asked, "Am I not beautiful enough?"

"You are very beautiful," Liam answered honestly.

"Then am I not sexy enough?"

"You're very sexy," he said yet again.

Yolanda was used to hearing such so much that it meant nothing to her. But coming from Liam, it sent a beautiful feeling coursing through her body.

However, his answers only confused her.

She furrowed her eyebrows. "Am I not what every man dreams of? A beautiful face and a sexy figure?"

She looked at Liam attentively, waiting to see affirmation and maybe lust in his eyes.

To her disappointment, his eyes were blank... Indifferent.

Liam sighed as if exasperated and said, "Like I said, you're very

beautiful and sexy. In fact, I dare say you are the most beautiful woman I've ever laid my eyes on. Many men must be after you, but you don't seem to understand the fact that I don't like you anymore. You may not know this, Yolanda, but some things are far more important than how someone looks."

Julie gulped. ⑦

"That's not true!" she shouted and dropped the glass on the table with force.

"You men are all the same. You're not any different. A woman just has to be beautiful and sexy, and you'll all be fawning over her. It's even better when like me, she has money. Liam, I can take good care of you. Why don't you like me? Answer me, you loser!" Julie screamed, her eyes red at this point. ③

Suddenly, Liam heard a sniff coming from her. He looked up in surprise to find her looking scared and... What was that? Disappointment?

That was exactly how Yolanda felt. She searched Liam's eyes and face, but couldn't see a single trace of the feelings he used to have for her.

The gentleness and kindness was gone.

All she saw in his eyes was indifference, and if she saw any consideration, it was the same he would offer to a stranger on the road. Realizing this killed Yolanda on the inside. Had she really lost her chance with him?

She suddenly winced, feeling a sharp pain in her belly.

However, Liam didn't notice it. With a bored expression on his face, he said, "You can leave now. I have important things to take care of."

His tone was so calm, so uninterested. His usual tenderness was gone. He picked up the red wine she had placed on the table and put it back in the fridge.

Yolanda stared at his back and asked angrily, "Is it because of that Julie? Are you in love with that bitch?"

That was it. Liam turned around with an angry gaze and said in a cold tone, "Don't you call her names!"

The honest rage in Liam's eyes undid Yolanda.

She burst into tears and shouted, "How dare you scold me for another woman? How can you do that? I'm more beautiful and richer than she is. It makes no sense that I lose to her!"

Her tears rolled down her cheeks and fell on her collar.

But Yolanda didn't care about that right now.

She was more interested in what Liam was going to say.

She looked so hurt and broken that Liam was tempted to feel sorry for her.

But then he shook himself back. He had sworn never to return to that point in his life where he loved this woman again.

Besides, he was already in love with Julie.

Liam looked directly at her and said, "She may not be as beautiful or as sexy as you, but she has the kindest heart. Something you will never have. She puts me above money. Do you hear that? Money comes secondary to her. Can you say the same for yourself? Just try asking yourself if I am more important to you than money."

Yolanda stared blankly at him. She opened her mouth to say something, but no sound came out.

Then she snapped it shut and realized that she didn't know what to say.

Chapter 242 Off You Go

Since childhood, it was instilled in Yolanda's mind that money was the most important thing.

Money was more important than anything else, even friendship, love, and family affection.

Without money, people would be at the bottom of society in their lifetime. And they would always be looked down upon by others.

Yolanda was a proud and arrogant woman. She would never want to be at the bottom of society, and she was unwilling to worry about daily necessities and trifles of life.

Since childhood, all the good things of the Lambert family were only given to Andrew. Even if her parents kept begging, what they got was only rubbish that others wouldn't even want.

Therefore, she had been doing her best to climb to the highest position. Yolanda wanted everyone to respect and worship her.

However, what Liam said just now was a heavy blow to her.

At the thought that she would never get a chance to see him day and night, she was completely flustered.

In the past, Liam was even willing to ride a bicycle for two hours just to pick the most beautiful flower for her in the south of the city.

But now, the man who gave her the best treatment seemed to completely disappear from her life.

In an instant, Yolanda felt that her life had lost its color.

She had never felt this way before because she had always thought what she had for Liam was not love but hatred.

Yolanda hated everything about Liam, so she schemed to destroy everything he had.

But since they met again yesterday, and she saw the coldness and ruthlessness in his eyes, she had a sleepless night.

Last night, her mind was full of things about him.

Yolanda looked at Liam in a daze, lost in thought, thinking of her past with him.

Why did their relationship end like this? Who made a mistake? ❖

At this point, she already knew what she wanted. But it was useless now.

The man in front of her no longer cared about her.

Liam turned his head away, avoiding Yolanda's eyes.

Without looking at her, he sighed and said lightly, "Off you go."

But Yolanda didn't seem to hear his words. Instead, she asked, "Can we still be friends? Can we meet as often as friends?"

Liam turned and looked at her.

He was surprised as he didn't expect that such humble words would come out of Yolanda's mouth.

However, there had been too many entanglements between them. And they were getting further and further apart.

Liam shook his head. He didn't want to give Yolanda hope, so he said in a colder voice, "How can we be friends when we're already like this? I'm not a saint, and I can't be magnanimous to a woman who has betrayed me. Besides, I have a girlfriend now. She's someone I want to marry. I don't want her to misunderstand me."

Yolanda's face turned pale when she heard this. Her eyes were filled with bottomless despair.

Dark red blood unconsciously oozed out of her pink lips. She was still beautiful, but she gave off a sense of broken beauty now.

Yolanda's voice trembled when she asked, "Julie, right?"

Liam didn't say anything, but he nodded.

Actually, Yolanda already knew the answer very well.

But she still felt a pain in her heart when Liam personally confirmed it. She felt a lump in her throat, making her difficult to breathe.

In the end, she could only say in a low spirit, "I wish you happiness then."

After saying this, she stood up and staggered towards the door.

At this moment, she felt like she had lost her soul. She was like a

walking dead.

Since she staggered, her five-centimeter high heel twisted. She instantly lost her balance and fell to the side.

She closed her eyes, waiting to feel the pain once her body hit the floor. But to her surprise, she didn't feel the cold touch of the floor.

Instead, she felt the warm embrace she had been missing day and night every day.

The embrace was so familiar, intoxicating, and secure.

It was like the ground that had been dried and cracked for a long time was instantly moistened by the rain.

Yolanda raised her head, and what she saw was Liam's handsome face. She had a clear view of his angular outline, delicate facial features, and the pair of deep and attractive eyes like an abyss.

While staring at Liam's perfect features, Yolanda hurriedly wrapped her arms around his waist and said excitedly, "I knew it. I knew you still care about me, right?"

But Liam broke free from her grip and said coldly, "Just go."

These two words were like a basin of cold water poured on her head and extinguished the last bit of hope in her heart.

She smiled self-mockingly and staggered out of the house.

Liam watched her receding figure. He looked calm on the surface, but it was the opposite inside him.

She was the woman he had loved deeply for three years.

Because of her, he had endured the humiliation for three years.

But now that he had finally won her heart, why was he not happy at all? He had been longing for this, right?

Perhaps this was fate. Once they missed each other, they would never be together.

At present, someone else owned Liam's heart.

Outside the house, a car was parked in the dark.

Liam and Yolanda had no idea that Tyler had been hiding in the car and saw the scene when they hugged.

He was so angry that he felt his heart was about to explode. He gritted his teeth so hard that blood oozed from the corner of his mouth.

Tyler then said in an extremely vicious voice, "Liam, you son of a bitch! How dare you covet my woman! I will kill you! And Yolanda, you bitch! You are getting married next month, but you are still dating your ex-husband? You bitch! I will..."

Tyler stopped and thought for a long time. But he couldn't figure out what he could do to Yolanda.

This woman was like a born fairy. She was so perfect that he couldn't bear to punish her ruthlessly.

Tyler clenched his fist tightly and smashed it heavily on the seat beside him. He roared, "Liam, you bastard! You dare fucking cuckold me? I'll cuckold you too!"

Chapter 243 Yesenia Was Kidnapped

While still sitting in the car, Tyler called Ajax. As soon as the call was connected, he asked loudly, "What are you going to do with Liam next?" Ajax asked in confusion on the other end of the line, "Tyler, didn't you just purchase Callechelys Cosmetics? Why don't you deal with the members of the Fiber family next?"

It was Ajax who purchased that company for Tyler back then. And now, Tami, whom Liam was looking for, was also with him.

Tyler frowned and snapped, "It's not enough. Such a method is too slow. I want that bastard Liam dead now."

With Tyler's tone, Ajax instantly understood that Liam had offended Tyler again.

He took a deep breath and kept silent for a while. Then he sneered, "Liam is so good at fighting that he is not afraid even of guns. If we send people to attack him directly, I'm afraid it's useless. We still have to start with the people around him. I've heard that Julie's mother likes to play cards with her friends. And she is fond of taking advantage of others. We can start with her."

When Tyler heard Ajax's words, an idea occurred to him.

He smiled sinisterly and said slowly, "I know what to do."

At this moment, Ajax was in a seaside villa on the Hoiwa Island.

He wore a colorful floral shirt, looking out at the beach in front of him through the floor-to-ceiling window.

He enjoyed the scenery on the beach, where more than a dozen beautiful women in swimsuits were playing beach volleyball. One of them was Tami.

Ajax picked up his phone again and browsed his phone for the latest news. And when he read the news about the illegal clinic, his face darkened.

He snorted coldly and murmured, "That big shot in the capital did not receive the heart, and the clinic exploded. But that bastard Liam is safe."

He is really capable. Since I can't deal with Liam directly, I'll start with Julie's mother."

As he said this, Ajax's eyes turned cold. A vicious plan slowly formed in his mind.

He would let Liam know how it felt to see with his own eyes how the person he loved the most died in front of him.

It had been a few days, and Julie was still in Furi Hospital.

But she was a lot better now. She sat in a wheelchair, being pushed by Liam to the yard outside the hospital. He would let her bask in the sun.

When the warm sunshine shone on them, they felt very comfortable.

Although Julie's face was still wrapped in gauze, she felt better and calmer after the surgery.

In the past few days, her food was specially made by nutritionists, and it was good for her health. So her body recovered a lot. It was only a matter of time before she could walk again.

The yard was full of blooming flowers. Two butterflies were dancing trippingly, touching and parting from time to time. They looked very intimate.

Julie held Liam's hand, smiled, and said, "I wish I could freeze time, and we could stay at this moment forever. Then I can be happy for the rest of my life."

Liam also enjoyed this leisure time with Julie. He hadn't been this relaxed for a long time.

He chuckled and said jokingly, "But I want to see you in a wedding dress. Then we will have a son and a daughter. And we will take them for a walk."

Julie's face flushed when he heard this. She raised her delicate fist, gently punched Liam's chest, and pouted. "I didn't say I will marry you."

At this moment, a middle-aged man in a suit rushed toward them.

As he was getting closer to them, Liam recognized him. He was actually Ulises.

After Julie's successful operation, Ulises regained his high spirits.

But at this moment, the man in front of them had messy hair, and the

collar of his shirt was messed up. He looked terrible.

Seeing that Ulises was out of breath, Liam hurriedly held his arm to support him and said, "Calm down first. What happened? Tell us slowly." With sweat trickling down Ulises' forehead, he put his hands on his knees for support and asked intermittently, "Julie, has...has your mother come to see you in... in the past few days?"

Julie shook her head. "No, Dad. Is something wrong?"

At this moment, Ulises had recovered his breathing. He stood up and said nervously, "I have been busy in the company these past few days. I ate and slept there, and I hadn't come home. But this morning, I received a call from someone, saying that your mother owes him fifty million dollars, and he asked me to pay it in cash. At first, I thought it was just a fraud. But when I came home and checked the surveillance video, I found that your mother had not come home these two days. I tried calling her, but I couldn't contact her."

After hearing this, Julie frowned. She became nervous at once.

She hurriedly asked, "Have you tried calling her friends? Maybe she's playing cards with them."

Ulises shook his head and sighed, "You know I never like gambling. I don't know her friends at all."

At this moment, Ulises' phone suddenly rang, and it was an unfamiliar number.

Ulises, Liam, and Julie exchanged glances. Liam frowned and said, "Put it on speakerphone."

Ulises nodded, pressed the answer button, and put the phone on speakerphone.

Then Yesenia's voice came from the other end of the line, breaking out into curses. "Ulises, you old loser! I'm about to be killed here. Give them the money right away."

Chapter 244 She Lost Fifty Million Dollars

Liam, Julie, and Ulises clearly heard Yesenia's words.

Julie immediately got anxious. She quickly asked, "Mom, what's going on? Where are you?"

When Yesenia heard Julie's voice on the other end of the line, she immediately cried out, "Julie, I'm really having a hard time now. A few days ago, I played cards with my best friend, and I won five million dollars. She said I was so lucky and persuaded me to go to the casino to take my chances and make a fortune. Julie, I swear that I was winning at the beginning. But I didn't expect that I would suddenly lose. I lost more and more money..."

Yesenia was too embarrassed to continue. And Julie didn't want to hear the rest of her words either.

A bad feeling surged in her heart.

She asked tentatively with uneasiness, "Mom, how much money did you lose?"

Yesenia fell silent for a long time. Then she laughed awkwardly and said, "Not much. Just... fifty million dollars."

Liam's, Ulises', and Julie's eyes widened when they heard this.

How could Yesenia say that fifty million dollars was not much?

Julie was shocked when she heard this figure.

Her face turned pale, and her body trembled with anger.

Tears welled up in her eyes and streamed down her face.

She roared, "Mom, how can you do this? Do you know how hard it was for the Fiber family to recover? How can we immediately pay fifty million dollars? How can we survive?"

When Yesenia heard Julie's roar, she got angry at once. She said unreasonably, "What's wrong with you? Why are you blaming me now? Do you really think I was gambling for myself? I only wanted to win to let our family live a better life. And I was the one who raised you for thirty years. If it weren't for me, you wouldn't be like this. How can you

become so rude to your mother now?"

Ulises couldn't stand it anymore. He shouted angrily, "Yesenia, enough! It was I who raised my daughter. You have no right to say that."

When Yesenia heard Ulises' voice, she was like a cat whose tail had been stepped on. Her attitude became even worse.

"Ulises, I am the daughter of a wealthy family's head. But because of love, I married a loser like you. Can't I have a little enjoyment? Besides, fifty million dollars is not a big deal. Our family is still rich, right? Why don't we use the fifty million dollars that Rinku Group has just invested in our company?"

Ulises couldn't believe that Yesenia only thought of this matter as a trifle.

He couldn't stand it anymore, so he roared, "Fifty million dollars is not a big deal? Yesenia, I'm divorcing you. Don't even think about getting the fifty million dollars from me. I won't give you a single penny."

Yesenia was really furious now. She cursed, "Divorce me? How dare you! You old loser! If I wasn't blinded, you wouldn't have gotten a wife. I am telling you. You must give me that money. Yes, the company will go bankrupt if you take out fifty million dollars. But so what? This is all your fault, anyway. If you didn't trust your sister, I wouldn't suffer this. And I wouldn't gamble to vent my frustration. Besides, you didn't get the fifty million dollars from Rinku Group. It was Julie who negotiated that fifty million dollars investment."

After mentioning Julie's name, she immediately cried and begged, "Julie, I know I was wrong. But I went through a lot to bring you into this world. You must save me. You can't just watch me die."

These words made Julie feel like her heart was tightly clenched by a fist. And her wounds that had been healed began to hurt again.

In the past, no matter how unreasonable Yesenia was, she would never take it to heart and forgive Yesenia as if it was nothing.

But now that she was hospitalized, Yesenia didn't even stay with her. Yesenia didn't even come to visit her. Instead, Yesenia gambled and lost fifty million dollars.

Didn't Yesenia realize that fifty million dollars was enough for a person

to live a good life?

She didn't understand what she had done wrong. Was it her retribution from God to have such a mother?

Tears flowed down her face uncontrollably. She was immersed in happiness just now. But suddenly, it was replaced by hopelessness and devastation.

There was no response on the other end of the line for a while. Then a man's roar was suddenly heard.

"Fuck you! Haven't you talked enough? Are you going to pay me back or not? I'm telling you. I must have the fifty million dollars in my hands before three in the afternoon. If you dare to be a minute late, I'll chop off one of her fingers."

When Yesenia heard that her finger would be cut off, she didn't dare to be arrogant anymore. Instead, she immediately begged for mercy. "No! Please don't chop off my finger. Julie, help me. Help your mom!"

Yesenia's cries of supplication on the phone instantly softened Julie's heart.

After all, no matter what, the person on the other end of the line was her mother.

Julie clenched the armrest of the wheelchair tightly. Blood was already oozing from her fingernails, and her knuckles turned pale. ①

At this moment, a warm hand suddenly covered her cold palm.

"Don't be afraid. I'll handle this. Leave everything to me." A deep and magnetic male voice rang in her ears.

This voice was like the warmest thing in this world, immediately giving her an infinite sense of security.

Julie raised her head. And when she saw Liam's deep eyes, her clenched hands slowly loosened.

Liam smiled and gave her a reassuring look. Then he turned around and took the phone from Ulises.

His eyes became fierce when he said coldly, "Tell me the location. I'll send the money." ①

Chapter 245 The Luxurious Casino

The man on the other end of the line sneered and mocked, "You are smarter than the other two. Remember my name. I'm Raul Seymour. When you come to the casino, tell them my name."

After saying this, he hung up the phone directly.

After a while, the phone in Liam's hand vibrated. He received a message, telling him the address where he would take the money.

A cold light flashed through his eyes. He thought for a moment, then sent the address to Tyson. "Do me a favor. Send some people to surround a casino. I'll send you the address."

Klaus' men were guarding Furi Hospital because he couldn't let anything happen to Julie.

So at this moment, the only people available were Tyson's men.

Tyson replied at once, "Don't worry, Mr. Hoffman. Just send me the address, and I'll be right there with everyone."

After the farce the other night, Tyson had a new understanding of Liam's background.

There was no doubt that Liam was a legend.

He had long intended to befriend Liam, but he was never given the opportunity.

Now that Liam had taken the initiative to ask him for help, there was no way he would refuse.

When Julie heard that Liam would take the risk for her again, she became worried.

She held Liam's hand, leaned her head against him, and said gently, "Don't go. It's the Fiber family's business. You can't take risks for us all the time."

Ulises was squatting on the ground, smoking, and scratching his hair.

His eyes were already bloodshot, and his eyebrows furrowed tightly. His face was gloomy, looking ugly and terrible.

Obviously, he only mentioned divorce to Yesenia out of anger.

All his life, Ulises loved Julie and Yesenia the most, so he wouldn't leave his wife alone.

He suddenly stood up and said in a low voice, "Liam, this matter has nothing to do with you. This is our family's problem, so let me handle this. I'll take care of the fifty million dollars."

Liam looked at Ulises in surprise.

Ulises was such a responsible man. Even if Ulises was not Julie's father, Ulises was still worth his help.

Besides, he knew very well that the Fiber family was in big trouble now. That fifty million was Rinku Group's project fund. Once Ulises took it out, the project would be over.

And if this happened, the Fiber family's company would be doomed.

Liam was determined to help Ulises. So he patted Ulises' shoulder and comforted him, "Stay with Julie, and don't let anything happen to her. Trust me, I will handle this matter well."

"But, Liam..."

Ulises wanted to say something more, but Liam didn't give him a chance to refute it. He turned around and quickly walked out of the hospital.

Liam drove the Mustang GT to the outside of the casino.

This casino occupied an extremely large area. And from the outside, it looked like a magnificent and luxurious Indian palace. Even during the day, all kinds of huge lights were always on, which were very dazzling. Tyson was already outside the casino, standing beside the car.

As soon as he saw Liam's car, he walked over to greet Liam.

He opened the car door for Liam and asked respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman, are you here to gamble?"

Liam got out of the car, shook his head, and asked, "How much do you know about this place?"

Tyson was stunned for a moment. Then he informed Liam, "This casino belongs to the Seymour family."

As soon as Tyson mentioned the Seymour family, the expression on Liam's face changed.

Actually, when he heard the name Raul Seymour on the phone just now, he had already realized that this matter was not that simple.

While walking inside, Liam asked, "Where are your people?"

"They are scattered inside and outside the casino, disguised as ordinary people." At this point, Tyson realized that there would be a big fight to be started here.

As soon as Liam and Tyson entered the casino, they were dazzled by the bright lights.

The casino was crowded. Some people had flushed faces because of excitement. Some looked depressed, slapping themselves hard.

However, everyone's eyes were filled with astonishing enthusiasm and madness. There was no exception.

Gambling was not a kind of drug. But it was even worse than drugs.

Liam suddenly grabbed a waiter's arm and said coldly, "Take me to Raul Seymour."

There was fierceness in the waiter's eyes when he looked Liam up and down. Then he said disdainfully, "Who the hell are you? A poor man dressed in clothes worth less than two hundred dollars is asking to see our boss? You must be dreaming!"

Before Liam could get angry, Tyson already couldn't stand the waiter's attitude.

With a ferocious look on his face, he raised his hand and slapped the waiter's face hard. He roared, "Who the fuck are you to say that? Shut your fucking mouth up! Cut the crap and take us to Raul Seymour. Otherwise, I'll break your arm."

But the waiter was not scared by Tyson's slap. Instead, he looked at Tyson with eyes full of resentment. Then he roared, "How dare you make trouble in the Seymour family's territory! You are fucking courting death!"

It was not yet the right time to make a scene, so Liam frowned and said indifferently, "Raul Seymour asked me to pay the money back. Are you sure you don't want to lead the way? If anything goes wrong, can you afford to take responsibility for it?"

As soon as he said this, the waiter instantly backed down.

Of course, if Liam was telling the truth, the waiter knew he couldn't afford to delay Raul's business.

But when he heard that Liam was here to pay his debt, he was even more disdainful.

If Liam was really here to pay his debt, and Raul wanted to see him personally, the debt he owed must be at least ten million.

But if Liam was only bluffing, he and Tyson were in trouble. The worst was they might not get out of the door alive.

So he didn't need to waste his energy getting mad with the two dead people.

The waiter sneered coldly and took the two of them directly to the third floor of the casino.

When they reached the end of the stairs, they saw a long corridor.

Along the way, burly men stood on both sides of the corridor. Their waists were bulging, and Liam could tell at a glance that they were obviously equipped with pistols.

At the end of the corridor, there was a door. Obviously, it was a room. The waiter knocked and shouted, "Sir, the prey fell into the pit."

As soon as he said this, the burly men in the corridor suddenly shouted altogether, "Sir, please slaughter the prey."

Liam listened to them, and sneered in his heart.

Were they treating him as prey to be slaughtered?

It was apparent Raul was not only confident but also crazy.

As soon as he entered the door, Liam saw five Dobermans staring at him sinisterly.

They seemed to have been fed some forbidden drug. Their eyes were red, and their sharp teeth were exposed. Their saliva continuously flowed out from their mouths, dripping to the floor. It was as if they were ready to eat his flesh and blood anytime.

When Liam raised his eyes, he saw a man sitting behind the desk with a malicious look.

He looked like a well-mannered scholar in his gold-rimmed glasses and

snow-white shirt.

The man was Raul.

When he noticed someone coming in, Raul raised his head. He had a cunning smile, looking like an old fox catching its prey.

He pushed his glasses up his nose and said, "You're pretty fast. Did you bring the money?"

Chapter 246 Do You Have The Money With You

Liam looked at Raul with a calmness he wasn't supposed to have in such a situation.

Maybe it was because he had encountered many men of his kind in the battlefield and knew how to handle them.

After assessing Raul, he thought the man was obviously a light weight. Nothing to worry about.

"Where is she? I need to make sure she's fine first," Liam said in his usual calmness.

Raul waved at his men, a small smile playing on his lips.

The men understood, and walked into the door that was just at the side. They pulled an iron chain out with Yesenia at the end of it.

This was probably the worst Yesenia had ever been. Her hair was messy, her face red and swollen, and stained with blood. The iron chain on her neck was enough to make Liam understand how horribly she had been maltreated.

Yesenia just let them drag her out like someone who had given up on life. That was until she looked up and saw Liam. A glimmer of hope flickered in her eyes. "Liam, pay the ransom fast and get me out of here. You better do that now if you want to keep seeing my daughter!"

Liam couldn't believe she could still be this arrogant considering her position. That sounded more like a command than a plea.

The only thing keeping Liam here after her words, was the fact that she was Julie's mother. If not...

Seated behind the desk, Raul dragged on his cigar, and crossed his legs on the table before blowing out a smoke ring.

"Where is the money?" His arrogant voice rang out.

"I didn't bring it," Liam answered coldly.

Raul's eyes turned cold at this. He placed his feet back on the floor and shouted, "Bastard! Are you trying to play me? How far do you think this will go?"

After a long obsessive drag on his cigarette, Raul looked back at his men and ordered, "Chop this woman up and feed her to the dogs."

As if understanding what Raul said, the Dobermans started barking excitedly.

The men grinned, equally excited. They had done this a few times before and they loved it.

With evil smiles on their faces, they pulled Yesenia towards the huge black dogs.

Yesenia was scared out of her mind. It was clear from the way they were eagerly barking that they would devour her without hesitation.

Yesenia shook her head frantically as the odour and spittle from their mouth reached her face.

Yesenia had never been this scared before in her life. She was so scared that she peed her pants without realizing it.

She burst into tears and gripped the fluffy carpet, shouting hysterically, "No, no! Don't do this! I don't want to die yet. Liam, please do something!"

"Let go of the carpet, bitch!" a man snapped in a rough voice.

He pulled out a Swiss Army knife from his waist and was about to dig it into Yesenia's hand, but she swiftly withdrew her hand and was propelled forward.

"Woof woof!"

The dogs got crazier with excitement, barking and jumping. The chains on their necks pulled on each other as though they would break free.

The dogs were already filling her vision. Yesenia tried to pull her body back and shouted, "Liam, you bastard. Give him the damn money! Are you trying to get me killed?"

Raul stared at Liam, trying to gauge his reaction.

However, he couldn't read Liam's expression. He seemed to be unmoved, as though he didn't care what happened to Yesenia.

With a small frown, Raul raised a hand to his men and ordered, "Wait." The men immediately halted and pulled Yesenia a step back from the Dobermans.

Raul pulled out another cigar and raised a questioning eyebrow at Liam.

"I'm going to ask you one last time. Do you have the money?"

Yesenia looked at Liam sharply, calling his attention to her.

In a less arrogant tone, she begged, "Liam, I beg of you. Just tell him you have the money, will you?"

The miserable look Liam saw on her face softened his heart a little.

He really felt bad for Julie. Why did she have to fall on such a horrible mother.

He only said he didn't have money to deal with the hateful woman and he thought that maybe, just maybe, she had learned a lesson.

Liam faced Raul head on and said, "I do have the money, but before we do the exchange, I'd like to gamble with you."

Raul raised his eyebrows in surprise.

He jumped on the table like an animal and looked down at Liam with a sneer.

Raul looked at his men and nodded towards Liam. "Did you hear that? The son of a bitch says he wants to gamble with me."

The men burst into laughter at this.

"That's the funniest thing I've heard in a while. Does he think he can win?"

"He must be crazy! He really just wants Boss to suck him dry."

"Well, he is just another gambler who will lose everything, too."

They all stared at Liam, either pitying him or mocking him.

Liam ignored their rather loud comments and looked at Raul with his head slightly tilted to the side. "What is it? Are you scared?"

Raul looked taken aback for a moment, but his face suddenly became aggressive.

He stumped on the table, then leaned towards Liam with squinted eyes.

"Me, scared? You clearly have no idea who you are talking to. Nothing in this world, and I mean nothing, scares me. You want us to gamble, right? Let's gamble. What do you have to offer? Do you think you have anything that I will need?"

Liam smiled softly and answered, "If I win, I get to go back with my fifty million dollars. And if I lose..." Liam trailed off and continued, "If I lose, then you can kill me."

Raul chuckled.

Excited, he hit the table like a gorilla. He was like a child that had seen his favourite toy.

Raul jumped a few more times and started laughing without reserve.

Raul's men stared at Liam as though he was already dead.

Suddenly, Raul stopped laughing and his face darkened.

The whole room fell silent.

He stared at Liam with dark eyes, just like a predator ready to eat up its prey.

"Your life isn't worth much. Even if I sell all the parts of your body in the black market, the highest it can bring me would be a million dollars."

Raul turned his neck, making some cracking sounds. "You have to win me fifty times. If not, the one time I do win, it'll be over for you."

Liam frowned.

It was clearer now why Raul was in charge of the casino of the Seymour family. No one had the guts to do business with him because of how morbid he was.

He was indeed the right person to run a casino.

Liam nodded indifferently. "I have no problem. I'm only wondering if you're brave enough to gamble with me."

Raul looked at Liam again with questions in his eyes.

Was this man not scared of death?

Raul didn't think so. He had never been faced with anyone like him.

What Raul liked most was to see people lose all their family property, sell their wives and children and kneel down to beg for his mercy.

He liked to give them hope, make them think they were winning, then sweep everything away from them.

Raul was certain that it would be the same case with Liam.

Thirsty for victory, he jumped off the table and shouted, "Alright then,

let's gamble! Guys, set the table for our game."



Chapter 247 Madman Raul

"Right away, boss!"

Raul's men rushed and brought a long table from outside into the office. The long table was filled with all sorts of gambling equipment. A sexy female dealer in a bunny girl's clothes stood at the head of the table. Her clothes were so revealing. Her top and skirt barely covered her boobs and butt.

Raul stood by a side of the gambling table and asked arrogantly, "So, what game do you want to play?"

Liam shrugged carelessly. "Under-Over 7. It's a simple game. I am hoping you would let me be the banker since I have to win fifty rounds. Is that okay with you, Mr. Seymour?"

"Do whatever you want," Raul answered dismissively.

He didn't care what game they played or who the banker was.

Why would he when all he had to do was win a single round and Liam had to win fifty rounds?

Raul was so confident that he didn't even bother playing tricks like he usually did. There was no way Liam would win, so why bother?

The sexy dealer leaned against the table and took a set of dice, which she shook very well in the cup, a loud noise coming from it.

The next second, she raised the cup and slammed it on the table.

Raul looked at the cup and said excitedly, "Over! I bet on Over 7."

Liam smiled slyly, and as if he didn't care, said, "Then I bet on Under 7."

Out of the blue, Raul smacked the dealer's buttock hard. "Open the cup now!" he shouted excitedly.

The woman was offended, but she was used to this. Besides, losing her temper wouldn't help her in anyway.

Just as she about to comply, Raul pressed his hand on the cup, holding it down.

"One minute. I forgot that the doctor who has to take out your organs

isn't here yet. If your body gets cold, your organs will be worthless."

He was looking straight at Liam as he said this.

With a wry grin, he snapped his fingers.

However, no one did anything. They only looked at each other in confusion and apprehension, having no idea what their boss wanted.

Annoyed by their incompetence, Raul suddenly shot his phone at the waiter.

The waiter watched the phone coming straight at him, but he didn't have the guts to move away.

The phone hit his head hard, and instantly, blood started oozing out from the spot that was hit.

Raul glared at the hurt waiter and shouted, "You idiot! Why on earth are you standing there?"

The waiter nodded and ran out, gripped by fear to do anything else.

Five minutes later, he came back into the room with a female doctor.

The doctor was about thirty years old, but she looked much younger than that. She had a perfect body shape and kept fit. She looked even more charming and somehow innocent in her white doctor gown.

Strangely though, she was so scared that her face was pale. It was a miracle that she was standing still.

Raul looked at her with lust in his eyes and licked his lips suggestively.

He caressed his chin and observed her carefully. "You know, you look really good. I could bend you over and fuck you from behind while you operate. Oh my fucking... That is such a great idea!"

The thought of it alone

excited Raul beyond belief.

He was breathing heavily, as though it was already happening. "It will be way more exciting and fun than fucking in the corridor. Why the hell am I just thinking of this?"

Scared out of her wits, the doctor lost the feel of her legs and fell to her knees in front of him.

"Mr. Seymour, I just gave birth. I'm not good enough to have you. Please let me go," the doctor pleaded with tears in her eyes.

Annoyed by her attitude, Raul crooked a finger at her. "Crawl over here like a dog. Don't forget to bark like one too."

The doctor gulped nervously and did as told.

"Woof! Woof!"

Raul smiled, feeling rather accomplished.

When the woman got close to him, Raul held her chin and sniffed her lustfully.

He could smell the faint fragrance of perfume and a faint smell of breast milk too.

Raul bit her lower lip and whispered roughly, "You know, my favorite type of woman, is the young mother. Maybe we'll do something else. We can bring your husband and kid here to watch as I fuck you the way you deserve to be fucked."

The doctor's face paled even more. She fell flat on the floor and cried out for mercy, "Mr. Seymour, no, please. I beg of you."

Raul got impatient with her and shouted, "Will you shut it? One more sound from your mouth and I'll kill your family!"

The doctor quickly covered her mouth and stifled the voices that threatened to escape.

Her tears however, were never ending.

Everyone in the room just watched the scene without doing a thing.

They looked on with mockery and excitement, as if waiting for what was going to happen next.

They were used to these things and had come to derive pleasure from it even.

Someone suddenly clicked his tongue loudly. "Don't you think you should win me first?"

All heads snapped to the voice that just spoke. Liam!

Although his voice was rather light, his eyes were a stark contrast, full of hatred and disgust.

Chapter 248 Cheating

Raul got angrier at this. What made Liam think he could interrupt him? Raul glared at him and said in a hoarse voice, "Since you're in such a hurry to die, there's no need delaying it."

On hearing this, the sexy female dealer got more nervous. Cold sweat began to form on her forehead.

With a deep breath, she slowly opened the dice cup.

Everyone's gaze was focused on the table.

The room was so silent that they could hear each other breathing.

Finally, the cup was completely taken up and they saw two dots.

Liam smiled and said loudly, "Under 7 wins!"

His voice seemed to shake the whole room back to reality. The doctor went limp and started crying again, relieved.

Raul lit another cigar and dragged on it.

He let his gaze travel to the dealer, then called her toward him with his finger.

The sexy woman gulped and staggered over. She knew that she wouldn't have it easy.

Raul blew out the smoke in his mouth on her face and said casually, "Give me your hand."

The easiness in his voice scared her even more. Tears welled up in the lady's eyes as she held out her hand.

Raul took the cigar out of his mouth and pressed the red part of the cigar on her hand.

She quickly snapped her mouth shut and slapped her hand over her mouth.

All she wanted to do was scream out in pain, but she couldn't for fear of worsening her situation.

Raul smiled wryly and caressed her smooth cheek. "You did a good job. Go on back to your post."

No one dared to say a word for fear of offending Raul again. That was clearly a warning.

They wouldn't want to be in the female dealer's place if he lost again.

Liam clenched his fists in anger as he watched this crazy scene.

Raul was definitely a psychopath.

He was even crazier than people on the battlefield. Liam could easily place him in the top five freaks he had ever seen in his life.

Those perverts were not any different. They could kill their own family on a whim.

In that instant, Liam made up his mind. He couldn't let this man live. If he did, he would surely regret it.

Yesenia was scared out of her wits as she watched all that happened.

She had to save her skin before this went any further.

Seeing that the next game was about to start, she shouted hysterically, "Liam, you bastard, stop gambling, will you? Give the money back and kneel before Mr. Seymour and apologize. Are you looking to get me killed?"

Before Liam could answer her, Raul kicked over the table and stumped on the two dice until they were crushed.

Then he glared at Yesenia and roared, "Shut the fuck up!"

He grabbed the closest chair to him and strode towards Yesenia, his intentions pretty clear.

Yesenia dropped to her knees and cried for mercy.

"I'm sorry, Mr. Seymour. I'll shut up, I promise."

Raul bared his teeth. "I just lost and my patience is very thin. How dare you open your mouth?"

He raised the chair and was about to bring it down on Yesenia when Liam's voice stopped him.

"Mr. Seymour, we're not done yet. What's all these? Are you admitting defeat?"

Raul almost recoiled at the word.

Defeat?

He couldn't lose in his own casino. Never!

In anger, he raised the chair and smashed it into pieces just next to Yesenia.

Just to save face, Raul said, "You're right. We're not done. But this bitch should keep her mouth shut."

Some of his men surrounded Yesenia to keep her in check as Raul slapped her hard.

"Stop! Please stop!" Yesenia shouted in pain.

Her face swelled instantly, and she passed out.

Liam just watched with indifference.

The only thing that would make him intervene was if Yesenia's life was actually in danger.

After all, he had always disliked the damned woman.

They were in this mess because of her.

The only way she could change for good, was if she learned a lesson.

Raul returned to the gambling table and looked at the crushed dice.

"Oops! I guess we'll have to get new dice."

He looked at the same waiter who immediately got the message.

He nodded and ran downstairs.

Not long after, he was back with another set of dice.

The waiter glared at Liam, silently mocking him.

Yes, he blamed Liam for all that he had suffered today.

He had come with the most advanced mechanical dice. The dots could be controlled by a remote control. The waiter just couldn't wait to see Liam's downfall.

Chapter 249 Sure Win

The look in the waiter's eyes and Raul's strange discreet movements didn't go unnoticed by Liam.

After a short silence, he said, "Why don't we spice this up? I roll the dice and you guess Under or Over 7. What do you think, huh?"

Since Raul could control both dice with the remote control in his hand, he knew he was going to win and agreed easily.

After all, it was more fun when Liam struggled and still ended up failing. Even the men around started chuckling. They knew what was up and were mocking Liam.

They thought he was really stupid to challenge the owner of the casino. Like which casino owner would let themselves lose in their own turf?

Liam smiled when Raul agreed easily. Things were going just great.

He grabbed the dice cup and shook the dice in it.

However, he shook it for a much longer time than the female dealer did earlier.

Raul got impatient with the wait and was about to say something when Liam slammed the dice cup on the table with a bang.

Raul stealthily pressed the remote control in his hand, then looked at Liam as though he wasn't doing anything. "I still choose Over 7," he said and went to stand directly behind Liam, looking at the table over Liam's shoulder.

"Come on, open it already. I can't wait to see you lose and killed."

The burly men laughed at this and clapped.

They all surrounded Liam, not wanting to miss the reveal. They all held their blades in their hands, ready to take them out.

The waiter seemed to be the most excited out of them all.

He looked at Liam with resentment, a smug look on his face. He laughed so loudly, making his thoughts clear. He wanted Liam dead for presumably offending him.

Tyson looked at these people in disbelief. "Will you be quiet and wait for the result? The cup hasn't been turned yet and you're already gloating."

Raul turned and glanced at Tyson as if noticing him for the first time.

"You are indeed a loyal lackey. However, I don't like unnecessary noise, and that's exactly what you're doing.

Why don't we do this? If it is Over 7 like I say it is, you will equally die. But if not, then the remaining forty-eight rounds will automatically be taken as a win for Liam, and of course, you get to go back with the fifty million dollars. Isn't that a fair deal?"

Tyson gritted his teeth and clenched his fists to stay in control.

This was the first time someone in Salem spoke to him this way.

Tyson was so angry that he could feel his anger bubbling just under the surface.

Raul smiled cheekily at him as if he couldn't see how angry Tyson was. He didn't really care since he was certain that he was winning this round.

It was his casino after all.

If they started a fight here, Raul was bound to win, no matter the odds. At this point, everyone was looking at Liam, waiting for him to say something concerning what Raul said.

When the silence dragged on for a moment, the waiter shouted, "You bastard, what are you hesitating for? Answer! Are you fucking mute?"

Liam frowned at the disrespect. He shot the man a cold glare that would have probably killed him if looks could kill.

How could a common waiter be so bold?

The waiter felt a cold shiver course through his body when Liam looked at him. He snapped his mouth shut and looked away in fear.

Liam then looked at Raul and said, "You were mistaken. He is not a lackey, but a friend."

Even Tyson was surprised by this.

He couldn't explain how happy he felt. Honestly, he had always thought he was just a weapon or a tool for Liam.

He had no idea that Liam actually considered him a friend.

This only made Tyson more confident about the fact that he had chosen the right boss.

Raul gave out a fake gag and laughed mockingly at their display of affection.

"I really don't care if he is a friend or a lackey. I believe that means you've agreed to my suggestion. With both of your organs, I can get two million dollars. Open it already."

Liam smiled and said jokingly, "How are you so sure you'll win?"

This sent everyone into another fit of laughter.

They started talking among themselves.

"What a fool. Does he take himself for the god of gambling or what?"

"Even if the god of gambling comes to our casino, there's no way he can win. He'll lose everything."

"What are you waiting for to open the cup, bastard?"

Finally, Liam slowly opened the cup.

Unlike last time, they weren't tense or eager to know the result.

They already knew what it was going to be.

The waiter laughed and said, "You asked for this and you'll regret it. Son of a bitch! Ready to die?"

All of them burst into laughter again.

All of them but one.

Raul stood frozen behind Liam, staring hard at the dice.

Two dots and one dot. It was Under 7.

Raul stared at Liam in disbelief and hatred.

With a smile, Liam put the cup on the table and said, "I'm lucky, huh? I win!"

This stopped the laughter in the room. They all stared at the dice on the table in confusion.

The waiter was the first to break the silence. "No! You can't win! You son of a bitch! You cheated!"

Liam was generally very patient and even tempered, but this was one

too much. An ordinary man couldn't insult him so much and be free.

It was too much for him to swallow.

Very rapidly, Liam grabbed a chip on the table and shot it into the waiter's mouth, hitting him square on the teeth. "Ahh!" the waiter screamed as two front teeth with blood fell to the floor with a sharp sound.

Startled, all the burly men looked at him in shock.

Liam, who was very thin, now looked so horrifying.

Liam then gave Raul a cold stare and said, "Your own lackey is rather very noisy. I had to help you keep him in control."

Liam looked so calm and composed, as though he had everything under control and nothing to worry about.

Chapter 250 Mechanical Dice

Blood oozed out from the waiter's hand as he clutched his mouth.

He cursed and twisted his face in anger. "You're a son of a bitch! How could you hit me? Boss, chop off his limbs and make him a beggar!"

Slap!

Suddenly, Raul's hand flew up and landed on the waiter's face with a loud slap.

He seized the waiter's collar and slammed him onto the table. "What the hell. Can't you see the number of dots on the dice?" Raul roared.

The waiter gawked at the dice, his eyes wide with disbelief. "This can't be happening! It's impossible! I set this pair of dice myself. They are mechanical dice, and we control them. How could we lose?!" he exclaimed.

Then an idea popped up in his mind and he turned to look at Raul. "Boss, the remote control is in your hand. Did you press it incorrectly?" he asked.

The countenance of the burly men around them changed and they all stepped back as soon as they heard that.

The waiter realized he made a mistake and quickly changed his tune. "Boss, I'm sorry. I didn't mean that..." he stammered.

Raul ignored the waiter's apology and slowly walked to his desk with his head lowered.

Abruptly, he grabbed a bottle of whiskey from the desk and spun around. He then smashed it over the waiter's head with a loud thud.

Bang!

The bottle shattered, and glass shards scattered across the floor.

The waiter had a gaping wound at the back of his head. Blood mixed with wine flowed all over the floor.

He clutched his head and screamed, "Ahh...I'm dead. My head is broken. I'm going to die..."

Raul seized the waiter's neck, snatched the broken bottle, and plunged

it deep into the waiter's stomach.

"Ah!!! Ah!!!"

The waiter shrieked in agony and collapsed onto the floor, writhing in pain.

Bang!

Without any hesitation, Raul smashed the bottle heavily on the waiter's body. His eyes glinted with ferocity as he snarled, "You incompetent idiot! How dare you question me? You can't even handle a simple task properly."

Liam couldn't stand it anymore. He scowled and spoke up in a forceful tone. "Enough! Can I take her away now?"

Suddenly, all eyes were on Liam, and there was a deafening silence in the room.

Someone really dared to defy Raul?

Wasn't he scared of the consequences?

Raul lifted his head and fixed his bloodshot gaze on Liam. His expression changed constantly.

Despite Raul's intimidating presence, Liam stood firm like an unyielding tree. He stared back at him with an unwavering gaze and their eyes locked onto each other.

Both men held each other's gaze for what seemed like an eternity.

Raul broke eye contact and waved his hand.

Immediately, one of his henchmen grabbed Yesenia and threw her aside like a piece of trash, landing her right next to Liam.

Raul couldn't contain his impatience as he stared eagerly at Liam. His eyes were wild with madness as he spoke. "Listen, I run a casino, and the gambling contract means everything to me. I lost, so you don't owe me fifty million dollars, and I'll let this woman go. But you have to gamble with me again!"

To Raul, fifty million dollars was peanuts.

Winning or losing was what mattered to him.

He couldn't bear the thought of losing. He was like one of those crazy gamblers who would stop at nothing to get their fix.

He craved the rush of winning and was determined to turn the tables.

Liam saw the desperation in Raul's eyes. Turning to Tyson, he said, "Take her away."

Tyson gave Liam a solemn nod and helped Yesenia to her feet. They left the room, leaving Liam alone with Raul.

Liam watched them go, then he turned around and returned to the gambling table.

Placing his hands on the table, Raul leaned in with a sly smile on his face, and asked, "How did you do it?"

Liam smiled back at Raul but said nothing.

Raul smacked his lips and gave up on questioning Liam.

He got up and made his way quickly to the desk.

Whoosh!

Raul opened the drawer and pulled out a shiny silver revolver.

The sight of it reignited his excitement.

He hummed an unexplainable tune, sauntering over to the gambling table like a dancer.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Raul emptied all the bullets onto the table. He twirled his fingers over the five bullets before finally selecting one.

With a crazed grin on his face, he placed the chosen bullet back into the revolver with delight.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Raul spun the cylinder multiple times, causing the bullet to shuffle around erratically.

The madness in Raul's eyes only intensified.

He slammed the revolver onto the table, staring at Liam with a twisted grin on his face. "Let's change things up. How about we gamble with our lives?"

Raul's grin widened as he searched for even the slightest hint of fear on Liam's face.

But to his disappointment, there was none.

Liam looked at the revolver on the table and said nonchalantly, "Russian roulette, a game of life and death. Alright! But first, I have a question for you. Who asked you to do all this?"

Raul averted his eyes, feeling disheartened, and snorted in response. "You'll find out once you win!"

The people present looked at each other, fear etched onto their faces.

Were they seriously considering tempting fate like this?

It was insane!

Liam's eyes drifted to the revolver sitting on the table. He immediately recognized it as a Ruger SP101. That revolver could only hold five bullets. That meant that they could determine the winner after playing just two rounds at most.

Raul snatched the revolver off the table and gave a sinister grin. "I'll go first," he said.

He lifted the gun and pressed it to his temple and a wicked smile spread across his face.

Everyone in the room held their breath.

Their hearts pounded with anxiety.

Click!

Raul pulled the trigger.

It produced a rattling empty sound.

Staring at Raul, Liam clearly sensed that his originally tense body suddenly relaxed.

Liam couldn't help but sneer. "Looks like you're not as crazy as you appear to be."

Raul took a couple of deep breaths and handed the revolver over to Liam, clapping his hands excitedly.

With a mischievous glint in his eyes, he said, "It's your turn. Don't be shy!"

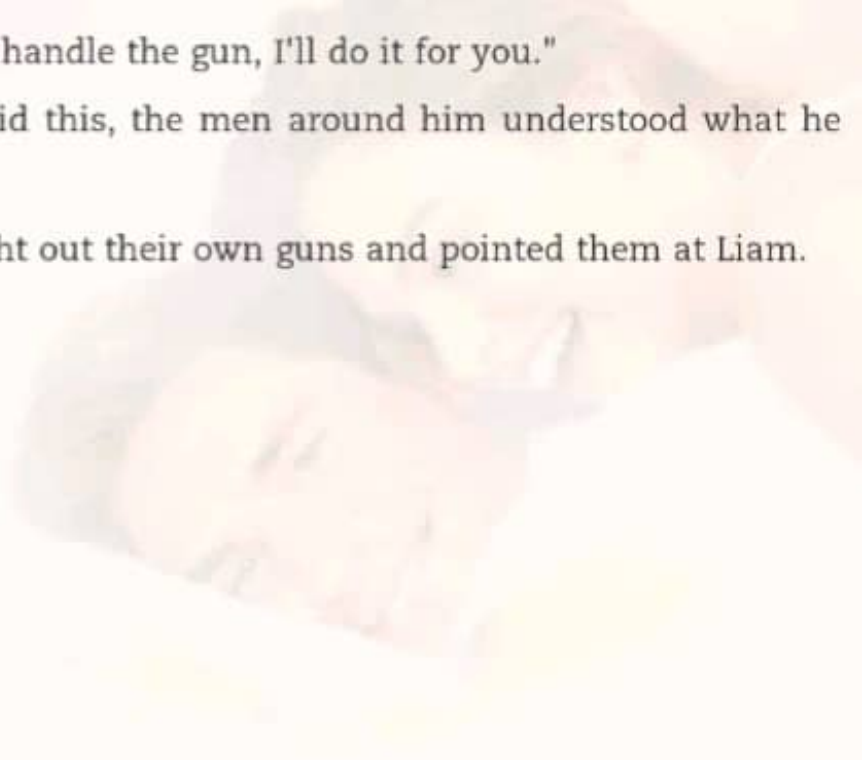
Liam took the revolver and weighed it in his hand. A smile formed at the corners of his mouth.

Raul's expression darkened as he saw this. "What's the matter? You

chicken? If you can't handle the gun, I'll do it for you."

Immediately Raul said this, the men around him understood what he implied.

They instantly brought out their own guns and pointed them at Liam.



Chapter 251 Russian Roulette

"No, I can do it myself." With a mocking smile, Liam raised the revolver and pointed it toward his temple.

Click!

The trigger was pulled, yet it was an empty round.

Raul sneered and waved at the people behind him.

These people were taken by surprise, for never in their wildest dreams would they expect someone to pull a trigger on themselves.

They were both nuts!

Glaring at Liam, they tucked away their guns.

Raul beckoned Liam to hand him the revolver.

However, Liam wasn't done yet. He still had the revolver pointed toward him.

The crowd was confused by his actions.

Raul started to mock him, "What are you doing? Are you scared stiff? Hand me that revolver now!"

However, Liam remained silent and stared at Raul.

Click!

Click! Came two sounds.

Liam pulled the trigger twice in a row!

Everybody gasped at the scene before them, while thinking that Liam had gone completely crazy.

Why wasn't he afraid of death?

With a faint smile, Liam raised the revolver and aimed it at Raul!

For a moment, everyone was shocked!

Yanking their guns out in a hurry, they quickly took aim at Liam and roared, "Put it down!"

If you hurt a single hair on him, we will take you down!"

Raul stared at Liam with bloodshot eyes. Yet he kept his silence.

The tense atmosphere within that small space was becoming insufferable!

At the moment, their foreheads were beaded with sweats.

Under everyone's gaze, Liam smiled faintly, raised the revolver and pointed it toward the ceiling.

Following that, the trigger was pulled.

Bang!

This time, a bullet was fired.

Crash!

The huge crystal chandelier that was dangling from the ceiling started to sway. Soon after that, it came crashing down on the table.

Wisps of smoke were seen emitting from the end of the revolver.

Looking at the stunned people in front of him, Liam smiled faintly.

Seemingly possessing superhuman powers, he proceeded to disassemble the revolver at lightning speed.

Clang! Clang! Clang.

The parts fell to the floor.

Everybody's jaws dropped as they rubbed their eyes in disbelief.

They couldn't believe that a ruthless madman such as him existed in this world.

Raul could never hold a candle to him.

After witnessing those frightening scenes, Raul was shaken to his core.

His mocking expression turned to fear as he eyed Liam cautiously.

This was the first time he admired a person wholeheartedly.

Raul sighed and said, "I lost. I'm glad to meet an opponent like you while I'm still alive. No wonder Tyler thinks highly of you!"

The meaning of his sentence was obvious.

Obviously, Tyler had planned this whole thing!

Following that, Raul stood up and took a few steps backward.

It wasn't until he was within the safety of the crowd that he turned around and spat, "Unfortunately, anybody who offends you would meet a terrible end. So, you must die today!"

With that, everyone raised their guns again!

However, Liam was faster than them!

His hands moved at lightning speed as he threw the chips out like they were bullets.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Blood started to splatter.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Everyone came to their senses and started to shoot at Liam without mercy!

Liam quickly hunkered down and dove under the table to avoid the bullets.

Following that, he grabbed the corner of the table.

To everyone's surprise, Liam managed to raise the gambling table, which originally needed four people to move it, high above his head.

Then, he threw the table toward the crowd. All of them were knocked down by the table like they were mere bowling pins.

In less than a minute, Liam's enemies were defeated.

For a moment, the room was filled with howls of pain.

Some saber-wielding thugs who were standing in the corner stood rooted to the spot with a stunned look on their faces. It was as if they had seen a ghost.

Was Liam even human?

Raul didn't expect that things would turn out like this!

He was indeed a madman, but it wasn't because of pure stupidity that he was acting the way he did; instead that was because he had actual powers!

Raul staggered back and shouted, "Damn it! Call for backup! Whoever kills him will be rewarded with one million dollars!"

Chapter 252 Undeniable Weight Of Authority

Raul's voice boomed through the room, causing a group of burly men to burst through the door in an instant.

They all appeared strong. Their fierce demeanor and murderous gazes were enough to make anyone tremble.

Without hesitation, they closed in on Liam, surrounding him from all sides.

Raul's face lit up with a sense of security when he saw these people. He let out a booming laugh. "You think you can come into my territory and cause trouble? You're as good as dead!"

Liam remained unfazed. His playful expression irritated Raul even more. "You can't kill me, but I can certainly kill you," he quipped.

He was so arrogant!

The arrogance displayed by Liam never ceased to grate on Raul's nerves. His fury rose to a boiling point. ④

He stretched his neck, bellowing, "Fuck you! Cut off his limbs and feed them to my dogs!"

The dogs, already whipped into a frenzy, began to bark and howl, their eyes fixated hungrily on Liam.

The mere thought of ripping him apart and devouring his flesh made their mouths water with anticipation.

But Raul's threats fell on deaf ears, much to his frustration.

Suddenly, the group of men turned their heads towards Raul.

This left the room deadly silent.

Confused by their sudden change, Raul barked out in anger, "Are you idiots deaf? Kill this bastard!"

His subordinates swallowed nervously and spoke in trembling voices. "Boss, we don't think these men belong to the casino..."

What?

Raul's eyes widened at the realization.

Liam let out a faint smile as he confirmed Raul's suspicions.

"Yes, they're my people."

In an instant, the strong men surrounding Liam opened his collar and revealed the standard T-shirt of the Axe Gang.

They all shook their hands, and micro axes slid from their sleeves into their palms.

These were no ordinary men, but the security guards of Axe Security! Raul's men were left stunned!

They were unsure of what to do next. The gunners who had been lying on the floor in fear, scrambled to their feet and huddled together in a corner.

It was evident that Raul had made a grave mistake by crossing paths with a powerful figure, but his anger blinded him to this fact.

Fear was evident in his eyes but he wouldn't back down. He kicked his men hard and bellowed, "Get up! Fight! Kill them all!"

Despite his threats, Liam's terrifying skills had already shaken the courage of Raul's men. They looked at Liam with fear in their eyes and dared not make a move.

Standing tall in the middle of the office, Liam exuded a sacred aura like a domineering king.

He looked down at the group of trembling men and said coldly, "Kneel down or die!"

His voice was commanding.

Those men felt a chill run down their spines upon hearing Liam's voice. They glanced at each other and hastily tossed away the knives clutched in their hands.

Some hung their heads low in despair, while others dropped to their knees with their hands shielding their heads. They all felt utterly hopeless.

The once chaotic scene became silent in an instant.

Raul was taken aback by the unexpected loss he suffered in his own territory.

His eyes were bloodshot and his face twisted in rage. "Get up, you losers!"

However, his voice had already lost its authority.

The number of people kneeling only grew by the second.

Raul's anger boiled over, and he resorted to biting his thumb hard.

Blood was all over his mouth as he screamed, "I'll pay ten million dollars to whoever can kill this bitch in front of me!"

"Kneel down!" Liam's brows furrowed, and he shouted once more.

The members of the Axe Gang joined forces in a thunderous roar, "Kneel down!"

A booming sound filled the air, echoing throughout the room.

Raul's face contorted in fury, and the veins on his temples bulged. He fixed Liam with a piercing glare, his bloodshot eyes blazing. "I'll never kneel down. I'd rather die! Coward, if you have the guts, just kill me!"

"It's very easy to die," Liam responded with a cold smile and flicked two chips in Raul's direction.

The chips flew like bullets, striking Raul's knees with deadly precision. The impact caused dark red blood to gush out, staining Raul's trousers. Despite his legs trembling and his hands clutching the wall for support, Raul refused to back down.

He gritted his teeth and bellowed, "I will never kneel down!"

The exertion caused his teeth to bleed, but he remained steadfast in his resolve.

Liam was taken aback by Raul's unwavering determination. He couldn't help feeling a hint of admiration for his integrity.

But he knew that they were enemies.

They were fated to battle it out.

The people parted like the Red Sea, creating a path for Liam to approach Raul. With measured steps, Liam walked towards Raul and placed his hand on his shoulder, applying pressure.

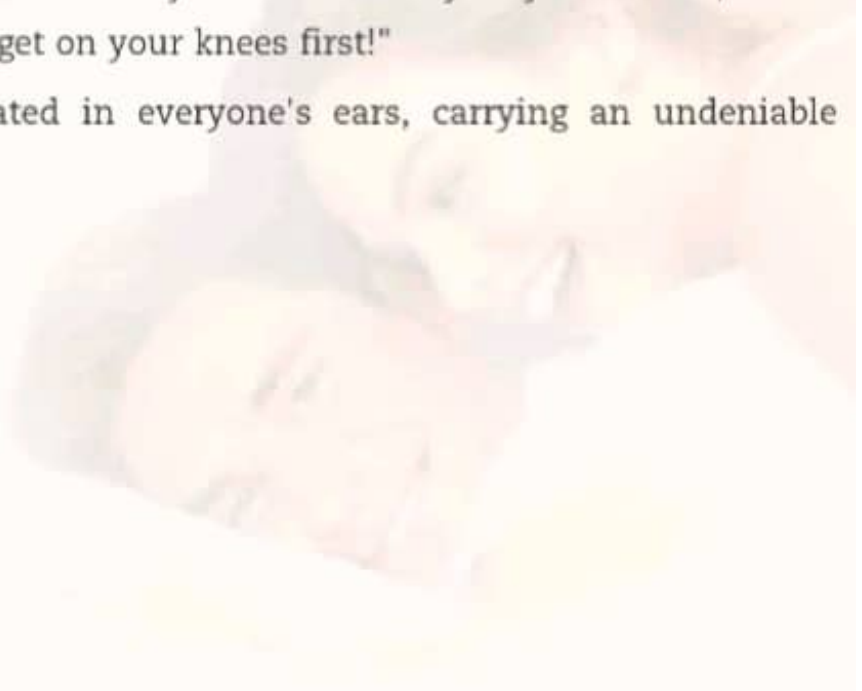
Suddenly, Raul's legs buckled and his knees hit the floor!

"Ah!!! Ah!" He let out a bloodcurdling scream.

Liam's voice rang out, cool and commanding. "I have a particular quirk,

just like you. I don't tolerate anyone who disobeys my orders. So, before you die, you have to get on your knees first!"

The words reverberated in everyone's ears, carrying an undeniable weight of authority.



Chapter 253 Destroying The Seymour Family

Raul gritted his teeth and more blood oozed from his mouth.

At this instant, his body surged with madness.

He trembled violently, rising to his feet with the intention of striking Liam.

Liam scowled, promptly lifting his foot and stomping down hard on Raul's back, pinning him to the floor.

Raul felt the weight of the world on him and his head slammed into the floor with a sickening thud.

His teeth cracked and his mouth was filled with blood.

"Ah!" The female doctor couldn't help but scream in horror at the gruesome sight.

Liam turned to her and said lightly, "Keep your mouth shut about what you've seen here today."

After he said that, he waved his hand, and two men from Axe Gang moved to escort the woman out.

She never thought she'd make it out alive.

Tears welled up in her eyes, but this time, they were tears of joy.

"Thank you, thank you so much!" the woman doctor exclaimed, gazing at Liam with admiration.

From start to finish, Liam's actions had captured her heart.

Regrettably, she was married, and Liam was an unreachable person she could only admire from afar.

Just then, Tyson strode in from the outside. He turned to Liam and said politely, "She has been taken to the hospital and is now receiving treatment."

"Okay," Liam responded. He turned to Raul, his voice cold and detached.

"You've just lost your life to me. But I'll give you a chance to buy it back."

With that, he pulled out his phone and quickly pulled up some photos of the illegal clinic. "Raul, do you know this place?" he asked.

Raul, lying on the floor, didn't even bother looking at the pictures. His face twisted with rage as he spat, "You son of a bitch. If you lay a finger on me, the Seymour family will make your life a hell!"

Tyson sneered at the empty threat. "Ha! The Seymour family? Mr. Hoffman isn't afraid of them."

Raul was skeptical of Tyson's words. After all, the Seymour family wielded a lot of power in Salem.

Before Raul had decided to deal with Liam, he had asked Tyler about him. According to Tyler, Liam was just a loser who had been kicked out of his family.

Raul thought of him as someone with no real power or influence.

Seeing that Raul was still refusing to give up, Liam said nothing more.

He raised his foot and kicked Raul to the floor.

He then paid no attention to Raul, who lay there moaning in pain. He turned around and sat on the chair behind the desk. He then took out a bottle of red wine.

Liam poured himself a glass of wine. He swirled the glass, taking a deep sniff before speaking. "This Lafite was made in Bordeaux in 1982 and is the highest quality wine in the winery. It's a shame that your character is so rotten."

"Bah!"

Raul spat out a mouthful of blood and grinned wickedly, displaying a set of bloody teeth. "You think you know anything about wine, you son of a bitch? I'm going to pretend I gave this wine to the dog."

Liam remained unfazed by Raul's continuous swearing. Without a hint of emotion, he sent photos from his phone to Tyson and ordered, "Find out if Raul has any connections to these people. If he does, dig deep. If not, gather evidence of his recent crimes and throw him in jail!"

Liam gently dropped the glass on the desk, stood up and strolled out of the room.

Witnessing Liam's departure, Raul burst out into laughter, exuding extreme arrogance.

As Liam paused and glanced at Raul, who appeared crazed in front of

him, he asked nonchalantly, "What's so funny?"

Raul sneered and made a sarcastic remark. "Will the members of the Seymour family be thrown in jail? You ignorant bastard! You believed you were invincible with the Axe Gang's help. If you don't have the guts to kill me now, I'll make sure to annihilate your entire family!"

Liam's mind flashed back to Julie's pathetic state as soon as he heard Raul's threat to destroy his entire family.

Liam had sworn that no one would ever harm Julie again.

The mere thought of Julie being in danger made Liam absolutely furious, as she was his Achilles' heel.

Liam's expression instantly turned icy, and without glancing back, he strode forward and declared, "I don't ever want to see him in Salem."

"Yes, Mr. Hoffman," Tyson responded politely. He looked at Raul with a malicious grin and snarled, "You have no clue who Mr. Hoffman really is! How dare you insult him repeatedly? I've been resenting you!"

Bang!

The door slammed shut, and the room was filled with Raul's maniacal laughter and screams.

"Ha ha ha, Liam, you bastard, the Seymour family will surely make your life a living hell! I'll be waiting for you in hell!"

Liam's eyes remained frigid and unyielding in the hallway.

Both Ajax and Raul were nothing but scoundrels.

The sordid business dealings of the Seymour family were on full display. Every penny they made was probably blood stained.

Liam sneered derisively and declared, "It's so filthy. It's time for it to be cleaned up!"

Before Liam took down the Riley family, he had no qualms about taking out the Seymour family first.

Chapter 254 Yesenia Gave In

Liam went back downstairs and found the casino that was bustling not long ago empty now.

He rolled his eyes, went out and into his car.

Before starting the car, he called Theo. "I need some information on the Seymour and Riley families."

"I'll get back to you with that in an hour, Mr. Hoffman," Theo said respectfully at the other end of the line.

Liam hung up and stepped on the gas. In no time, he was parking in front of the Furi Hospital.

He strode in and walked straight for Julie's ward.

Now that he had solved the problem for the Fiber family, Yesenia should have learned her lesson and gotten back to earth.

At least that was what he thought would happen until he stopped in front of Julie's ward and heard Yesenia cursing him.

"If that bastard had just given the fifty million instead of gambling with his life, I would have been released earlier.

But no! Because of him, those people hit me and I got the scare of my life from those dogs. I know his life is useless and means nothing to anyone, but not mine. I'm very precious. Julie, I'm going to warn you for the last time. You and that Liam bastard will never be together. From now on, I forbid you from contacting that idiot!"

Julie looked at her mother with tear-filled eyes. How could she be so unreasonable?

She was back safely and cursing Liam. But where was he?

Was he still in danger in that casino?

She glared at her mother and said stubbornly, "Mom, you are the one that made us almost lose fifty million dollars. Liam saved you and the money. Yet, you're here cursing him. What has gotten into you?"

Yesenia sneered and shouted angrily, "Saved me? I didn't need him to save me. All he had to do was give them the money, and I would have

been free. They would have never laid their hands on me this much. You know what? I don't care about anything you're going to say in his defence. It's either you stop talking to him, or I drive you out of the house!"

Julie was stunned. She had no idea her mother would go to such lengths, and for what?

She couldn't stop herself as tears rolled down her cheeks.

"Mom, you're horrible! How can you do this to me?"

Julie had been the most filial daughter ever. She always did what her mother asked her to do, no matter how crazy it was.

No one could have thought a day like this would come when Julie would disobey her mother because of a man.

In exaggerated despair, Yesenia fell to the floor and cried out, "After raising you for thirty years, this is what I get? You choose a man over me? I don't want to live anymore if this is what life has in store for me. Just let me die!"

Julie closed her eyes in exasperation and turned her head away. She didn't have the energy to deal with her mother.

Yesenia kept crying, expecting someone to hold her up or comfort her, but no one came.

Still crying, she opened her eyes slightly and looked at Julie and Ulises who seemed to be unmoved.

Before, all she had to do was let out a small complain and they would come running to her.

She had always been like the princess of the family, always being served and getting what she wanted. ①

But now, it seemed that she had lost that. She was not as loved as she used to be.

She glared at Ulises, furious.

Then she stood up and shouted at him, "You old loser. Won't you say anything? Don't you see how badly your wife has been beaten? Won't you do anything? After this, you still want your daughter to be with the bastard that made this happen to me? You coward! You're always

staying silent and doing nothing. And you think you're a man? I can't take this anymore. Let's divorce!"

Without any warning, Ulises raised his hand and slapped Yesenia hard across the face.

The five prints of his fingers were red on her face that was covered in gauze.

Yesenia held her cheek and looked at her husband in disbelief. "You hit me?"

"I've had it up to here with your nonsense!" Ulises shouted. "You're always making trouble out of nothing.

If Liam hadn't risked his life to save you today, you would have never made it out of there alive. Not only has he saved you, but he's in danger now and the best you can do is insult him? Without Liam, we would have gone bankrupt. How do you think we're able to pay such a good hospital? You want to divorce? Then let's divorce! The worst thing I did in my life was marry a woman like you. I'm with you on this one. It's about time we ended this farce of a marriage!"

Ulises finished and walked out of the room without looking back.

As soon as he opened the door, he found Liam standing on the other side.

Ulises looked at Liam with so much emotion in his eyes. "I'm glad that you came back safe. Let's go outside and talk." His voice broke.

He held Liam's arm and they walked outside.

Julie was extremely disappointed with her mother, but that didn't mean she wanted to see her parents' marriage turn to ruins.

Julie looked at her mother with a frown and said, "Mom, go after Dad. You should apologize to him now."

Yesenia herself was very scared after seeing how serious Ulises was earlier.

She had always used divorce to threaten him, and each time, he came running to her and begging her to change her mind. Of course, she always played hard to get and even bullied him.

This time though, he agreed so resolutely and even slapped her.

Something he had never done before.

She didn't think anyone knew Ulises more than she did in this world.

And clearly, there was no trace of doubt in his tone earlier.

However, Yesenia was too used to being spoiled. She couldn't apologize.

Yesenia wiped her tears and crossed her arms over her chest stubbornly.

"Why should I apologize? We can divorce since that's what he wants."

Julie knew her mother, and she knew that only a drastic method could make her mom apologize.

So she said firmly, "If you don't do as I say, I won't recognize you as my mother anymore."

Yesenia's face paled.

The Beauty Cosmetics Company had just received fifty million dollars from the Rinku Group and it was rapidly growing.

If she divorced Ulises and her daughter didn't recognize her, her life would be horrible.

She wouldn't live a luxurious life anymore.

So Yesenia comforted herself with the thought that she wasn't giving in and she was only doing it for the type of life she wanted to keep living.

With this in mind, Yesenia looked at her daughter and promised, "I was so angry that I couldn't control myself. I will go after your father now and apologize."

She turned and started walking out when Julie said from behind, "You must apologize to Liam too."

Yesenia stiffened slightly, but she told herself the same thing like a mantra. It was just for the life she wanted.

Liam was a loser. She couldn't apologize to him. That would be hilarious.

Instead, she was going to find a rich young man for Julie to make her life even better.

Julie might hate her now, but she would understand in the future and thank her.

Yesenia nodded and left the ward. Of course, she wasn't going to apologize to them. 🌀

Chapter 255 Information About The Seymour Family

Ulises and Liam strolled together on the hospital's lush green lawn.

Ulises' eyes were red and puffy as he let out a heavy sigh. "Liam, I'm sorry about Yesenia. Please don't let her ruin your relationship with Julie."

Even though the two hadn't known each other for a long time, Ulises knew that Liam was a responsible and good man, someone who Julie, his daughter could trust for a lifetime.

"No, she won't," Liam replied, shaking his head. He then asked, "So, are you really going to get a divorce?"

Ulises pulled out a cigarette and lit it. After taking a deep drag, he replied, "I was just angry earlier, and I spoke without thinking. Yesenia and I met in college, and we've been through a lot together. She's done so much for me, and she even had a falling out with the Cortez family for my sake. It's all my fault things have gotten to this point. I'm useless and can't give her the life she desires."

As Ulises spoke, Liam could feel the weight of their shared history.

Although they had different opinions, they had a deep bond and had been through thick and thin together.

Liam spoke with empathy. "Julie surely doesn't want you both to separate, and I hope both of you can give us your blessings for our marriage."

Ulises nodded with a heavy heart, trying to force a smile. "If Yesenia comes to apologize, I won't go through with the divorce," he said in a low voice.

He put out his cigarette and turned to Liam. "I need some time alone. You go spend some time with Julie. She's worried about you too."

Liam nodded helplessly and left Ulises to meet Julie.

He knew that this was something between Ulises and Yesenia, and there was little he and Julie could do to help.

As soon as Liam entered the ward, he saw Julie's red eyes.

His heart ached as he walked over and held her in his arms, comforting her. "Don't cry, silly girl. I'm here," he said soothingly.

Julie couldn't hold back her tears and began crying again.

She sobbed as she said, "My mother was not like this before. She used to love me so much. Why is she being so unreasonable now?"

Liam gently patted her back, comforting her. "We don't always get to choose everything in life. Trust me, I'll make your mother accept me," he assured her.

Julie nodded and looked up at Liam with tearful eyes.

"I'm sorry, Liam. My mother's behavior was wrong, but she's still my mother. I can't just disown her. Please don't be mad at her, okay?" she said in a sobbing tone.

"It's okay, I'm not angry," Liam comforted Julie as he patted her back gently.

Gradually, Julie stopped crying.

She fell asleep as her breathing became even.

Liam carefully put her back on the bed, covered her with the quilt and wiped the tears from her eyes. He felt sorry for Julie.

He knew that it wasn't her fault but the fault of those who wanted to harm her. He vowed to himself that he would do everything in his power to remove all the obstacles in her life and ensure that she lived happily.

Liam stood up and walked out of the ward.

As he stepped outside, he got an email notification.

It was a document that had detailed information about the Seymour family.

He had asked Theo to investigate them earlier today, and he didn't expect to receive such detailed information so quickly.

He quickly made his way to the director's office, opened the computer, logged into his email and browsed through the document.

Liam's mind worked like a charm again, as a huge amount of information got imprinted in his brain.

Once he finished going through all the materials, he promptly deleted the document from his mailbox.

After reading through everything, he sat back in his chair staring at the computer screen for a long while, lost in thought.

The Seymour family made Liam feel disgusted to his core!

On the outside, they ran hotels but their nefarious activities were downright terrifying. The casino incident was only the tip of the iceberg. The Seymour family were engaged in human trafficking, organ transplantation business, and had deep connections with the Acosta family in Salem.

He even came across mentions of the Riley family and Tyler in the document.

It was unbelievable that three of the top ten clans in Salem were conspiring with each other in illegal businesses!

The thought of human trafficking and illegal clinic flooded Liam's mind, and he couldn't help but connect the dots.

He had a gut feeling, but he couldn't quite put his finger on it.

With a cold glare in his eyes, Liam muttered, "Tyler, if you're involved in all of this, don't blame me for what's about to happen!"

He left the hospital in his car and headed to the Royal Hotel.

According to the intel provided by Theo, the Riley and Lambert families were planning to hold a family dinner at the Royal Hotel today!

Chapter 256 Royal Hotel

The open-air parking lot located outside the Royal Hotel was currently packed with luxury cars, and one could scarcely find a vehicle there that cost less than one million dollars.

For as long as anyone could remember, the Royal Hotel had always been the social epicentre of Salem's elites.

Every local of Salem would dream to apply for membership here!

Additionally, the Royal Hotel's backer was one of Salem's top ten wealthiest families.

Liam stared at the luxurious hotel and scoffed to himself.

Before, at Vera's birthday party, Tyler and the members of five other prominent families residing in Salem had worked together to drive him away.

Liam could still remember their haughty demeanor as they willfully humiliated him.

It seemed as if they took pleasure in the suffering of him.

If he were not the heir of the Hoffman family, he would have died at Ninverton.

Liam had just parked his car and was entering the hotel when he was stopped by a security guard.

The security guard appeared intimidating due to his stature and muscular build.

His eyes were filled with scorn as he inspected Liam's outfit from top to bottom.

"I'm sorry, but we operate on a membership basis here, and this is no run-of-the-mill hotel. Go and find a more affordable hotel elsewhere."

Liam snapped his cold gaze at the security guard, surprised and disgusted by his condescending attitude.

He scowled and snarled, "Get out of my way. I'm looking for someone."

The security guard's expression turned savage at Liam's insolence, and he bellowed, "How dare you tell me what to do? Someone like you has

no business causing trouble here."

After saying that, he reached down to his waist and whacked Liam on the head with a baton.

With a frigid snort, Liam surged forward.

Stiffening his fingers, he prodded the man's shoulder blade with deadly accuracy.

A loud snap reverberated around the area.

As his shoulder dislocated, the security guard's arm fell limp at his side.

"Ow! What the fuck?!"

The security guard screamed in pain. With his face flushed with anger, he roared, "How dare you hit me, you bastard? I'll have you know that I'm from Axe Security! You're going to regret this!"

Using his other hand, he pressed a button on his walkie-talkie. "Come here. There's a troublemaker here at the entrance."

Ignoring the security guard's words, Liam walked right in.

As he headed to the Emperor Banquet Hall on the third floor, he wondered how the Rileys and the Lamberts would react when they saw him.

Meanwhile, in the Emperor Banquet Hall, the members of both the Riley and Lambert families sat at a massive round table.

With a laudatory expression on her face, Vera approached Cartwright and raised the glass of wine she was holding. "Mr. Riley, I'd like to propose a toast to you."

She then tilted her head back and took a swig.

"Sure." Cartwright took a sip of the wine and grinned at Vera.

Vera was older than Cartwright, and it was really rude of him to act in such a manner.

No one, however, dared to confront him about it. They simply turned a blind eye to him.

After all, they were on completely different social tiers from him.

Vera immediately realized what Cartwright wanted when she noticed him staring at Isabella.

She fixed her posture and turned to Isabella. "Isabella, come here and drink with Mr. Riley."

When her grandmother winked at her, realization dawned on Isabella. She was looking her best in a long dress with a V-neck today.

Isabella approached Cartwright with a bashful smile and a wiggle of her slender waist, saying, "Cheers, Mr. Riley."

This time, Cartwright's demeanour changed completely.

He replied enthusiastically, "Cheers!"

With that, Cartwright clinked their glasses together and drank everything in his glass. He then shot an earnest gaze at Isabella.

"Great." Isabella grinned. She drank and consciously straightened her chest to accentuate her large bust.

Cartwright beamed at her. Donning a teasing smile, he asked, "Isabella, what do you usually eat? You have such a great figure."

Then, his eyes landed on her chest, unable to help himself.

"What's with you, Mr. Riley? I don't want to talk to you anymore!"

Isabella covered her chest, gave the man a bashful glare, and returned to her seat.

Instead of becoming enraged, Cartwright burst out laughing.

None of the people present were particularly dimwitted, so they all noticed Cartwright's interest in Isabella.

William's enthusiasm increased.

He flashed Cartwright a smile as he walked up to the other man.

While pretending to clink glasses with Cartwright, he whispered, "I'm very strict with my daughter. As of right now, no man has touched her."

At once, Cartwright realized that Isabella was still a virgin.

His eyes lit up, and his face flushed with excitement. "Can you tell me Isabella's major in college?"

Vera, who had been quiet for a while, chimed in, "She has a degree in broadcasting. Right now, she has millions of followers on TikTok. She's basically an internet celebrity,"

When Cartwright heard that, his desire for Isabella intensified, and he

eagerly suggested, "I should make Isabella the head of the Riley Group's publicity team. I'll pay her one hundred thousand dollars per month if she agrees."

Suddenly, Isabella quickly got to her feet. Apparently, she heard his words. "Thank you, Mr. Riley! You're the best!"

With that, the pleasant mood spread across the Emperor Banquet Hall. Everyone toasted to each other once more. Then, Cartwright hesitated before he spoke up. "So, I heard Liam stayed in your house for three years. Is that true?"

In an instant, the formerly buoyant atmosphere grew tense.

Chapter 257 Liam's Appearance

As soon as Vera heard Liam's name, her face darkened. "That bastard! We provided for him the best way we could. He was a slave who served tea, poured us water and cooked for us. He may have lived in our house, but he was never considered a member of the Lambert family."

The others quickly agreed with her. They definitely wanted nothing to do with Liam. Especially in a situation like this.

"That bastard has nothing to do with us."

"He is just a stupid man who lived his best three years in our house."

They all insulted and denigrated Liam as much as they could. They all knew the enmity that existed between Tyler and Liam, and no one wanted to be against Tyler.

Cartwright was happy with what he was hearing, and his small nod of satisfaction made them understand this.

"Actually, Liam is also a talent. He established an App named Funbuy which has taken up a majority of Rileymart's market. I will invite him to Tyler's wedding in one month and have a talk with him."

Cartwright's words put the Lambert family in a lot of doubt and uncertainty. It was difficult to see exactly what Cartwright thought of Liam.

After a short moment of silence, Vera decided to go with her instinct and said hatefully, "That damn bastard! How dare he use Funbuy to occupy the market and overthrow your App? Leave it to me. I'll make him regret it on the wedding day."

As if on cue, the door was suddenly pushed open from outside and in came Liam with a cold expression on his face.

"Thank you very much for your praise, Mr. Riley. I appreciate it," he said calmly as he walked towards them.

Everyone looked at the newcomer in shock.

What the hell was Liam doing here?

William saw this as an opportunity to please Cartwright more and gain

his favour. So, he glared at Liam and shouted, "Liam, what do you think you're doing here?"

His voice seemed to wake the rest of the Lambert family from their daze.

"You son of a bitch! Who said you could come to the Emperor Banquet Hall? Get out!"

"You loser! If you're here to beg us to take you back, you're wasting your time."

"Just get out! I suddenly can't breathe after you polluted the atmosphere with your presence."

Everyone from the Lambert family spoke, but for Isabella and Yolanda who stared at Liam intensely, both having different thoughts in their minds.

Isabella suddenly felt disgusted with herself for trying to curry favour with Cartwright earlier.

Unlike Cartwright, Liam was handsome, well-dressed and could easily turn her on. What was more, she would love it!

She couldn't help but admire how handsome Liam was. Now that she was a rich woman with a salary of one hundred thousand dollars per month, she could have him as her secret lover. Why wouldn't she try it?

Yolanda on her part, felt like she was on ecstasy. Maybe Liam came to put a stop to her marriage to Tyler. If she thought right, then... Liam still loved her, right? ①

Yolanda felt more conflicted than at peace with this thought.

It made her happy to think that he was really here for her, but it also broke her.

She would love to be with him, but she absolutely needed to marry into a rich family. She couldn't go with him in front of so many people. "Shit!" she cursed under her breath.

Tyler, on the other hand, knew exactly how he felt at the moment.

He looked down at his feet, feeling nervous and guilty.

Was this just a coincidence?

Right after he set up a trap for Yesenia using gamble, Liam was here?

The only thing Cartwright cared about at the moment, was the feast of

the Riley and Lambert families. He couldn't let Liam destroy it.

It was a shock to everyone when the ever dignified and composed Cartwright took on a fierce aura.

Cartwright looked Liam up and down with a frown. "You have nothing doing here. Get out before I get angry!"

Once again, Liam faced all the hostility with indifference.

He walked straight to Tyler and asked, "Where is Tami?"

Chapter 258 Question

Tyler couldn't admit to anything.

At least not with his father present. Nothing would happen to him with his father around.

So, he forgot his panic and said arrogantly to Liam, "What are you talking about? Even if I did know what you were talking about, I would never tell you a thing. What will you do? Hit me in the Royal Hotel? I'd love to watch you do that." Tyler scoffed in arrogance.

Her face full of resentment, Vera asked, "Do you think you are still the CEO of the Kingland Group? You may have meant something at one point in your life, but without the Kingland Group, you are nothing! Now get out! You are not welcome here, Liam."

Liam had almost ruined the Lambert family.

So, yes, Vera hated him with all of her might.

Cartwright, who was the most respected man presently in the Emperor Banquet Hall was furious.

He had never been so blatantly ignored in all his life, and he hated the feeling. Feeling like his authority had been challenged, he had to do something about it.

"Liam, if you destroy this feast, you will regret it. Maybe if you kneel down in front of Vera and apologize for what you did in the past, I will consider letting you go. If you insist on going down this road, however, I will use all the resources and connections at the disposal of the Riley family to send you to jail, and to make sure you remain in there for life."

The Lambert family got excited after hearing this. This was what they had been waiting for.

Andrew smiled wryly from his end and shouted, "The Riley family is very powerful, Liam. You are nothing compared to them. You'd better do as he said and apologize to us right now."

Andrew still hated Liam for breaking his legs last time.

He'd be damned if he let this opportunity to revenge slip by.

Isabella wasn't happy with how things were going. She looked at Liam and said in a low voice, "Liam, remember that you have nothing now. You can't stand against the Riley family. Just do as Mr. Riley said."

Isabella was so anxious, as though she was in Liam's position.

He couldn't go to prison. She needed to have him first.

Yolanda was the only one who didn't say a word.

She was disappointed beyond belief. How could Liam come here for Tami? And here she was thinking he had come to whisk her away.

Meanwhile, Liam looked at Cartwright with a small smirk playing on his lips.

As the heir of a very powerful clan, he had no business being scared of the Riley family.

In fact, he thought the Riley family ought to count themselves very lucky that he didn't want to use the power of his clan. At least not yet. If not..

The Hoffman family, one of the most powerful clans in the country owned the most powerful force. No one could imagine the extent of their connections and powers.

Tyler took Liam's silence for fear.

With a smug look on his face, he stared down at Liam and said, "Liam, we are both from different worlds. The gap between us is something that can never be surmounted. Just get down on your knees and get this over with."

"Cut the crap!" Liam lost his patience and shouted. He moved so fast that no one saw when he got to Tyler, gripped his neck tightly and lifted him up without any effort.

"You said you would like to watch me hit you in the Royal Hotel, right? Well then, I'll ask you for the last time. Where is Tami?"

Tyler's face turned beet red, both from pain and embarrassment. He twisted his body to get away and grappled at Liam's fingers desperately.

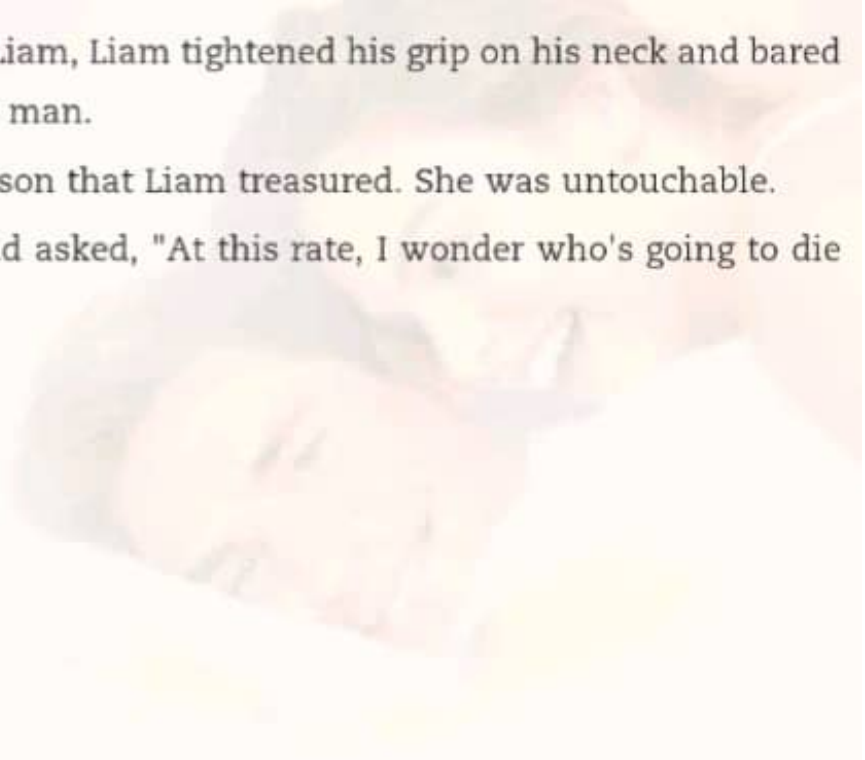
"Let go of me now! Or I'll kill you!" Tyler's voice was hoarse. "I'll kill Julie too!"

That was the one thing Tyler shouldn't have said. As though he had

awoken the beast in Liam, Liam tightened his grip on his neck and bared his teeth at the other man.

Julie was the one person that Liam treasured. She was untouchable.

He glared at Tyler and asked, "At this rate, I wonder who's going to die first."



Chapter 259 One Minute

Tyler felt an intense wave of suffocation wash over him.

Not only was he having trouble breathing, but he was also terrified by Liam's menacing presence.

At that exact moment, Tyler knew he would die for real if he kept up his bravado.

There was a collective gulp from everyone, and then complete silence.

Their eyes were wide with disbelief as they stared at the two men locked in an impasse.

They could not believe that Liam would act so brazenly in the Royal Hotel, of all places.

On top of that, he had the nerve to injure the Riley family's heir in front of Cartwright.

This guy was completely insane.

Liam did not give a hoot about the onlookers' opinions. He rasped out through gritted teeth, "I'm going to ask you again. Where is Tami? If you don't answer me within a minute, I'm going to break one of your fingers!"

"Stop!" Cartwright, his eyes bulging with anger, bellowed. "Put my son down, you bastard!"

He then grabbed a bottle of wine from the table and tried to hit Liam's head with it.

Having expected the attack, Liam smiled playfully, pulled Tyler in front of him, and used him as a makeshift shield.

There was a resounding snap in the banquet hall.

Everything happened so fast. Cartwright could not stop in time to avoid hitting his son square in the head with the bottle.

Tyler's head began bleeding immediately, and the sight of crimson liquid gushing out of his wound was horrifying.

Cartwright's temper flared up due to the unexpected turn of events.

Not only was he worried about the well-being of his son, but he was

also concerned about the honour and standing of the Riley family.

If word of what happened today got out, the Riley family would be laughed at by the people of Salem.

Cartwright's expression darkened, and the room took on a more uncomfortable tension.

The members of the Lambert family were frozen with terror and panic, and no one knew what to do.

Vera, upon realizing that things were getting out of hand, slammed her crutch down and yelled, "Enough! Honestly, Liam, why did we have to put up with filth like you in our house?"

The rest of the Lambert family reacted in unison and showed their agreement with her right away.

"Don't you know that the Royal Hotel is run by the Evans family? You're doomed, you son of a bitch!"

"Put Mr. Riley down. If even a single hair fell out of his head, your entire life would not be enough to make up for it!"

"You're no one in the Lambert family! Stop acting like you're anything special!"

Liam ignored the Lambert family's admonitions.

When he tightened his grip on Tyler, the latter's face flushed violently. He was obviously breathing in less and breathing out more.

Tyler was so terrified that the whites of his eyes started to roll.

For the first time, he feared for his life.

A shiver ran down his spine, and it spread all over his body.

With his lips quivering, Tyler tried to squeak out, "I... will say..."

Finally, Liam loosened his grip on him.

Tyler collapsed on the floor. He brought a hand to his neck, gasping for air.

Slowly, Liam took a step forward.

With a squeak, Tyler flinched and retreated backward.

As he opened his mouth to speak, the sound of approaching footsteps interrupted him.

With a loud bang, the door slammed open once more.

A young man dressed in Armani burst in with a squadron of burly security guards.

When they realized who the newcomer was, the Lamberts' faces brightened.

Someone pointed an accusing finger at Liam and shouted, "This madman hit Mr. Riley! Please arrest him!"

When Cartwright saw how badly his son was harmed, he became extremely worried.

Now that an outsider was around, though, he put on an act of calm dignity.

He knew who the newcomer was. He was Kevin Evans, the heir of the Evans family.

The Evans family had a much higher status than the Riley family, but Cartwright was older than Kevin.

So he took on a regal air by crossing his arms over his chest and declaring in a booming voice, "The Royal Hotel is one of the Evans family's main sources of income, and a lot of notable people come here often. If you let someone like this bastard leave this place unscathed, he'll cause more trouble for you in the future."

His statement was obviously a hint for Kevin to silence Liam for good.

It seemed that in his eyes, the death of a common citizen was on par with the death of an ant.

On the surface, it looked like the Evans family was successful and wealthy because of their hotel and food businesses, but in reality, they were heavily involved in politics.

In the past, Kevin's grandfather served as the city of Salem's governor. Because of his connections, he was able to promote a lot of people in various institutions.

The Evans family could now be considered the most influential family in Salem.

As soon as Tyler realized he had the backing of a member of the Evans family, he felt a surge of self-assurance.

The terror in his eyes was quickly replaced by intense hatred.

He grinned triumphantly at Liam. "You're dead, you son of a bitch! Despite your lack of competence, you have had a lot of guts to publicly insult the Seymours, the Rileys, and the Evans. That's basically half of Salem's authority. Believe me. Even with Watkins' help, you won't be able to survive this! If we three families work together, we can take down even the Rinku Group!"

Liam smirked, amused at the hint of confidence in Tyler's voice.

The people before him were nothing but buffoons who used their superior numbers and social standing to intimidate and harass anyone they pleased.

In any case, contrary to popular belief, Liam had never relied on Watkins.

He was far superior to these people in terms of authority and social standing.

He sighed before muttering, "A minute has passed."

Everyone looked at him in confusion.

What was he talking about?

Had Liam's fear driven him mad?

Meanwhile, Tyler's face turned pale again.

He took a step back and pointed at Liam. "Don't you dare, you bastard! "

Without warning, Liam grabbed his extended finger and yanked at it with all his might.

A crack echoed in the air.

Tyler's finger was bent sharply upward.

"You... Ahhh!"

A high-pitched scream echoed in the Emperor Banquet Hall.

Chapter 260 Another One Was Broken!

Everyone's faces turned white in shock as they stared at Liam in complete disbelief.

It wasn't that surprising to see Liam lift Tyler up moments ago.

After all, there were only members of the Lambert and Riley families in the Emperor Banquet Hall. And Liam had already made enemies with them, so what did it matter if he attacked them?

But now, Kevin had arrived with many security guards and Liam still had the audacity to continue attacking Tyler!

Kevin was from the strongest clan in Salem!

Liam was out of his mind!

To be honest, Liam wouldn't have disagreed with the Lambert family if he knew their thoughts.

He felt like he was going insane ever since Julie's heart was almost taken away!

The person he loved had faced such a tragedy, and even with all his power, he couldn't find the real culprit!

Until now, he couldn't guarantee his lover's safety or find those who hurt her.

Liam constantly blamed himself for feeling so helpless in the face of everything. ③

He hated that he felt weak and incompetent.

The incident at the casino only intensified his crisis awareness, especially because of what happened to Yesenia.

This was why his actions today were more extreme than ever before.

Liam didn't care about the consequences anymore. His eyes grew colder as he stared at Tyler.

In a menacing tone, Liam said to Tyler, "If you don't tell me in one minute, I'll break another finger of yours."

"You have some guts!" Kevin was outraged. How dare Liam cause

trouble in his territory? He couldn't allow someone like him to exist.

He gestured to the security guards behind him and yelled, "Attack him!"

The security guards stormed in, each wielding a small axe instead of a soft stick.

These axes shone with a silver light and some of them were stained with dried blood. They looked very sharp.

Liam turned his head and gave Kevin a cold stare.

Kevin's face turned dark as he felt insulted by Liam's disregard for him.

His self-esteem was strongly challenged.

As Liam stared at Kevin in a daze, he assumed Liam was scared after he heard about how powerful the Evans family was.

Kevin's face softened. He then threw an axe at Liam's feet and proposed a fair deal.

"Mr. Riley is my guest. Since you had the audacity to break his finger, I'll break one of your hands. That's reasonable enough. Cut yourself now!"

Vera was impressed by Kevin's confidence and found him attractive. She wished that one of her granddaughters could get married to him.

She feigned anger and commanded, "Liam, don't be hard-headed. Cut your hand immediately and apologize to the Evans and Riley families!"

Isabella didn't expect Kevin to be so dictatorial.

She pitied Liam and wondered how she could still be with the disabled Liam.

Nevertheless, she wouldn't miss the opportunity to impress the young master of the Evans family.

Isabella purposely stood out, puffed out her chest and yelled, "Liam, hurry up and do it. You don't stand a chance against the Evans family!"

When Isabella arrived in Salem, she realized how small Ninverton was and how frightening it was to cross a powerful clan in Salem.

The Evans family was the most influential clan in Salem.

It held an even higher status than the Riley family.

It would be effortless for Kevin to ruin Liam and even the entire Lambert family.

The remaining members of the Lambert family joined in.

"Liam, we're saying this for your own good. Just cut off your hand!" ①

"That's right, Kevin's request to cut off your hand is already doing you a massive favor!"

"Liam, stop being so stubborn. If you don't chop off your hand, you won't get the chance to leave here alive!"

Everyone appeared self-righteous as if Liam cutting off his hand was the right thing to do for himself.

Tyler covered his swollen and twisted finger, glaring with fury, and said menacingly, "Liam, are you regretting your actions now? Let me tell you, you not only have to break your hand, but you also need to kneel down and apologize to me!"

Tyler winced in pain from his broken finger. Being publicly humiliated and the fear he experienced had left him feeling embarrassed and resentful.

He thought Kevin's threat had frightened Liam.

This brought a smile to Tyler's face.

Even the pain from his injured finger seemed to lessen a little.

Tyler licked his lips and said with a sneer, "Liam, I told you so. What's the use of being good at fighting? When it comes down to it, you'll always lose. You are nothing before a powerful family!"

Liam scanned through the crowd to see their expressions.

He had only kept silent for a short amount of time, and these people were already thinking he was frightened?

Liam smirked and said sharply, "Regretting my actions? You don't deserve my regret!"

As soon as he spoke those words, a silence fell over the group. They were astounded.

Liam's eyes turned icy once again as he slowly said, "Another minute has passed!"

When Tyler heard this, his eyes widened as he bellowed, "Damn you! How dare you!"

Crack!

Liam boldly stepped forward, pressed Tyler's hand and broke another one of his fingers in front of the whole crowd.

Cold sweat broke out on everyone's foreheads at the sight of this.

The Lambert family members and even the security guards felt scared for Liam.

They couldn't fathom how the Riley and Evans families would handle him.

Did Liam really have a death wish?

The atmosphere in the Emperor Banquet Hall grew tense and heavy.

Suddenly, all eyes turned towards Kevin, who was surrounded by his men.

Chapter 261 Power

Kevin's face paled a little, but his anger soon replaced that. He smiled and said, "You sure have some guts. I mean, offending the Evans family takes a lot of courage. However, you shouldn't have done that. Now, I'll make sure to leave you with no limbs."

He stared Liam down and continued with a sneer, "You'll lie in front of the Royal Hotel and beg for chicken change like the beggar you are, then at the end of the day, everything you get will be given to me. Since I'm very generous, I'll make sure to give what you earn to the thugs that will be in charge of supervising you. That way, they will be highly motivated to inflict pain on you every day. I'm going to use you as an example to anyone who thinks they could offend the Evans family in Salem and get away with it." ②

A cold chill caught almost everyone in the hall when they heard this detailed punishment.

It was impossible not to be scared of Kevin after that. It only took a man as cruel as the devil to inflict that on someone.

The members of the Lambert family that always loved being on the front row of things unconsciously stepped back.

This was not something they could involve themselves in. Kevin was scarier than Tyler. More than they could imagine.

It was only now that they all understood how vicious and cruel the heirs of these top families were. It was better not to provoke them.

They made a mental note to be cautious around the Evans family, lest they unintentionally stepped in their way.

Everyone now looked at Liam with sympathy in their eyes.

He was done for.

After offending Kevin, there was no way out for him.

Liam suddenly freed Tyler's hand, causing the man to fall heavily to the floor in shame.

This surprised a lot of people. They thought Liam would hold out a little

bit more.

Kevin sneered at Liam, the disdain and anger on his face more intense than ever.

It was true that the Evans family was the most powerful in Salem, and that no one had the courage to go against them.

Kevin stared Liam down arrogantly and smirked.

"Giving in already? You're just a lowlife after all. You're bold once you're angry and you think you're on top of the world. But once that anger wears off, all that is left is a little scared dog."

Kevin chuckled mockingly and continued with a proud smile on his lips, "Maybe if you go down on your knees and lick my shoes, I'll let you be my pet instead. You won't have anything to worry about for I'm a very good master. I'll always tie your dog chain to walk you."

They couldn't believe it. Liam was actually walking towards Kevin.

Isabella watched the scene in horror. In that moment, she lost all her esteem and desire for Liam.

She was so infatuated with Liam because he was supposed to be unruly and not afraid of power at all.

No matter what was thrown at him, he always seemed to have a way out of it.

But clearly, power always won in the end, even with a man as determined as Liam.

Now that he was giving in, everyone would indeed take him for a petty pet.

She was a goddess, and she couldn't be with the likes of him.

Yolanda stood still in the same position, her face pale and her fingernails digging into her skin.

She would be so heartbroken if Liam knelt down.

She couldn't bear the thought of the man she liked being treated like a dog. He had to be superior to everyone else and respected by all.

Finally, Liam stood in front of Kevin with a stone cold expression on his face.

Everyone seemed to hold their breath, waiting for Liam to get on his

knees. But then, Liam suddenly raised his hand and brought it down with force.

All they heard after that was the sound of a loud slap resonating.

Everyone was in utter shock. They didn't even see when or how it happened.

The force of the slap was so strong and sudden that Kevin's whole body spun around.

He staggered and fell to the floor.

As his face hit the floor hard, his two front teeth flew out, and blood spurted all over his face and on the floor. 3

The hall was as silent as an empty room. Everyone stared at the scene wide-eyed and in stunned silence.

Chapter 262 Griz Craig

Liam had gone crazy!

That was what everyone thought.

They still couldn't believe that he just slapped the heir of the Evans family.

Cartwright was very happy about this. At least now, someone more powerful would have a grudge against the son of a bitch.

He then turned and shouted at the security guards behind him, "Kill this man now! If he escapes, then Axe Security will be held accountable by the Evans family."

That was enough to get the security guards moving.

If they had been competent and vigilant enough, then Kevin wouldn't have been hurt. And if the Evans family decided to hold them responsible, it would be horrible for them.

As part of the Axe security, they were supposed to serve the major families in Salem. The ten major families weren't to be messed with.

Out of those ten families, the last family to mess with was the Evans family.

Even their boss, Tyson was scared of the Evans family.

If anything happened to Kevin, it would be over for them.

With these thoughts in mind, the security guards took out their weapons and surrounded Liam.

"Axe Security, right? I'll let your boss take care of this." With a playful smile at the corner of his lips, Liam took out his phone.

Seeing this, Andrew snarled in disdain and asked mockingly, "Are you trying to make a phone call? Who do you know that can possibly help you out of this situation?"

Liam ignored him and said into the phone, "Tyson, you have ten minutes to meet me at the Royal Hotel." 📞

Some mouths dropped open when they heard this.

Surely he couldn't be talking about Tyson, the boss of Axe Security and the leader of the Axe Gang, right?

Liam couldn't know Tyson to the extent of giving him an order.

Andrew burst into laughter and said, "Liam, I think you need to learn when to stop playing. I remember when me and the Axe Gang had you cornered.

After you beat up so many of his men, Tyson should hate you very much now. And you want to make us think you just ordered him to come here? What do you take yourself for? The CEO of the Kingland Group? Get over it already, will you?"

The rest of the Lambert family immediately agreed with Andrew and looked at Liam with contempt. ①

The bastard had just intimidated them and made them cower as though he had some magical trick under his sleeve.

After the three years they spent with him, they would have never imagined that Liam had such a stubborn streak to him.

In anger, Vera hit her crutch on the floor and sneered. "Don't let Liam fool you for even a second. He is just a loser who only knows how to fight. Do you really think Tyson would let this lowlife talk to him like that? He is openly insulting your boss in front of you."

Naturally, the security guards thought she was right, mostly because they wanted her to be right.

Their boss spoke with the leaders of the ten top families like they were friends. There was no way this poor man would talk to him like that.

Convinced of this fact, the guards all felt insulted, like they had been played for fools.

Tyson was their boss and the person they looked up to. This loser couldn't insult him and expect to go scot-free.

"Griz! This bastard had the guts to insult our boss. Should we just kill him?"

asked one security guard and the others all looked up in the same direction at a burly man.

The man was so huge, and with the long scar that ran across his face

like a twisted centipede, he looked awfully rough and experienced.

His name was Griz Craig, the captain of security guards of the Royal Hotel.

Griz let his gaze move disgustingly over Liam.

He waved his hand shortly, and a man walked out from behind the other guards. It was the young man whose arm was dislocated by Liam.

Griz grinned evilly and said, "I'm in charge of protecting the serenity of Royal Hotel. So will you tell me where you got the guts to cause trouble in my territory and even hurt my brother? I had originally planned to only cut off your hands, but after what I just heard, I'm afraid I will have to break your legs too."

Griz slowly took off his uniform, revealing his strong and big muscles.

He had a lot of scars. Some from gunshots, and some from knives and even burns. These scars were clearly what made him stronger.

Liam could tell just by looking at him that Griz had been in the battlefield and had seen a lot. ③

This made him less aggressive with him as he said, "You must have come back from the battlefield with Tyson, right?"

Now that Liam had Tyson under control, Axe Security kind of belonged to him too.

He had one problem with the guards though. They were cruel and he had to change that.

Liam looked at Griz with a frown and said, "You raised your voice at me, but I'll be merciful. Slap yourself, and I'll let it go."

Everyone looked at Liam in stunned silence.

What was going on?

Griz just threatened to kill Liam, and instead of being scared, Liam was asking him to slap himself?

Liam had to be on drugs. That was the only way they could explain his absurd behaviour.

"Liam, you're going to be dead soon!" Vera shouted spitefully. "Why are you still putting on airs as though you're still the CEO of the Kingland Group? That man is not your employee, okay? He's a man that is hell-

bent on killing you."

The others immediately nodded.

"Seeing your attitude, people who don't know who you are will mistake you for a member of the Evans family."

"Him? A member of the Evans family? In his dreams!"

"He knows he's going to die. He is just being stubborn. He will soon be kneeling and begging for mercy."

Cartwright was already impatient with the drama. Liam had to pay for treating his son the way he did.

He looked at Griz and said, "If this bastard tries to run away, do not hesitate to do what you have to do."

Griz let out a scary grin and said, "You're too arrogant for your own good. Instead of slapping myself, how about I break your limbs first?"

Then, when you're lying on the floor like a helpless and broken man, I will take a few pictures of you and send to Tyson so he can see the son of the bitch who insulted him."

As though he was making a show, Griz made a full turn, looking at the crowd. "After that, I will let Mr. Evans torture you as he wishes. The Evans family will forgive my team after that."

With that, Griz ran towards Liam with his fist raised, ready to hit Liam's face.

Chapter 263 Tyson Came

People who had survived in the battlefield usually aimed to kill and showed no mercy when faced with an enemy.

Griz's fist was aiming straight for a vital part on Liam's body.

His muscles bulged out even more, making him look like a giant grizzly bear.

Liam was strong, yes. They all knew that. But how could he win Griz?

They looked like a small human and a huge giant.

Once Griz was close enough to throw the punch, Liam stepped aside with ease and punched him several times at his joints.

He was so fast and precise.

People didn't even notice what he did. All they saw was him sliding to Griz's back.

The young security guard that came with Griz shouted hatefully, "Your fists are too weak to do anything to Griz, you weakling. Griz won second place in boxing games in Salem many times. He can take a cow down with only one punch. What about you?"

Griz won the second place because Tyson always won the first.

That was why Tyson was the boss of the Axe Gang and they respected him so much.

Members of the Axe Gang were ranked according to their strength.

The next second though, everyone's eyes went wide.

Griz's body made some loud crackling sounds, and before they knew it, he was on the floor, motionless.

All the guards looked on in horror. It was as though Griz had lost all his bones.

Was it magic? Or did Liam do something to him?

Griz was literally the strongest man among them. How did Liam take him down?

Flat on the floor, Griz couldn't understand why he wasn't able to move.

In a total panic, he shouted, "Kill him now! Kill this bastard!"

Without any hesitation, the guards raised their axes and headed for Liam.

"Don't you dare!" someone suddenly roared at the door.

Everyone's head snapped toward the voice.

There, in front of the door, stood Tyson in a grey windbreaker.

His hair was a little messy, surely from the wind. And was he... Out of breath?

All the guards stopped and watched their boss rush into the hall.

What the hell was going on?

It had been ten minutes since Liam made that seemingly fake call.

Did Liam really know their boss?

The Lamberts swallowed hard, nervous and confused.

Everyone recalled the call Liam made ten minutes ago.

Was that really why Tyson was here? Was he following Tyson's order?

They couldn't believe it.

Had Liam regained his identity as the heir of the Hoffman family?

This thought scared Vera so much that she trembled uncontrollably.

She suddenly lost strength in her legs and found herself falling backwards.

Luckily she was held by some members of the family before she hurt herself.

Cartwright remained cool-headed and tried to be composed.

Unlike the others, he was more versed with this rich family life and was certain that Liam wouldn't just regain his identity as the heir of the Hoffman family like that. After all, the Hoffman family wouldn't let anyone that wasn't a direct descendant be the heir.

So the only logical explanation to this was that Kevin called Tyson and asked him to be here.

Convinced of this, Cartwright smiled confidently.

He had met Tyson a few times at other banquets. So he could consider themselves acquaintances.

His smug smile in place, Cartwright walked towards Tyson and said,

"Mr. Armstrong, I'm sure Mr. Kevin Evans called you to come and take care of the troublemaker here, right?"

On hearing this, the Lamberts and the security guards all looked at Tyson, anxiously waiting for his answer.

They really hoped that it was that case.

Because it made absolutely no sense how Liam who was abandoned by his family, would order Tyson who originally hated him.

Liam chuckled in amusement, reading their minds. Then, he looked at Tyson curiously too and asked, "Yes, Tyson. Did Kevin call you to come and deal with me?"

Tyler shot a nasty glare at Liam. "How dare you involve yourself in the conversation between my father and Mr. Armstrong?" he shouted.

Tyler felt braver, because he believed his father couldn't be wrong.

The next second though, Tyler was kicked hard on his buttock and was sent flying.

He fell hard on the table filled with food, decorating the whole floor with it and covering himself with the food.

He lay on the table, motionless while the huge rotating plate swirled and swirled noisily as though giving everyone a performance.

Lying on the table like that, Tyler looked nothing like the heir of a powerful family.

Everyone thought they had received their fair share of surprises when suddenly, Tyson walked to Liam and bowed deeply. "Mr. Hoffman."

Then he stood straight and looked at his men. "What are you waiting for?" he shouted. "Kneel down and apologize to Mr. Hoffman!"

The guards looked at each other in shock.

Surely they had heard wrongly.

"Kneel down, now!" Tyson's roar shook them and made them realise that it was real.

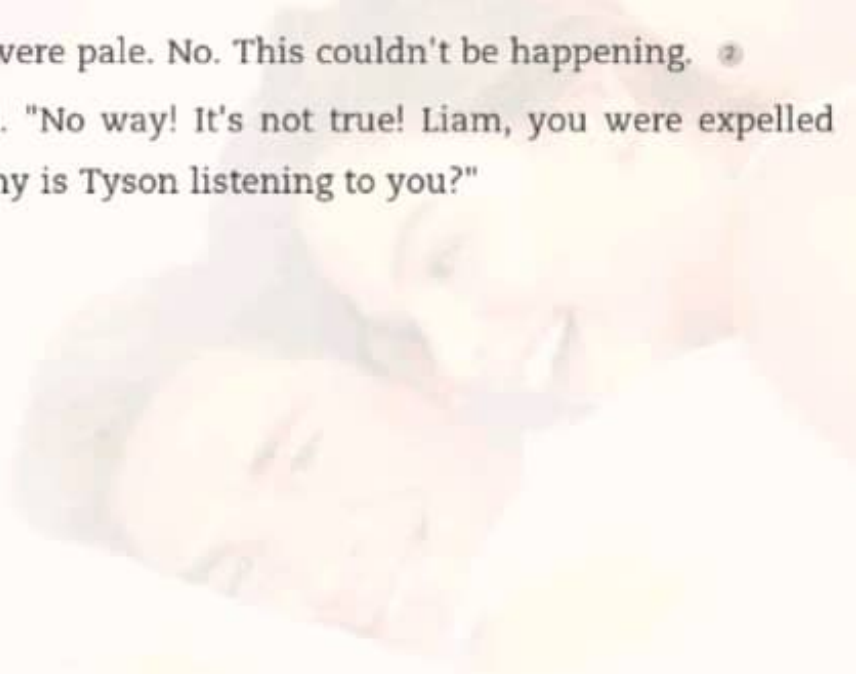
They threw away their axes and knelt down before Liam.

"We were wrong. Please forgive and punish us, Mr. Hoffman!"

Those guards spoke in unison, their voices so loud that they vibrated through the hall.

The Lamberts' faces were pale. No. This couldn't be happening. ②

Vera shook her head. "No way! It's not true! Liam, you were expelled from your family! Why is Tyson listening to you?"



Chapter 264 Whereabouts Of Tami

Vera said exactly what everyone was thinking.

Liam ignored her and looked at Tyler on the table. He had no interest in talking to the Lamberts.

"Ten minutes have passed," Liam said.

Tyler shivered involuntarily and looked at his father with a desperate look in his eyes. "Dad, help me! You have to help me!"

Cartwright stood aside with an unreadable expression, as though he hadn't heard him.

It was true that he was the master of the Riley family, but right now, he was powerless. His hands were tied. If he stepped up now, then he would be the one getting beaten up.

He had no choice but to endure the humiliation now and then execute a good revenge later.

When his father didn't say anything, Tyler looked to the Lambert family, but all of them were cowards. They didn't have the balls to offend anyone in Salem.

They turned their heads and didn't dare to look at Tyler.

No one dared to offend Liam at this point.

Tyler realized that no one wanted to come to his aid. He felt humiliated and angry.

With bloodshot eyes, he threatened lamely, "Tyson, the Axe Gang is just that--a gang. Are you sure you can withstand my anger?"

Don't let this loser drag the whole Axe Gang down."

Tyson almost laughed out loud at this.

He was on the side of someone from one of the most powerful clans in the country.

Why would he be scared of the small Riley family of Salem?

Tyson looked at Liam and asked, "What should we do with these people, Mr. Hoffman?"

"He has to pay for what he said," Liam said coldly. "Ten minutes gone equals to ten fingers. So break all his fingers."

"Yes, sir," Tyson answered and slowly walked towards Tyler.

Tyler's heart was beating a thousand times per second.

He might be very angry, but it didn't numb him. He was very much scared of pain.

When his first finger was broken, the pain was excruciating.

He could still feel the pain coming from his two broken fingers.

Screaming, he jumped down from the table and shouted, "I'll talk! I'll tell you everything!"

Although he was giving up, his eyes were full of resentment.

All he wanted to do was strangle Liam, but he couldn't.

He wiped the vegetable juice on his face and said, "Tami, along with Ajax in his wheelchair, came to me and asked me to sign the contract. As soon as I did, Ajax went on a trip. The only way I talked to him was on phone."

Liam frowned. That information wasn't helpful to him at all.

He clicked his tongue and asked, "When you talked to him on the phone, what did you notice? Anything particular about his environment?"

Liam's cold condescending eyes got Tyler angrier.

To make things worse, his fiancée, Yolanda was watching this.

He had lost all his dignity.

Tyler lost it and roared hysterically, "How am I supposed to recall that? Since you're so powerful now, go and find Ajax yourself!"

Liam stared down at Tyler so hard that Tyler couldn't hold his stare.

The more he felt Liam's gaze on him, the more scared Tyler got.

Scared of what Liam would do to him again, he raised his voice and shouted, "Fine! Let me think!"

Tyler breathed heavily and hurriedly said, "When we called once, I heard sounds of the sea wind, and a bell. He must have gone on a vacation on a beach."

The Lambert family watched this scene in fear.

How could Tyler, the heir of the powerful Riley family yield under Liam's threat?

Tyler recoiled in embarrassment as he felt the pity stares people were throwing at him. The hatred he felt for Liam only increased.

In that moment, he swore to himself that he would make Liam feel worse than he was feeling today. And that day, Liam would grovel and beg for his life to no avail. Without any sympathy from anyone, Liam would meet his end. ①

After what Tyler said, Liam frowned and thought about it. If Ajax was on holidays, then he had a general idea of where he could be.

He looked sharply at Tyler and said, "Call Ajax and ask for his address. Put the phone on speaker."

Liam then took out his phone and sent a message to Theo. "Trace Tyler's call and find out Ajax's whereabouts."

Tyler didn't see the need of arguing anymore.

He looked past his humiliation and did as Liam said.

Once the call was connected, Ajax said impatiently, "I'm busy, Tyler. What do you want?"

Tyler was about to speak when they all heard a sultry female voice say, "Ajax, who is calling at this time?"

Liam narrowed his eyes.

Wasn't that Tami's voice?

Chapter 265 Alive Or Dead

"Stop that. We'll pick up later. Let me handle this," Ajax said to Tami.

Then he said into the phone again, "Tyler, have you taken care of everything?"

The corners of Tyler's mouth twitched nervously.

Had he taken care of it?

He had almost lost his life because of it!

Tyler coughed awkwardly to ease his embarrassment and said, "I need to talk to you face to face. I can't deal with Liam alone. Where are you now?"

Tyler's rushed voice tipped Ajax off. He could tell that something was off.

He paused and asked tentatively, "Liam? I mean, he is just a good for nothing loser. My brother should have killed him by now. What happened?"

Tyler unconsciously stole a glance at Liam before he said, "Why are you talking so much? I have to talk to you about something."

Silence dragged on for a moment after that until Ajax laughed and said, "Tyler, your breath, tone and every other thing have betrayed you. Why am I so sure that Liam is right next to you? This is hilarious. The poor Liam makes the powerful Mr. Riley fold for him. You sure would like to know where I am, won't you?"

Tyler stopped talking. What more could he possibly say?

Ajax had figured out the truth.

Ajax quickly dropped the call, then made a video call to Tyler instead.

"Answer it," Liam said calmly.

Tyler glared at Liam and cursed in his heart. Why the hell was Liam ordering him to do things he could do on his own? Didn't he have fucking hands?

Tyler almost said those words out loud, but he held them in and pressed the answer button.

It felt like he was being forced to eat shit and had to say he loved it. ④

Once the call was connected, Ajax's face and a naked Tami lying on his shoulder filled the screen.

When Ajax saw Liam, he grinned like a mad man.

"Liam, you sure have some cunning moves, huh? I thought my crazy brother and Tyler would have gotten rid of you by now. But that's fine. Now, you want to know where I am, right? Well, guess what? I won't tell you. What are you going to do?"

Liam's face remained stoic, but Tyler couldn't do the same.

He was only now realizing that Ajax had taken advantage of him.

Liam, on the other hand, stared at Tami with rage in his eyes.

All sorts of images of Julie in pain flashed through Liam's mind as he looked at Tami.

He was so angry that he could hardly control himself. The anger seemed to be consuming him.

Liam forced himself to calm down and said in a deep voice, "Tami, tell me about the illegal clinic."

Tami looked at Liam and then burst into laughter. This was what she wanted. Seeing Liam this livid with anger was the aim of her revenge.

She laughed for long and very loudly, just to be sure that Liam heard her.

Finally, when she had laughed to her heart's desire, Tami covered her mouth to stifle the laughter. "Pray tell me, what do you want to find out? Oh, before I forget, how is my lovely niece doing these days? Still alive or dead?"

That was one too much. Liam gritted his teeth and clenched his hands. The only thing that was saving Tami at the moment was the fact that she wasn't physically present there.

Liam's anger seemed to sip out of him, throwing the Emperor Banquet Hall in a state of fear. Everyone was scared that breathing alone would pull Liam's attention to them.

Meanwhile, Liam was having a silent battle with himself, trying to keep all the rage inside until he almost broke his own teeth.

"Alive or dead?" his brain screamed.

How could Tami be so casual about her niece's life?

That night, if he had gotten there just one minute later than he did, Julie would have died.

Liam could understand other people saying they wished Julie dead.

But not the woman in the phone. She was Julie's aunt for crying out loud!

No matter how hard he thought about it, he couldn't understand Tami. Maybe it was because for the Hoffman family, blood relationship was more important than anything else.

That was the first lesson they taught every child in the Hoffman family. Family was gold and was to be treated as such.

All the members of the Hoffman family, no matter how distant their relation was, were as close as brothers and sisters.

Anyone who hurt his family would face severe punishment. That was how it had always been.

"Julie is your family. Also, the Fiber family helped you when you needed it the most. Why on earth would you do this?" Liam finally shouted, letting his anger out.

Chapter 266 Vamp

As Tami glanced at Liam's furious expression, a wicked grin spread across her face.

The more enraged he was, the more joy it brought her.

Her fingers lazily scratched Ajax's chest, conveying a sense of disinterest towards Liam.

Even though Liam's question was filled with anger, Tami seemed unfazed. Her demeanor was relaxed and nonchalant.

Tami's lips curled upwards, tinged with disdain, as she retorted, "Why? Because Julie was so damn pretty and capable. She not only held the position of a CEO in a massive corporation once but is also fortunate enough to have a handsome and strong man like you to support her."

A sense of bitterness crept into her voice as she continued, "But what about me? I was just a woman who had to rely on her brother to make ends meet in the family. I was nothing but a beggar, a dog who was constantly looking for scraps from Julie's family."

As she spoke, Tami's smile turned into an expression of excitement mixed with rage.

Liam couldn't help but be reminded of the deranged Raul.

Tami giggled maniacally for a few moments before regaining her composure and stating firmly, "But I also wanted to be the one in control! I wanted to dominate the Fiber family, make them my dogs, and make them feed off me!"

The woman in the video was undeniably gorgeous, with a face that could launch a thousand ships.

But her words were more venomous than snakes and scorpions.

She was a vamp.

The people present couldn't help but see her that way.

They were usually a bit arrogant, but even they were not as wild as Tami.

Everyone was stunned to know that there was such a vicious woman in

this world.

She wasn't grateful and even went ahead to turn the supposed gratitude into the weirdest hatred. She had even wanted to murder her own niece. Tami basked in the attention of the crowd, relishing in the opportunity to vent her resentment.

It was like she had unleashed all the secrets that had been hidden inside her for years. The rush was exhilarating, almost like a drug.

As Tami's face twisted into a mask of fury, she gritted her teeth and spoke with a savage intensity.

"So, I wanted to disfigure her until she was unrecognizable. Thinking about that moment now is thrilling.

The nail clippers in my hand sliced through those gorgeous cheeks. I listened to my adorable niece scream so painfully. The sound of her screaming in agony was music to my ears. It was the most beautiful song I've ever heard, and I reveled in it!"

Liam's fury was at its peak, and he could barely control his anger. "Animal!" he spat out.

"Animal?" Tami mocked.

She shook her head and said regretfully, "I wish I had recorded her voice. It would have been so satisfying to listen to her screams every day. Too bad I didn't think of it then. But hey, I could always get a video of her being dissected. Would you like to see that? I'll send it straight to you!" The good-looking woman in the video seemed to be whining like a lovesick puppy to her boyfriend.

But her words were filled with cruelty and malice. They sent shivers down the spines of everyone watching.

The crowd couldn't help swallowing and turning their attention to Liam. How could this woman dare to annoy Liam this way?

They all saw how powerful he was just now.

Everyone was afraid that he would lash out at them with even more violence.

Liam gritted his teeth so hard that they looked like they might shatter. His fists clenched so tightly that his bones cracked, and his nails dug

into his flesh, causing him immense pain.

But that wasn't what was hurting Liam the most.

How could Julie's family be so heartless?

Liam's eyes were bloodshot, and his icy glare could pierce straight into the depth of a person's soul.

Through gritted teeth, he said, "You...you deserve to die!"

At the sight of Liam's anger, Tami couldn't help but cover her mouth and laugh. "I deserve to die? Come and get me then! Oh wait, you can't even find me, let alone kill me! You're so mad, aren't you? Hahaha!"

Tami leaned against Ajax's chest like a spoiled child and spoke in a flirtatious tone. "Oh, Mr. Seymour, this lowlife has threatened to kill me. I'm so terrified!"

Ajax smiled viciously, patted her pale, smooth back and praised, "Baby, I love your mouth so much. It's so deadly!"

Both of them then kissed passionately like no one was watching.

Crazy! Cruel! Uncultured!

The crowd thought of these words as they watched the two crazy individuals.

Although Liam also held a grudge against them, they at least had a shred of conscience left.

Tami and Ajax, however, were nothing but incarnations of malice.

Everyone gazed at Liam with pity.

They understood his outburst now more than ever.

He had hurt the members of the Evans and Riley families.

So it was all because of the mistreatment and devastation inflicted upon his woman.

Tami even let someone dig her heart out!

Yolanda bore witness to all this, but her thoughts were different from everyone else's.

She bit her lip until it bled, unwilling to accept the reality of the situation.

The man in front of her, had once loved her deeply and was willing to

give up everything for her.

But now, he was doing the same for another woman.

Even if she stood in the pouring rain for hours, she got no pity or attention from Liam.

In that moment, a fierce hatred bubbled up within Yolanda's heart.

"This place in Liam's heart should be mine and will be mine alone!" she told herself. 📍

Chapter 267 Hoiwa Island

After their passionate kiss, Ajax looked back at the screen with a smug look on his face.

He put his hand on his chest and acted surprised. "Oh my God, Liam! Have some decency, will you? Why are you looking at us? Or are you just lonely since you can't kiss your dead girlfriend?"

Liam just stared at Ajax through the phone screen in silence.

Ajax smiled provokingly at him and raised his middle finger at Liam.

"Mark my words, Liam. This is just the beginning. If you don't kill me, then I'll kill you," Ajax said and hung up immediately.

The silence in the Emperor Banquet Hall after that was deafening.

Everyone was still locked up in Ajax's crazy appearance. It gave them goosebumps just thinking about it.

Vera realized that all the heirs of powerful clans were very vicious and cruel.

Strangely, this realization made her let go of the resentment she felt towards Liam.

There was no need losing energy over someone who would soon die.

It was really not worth getting angry at him.

For first time that evening, Vera smiled in satisfaction.

Liam had successfully offended so many people of big clans. Since he was going to die, there was no need losing sleep thinking of how to make him pay for all he had done.

She was glad that she made Yolanda marry into the Riley family.

If not, then her family wouldn't have been living the good life they were living now.

Liam was nothing compared to the powerful clans that were present today.

Everything he had done today was just luck. It would soon come back to bite him in the ass.

Tyson looked at Liam, worried that he would lose control after what happened. He stepped close to him and asked apprehensively, "Mr. Hoffman, are you okay?"

Liam closed his eyes, took in a deep breath, and then opened them the next second.

The rage and fury that had filled his eyes disappeared and the only thing left was an endless coldness.

When Liam looked at Tyler and saw the mockery on his face, he scoffed and gave off a cold smile.

Tyler had deliberately warned Ajax with his words, and he knew it.

Liam could only laugh at the man. Just like everyone else here, he must surely think that an ordinary person like Liam could not do anything to these people from powerful clans.

Little did they know that he was from a more powerful clan, the Hoffman family.

Liam was so angry that he clenched his fists.

He wished he could raise that fist and bring it to Tyler's head, but he held himself back. There were many other ways to deal with him.

It was true that he could hide behind his family and exact revenge to all that had wronged him, but that would be too easy. 📍

Liam narrowed his eyes.

These bastards could gloat for now, but they would soon regret everything.

This night though, Tyler would be the first to feel his wrath.

Liam looked at the time on his phone and said calmly, "Twenty minutes have gone by since I came here."

Everyone looked at each other in confusion, wondering what he was going on about again. Everyone but Tyler.

Tyler gulped and widened his eyes in fear. He stepped back slowly and shouted, "No, Liam! You can't do this. You can't break your promise. I called Ajax and gave you information about Tami like you asked."

Liam laughed out loud at this.

He seemed to be very happy, but all Tyler could see were cold eyes

staring him down.

Liam shrugged casually. "Yes, but I don't know where she is, and that's what I wanted to know."

He looked at Tyson over his shoulder and ordered, "Go ahead."

"Yes, sir." Tyson nodded and strode determinedly to Tyler.

As he reached out to grab Tyler's arm, Tyler jerked it back with force and ended up falling backwards.

He ignored the pain he felt and kept crawling backwards. "Liam, you bastard! You can't do this to me! You made a promise!"

Liam gave him a deaf ear and walked out of the Emperor Banquet Hall without looking back.

Tyson sneered at Tyler, grabbed him by the ankle and lifted him up into the air.

"Let me go! Let me go!"

Tyler cried and twisted, but he couldn't get away. Tyson patiently broke all his toes.

After that, he grabbed Tyler's two palms and twisted them backwards.

"Ah! Ahh! Ahhh!"

Tyler's screams filled the whole hall.

Liam ignored the screams with a small smile on his face.

As soon as he walked out of the hotel, he was bathed in sunshine.

However, he couldn't feel its warmth. All he felt was an endless coldness in his heart.

Ajax and Tami! They were going to pay.

Liam's phone rang at this time. When he saw that it was Theo, he answered quickly.

"Mr. Hoffman, I've traced the call. They are on the Hoiwa Island."

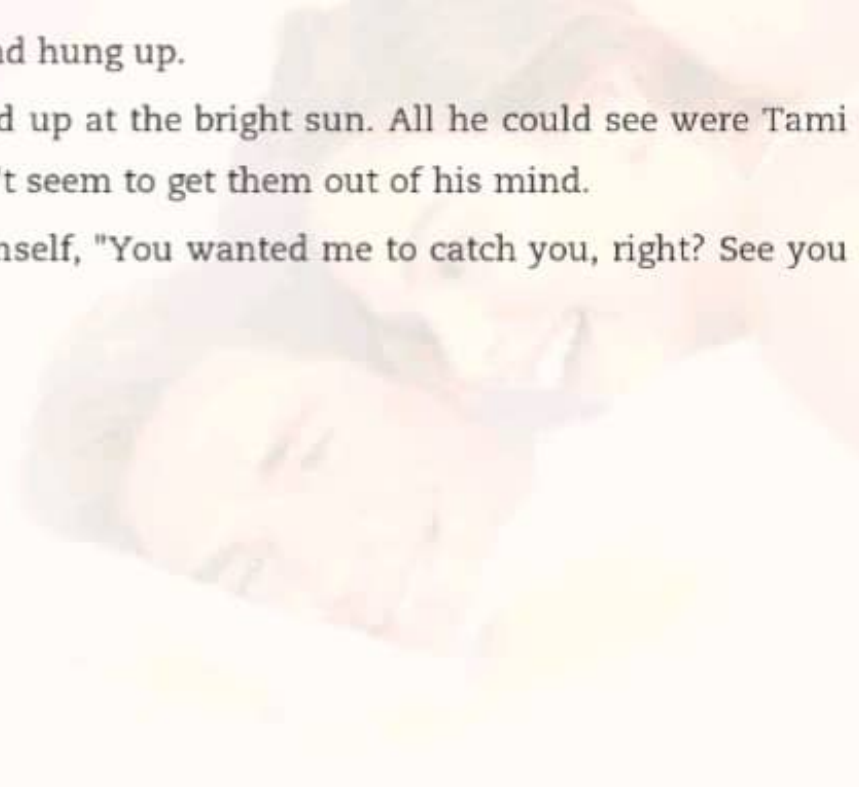
Liam nodded and said, "Okay then. Send someone to keep an eye on Ajax. He shouldn't get away. Also, book the earliest flight for me. I'll go there myself."

Theo answered quickly, "Already did. The earliest flight to Hoiwa Island is at seven o'clock tonight." ②

"Okay!" Liam said and hung up.

He sighed and looked up at the bright sun. All he could see were Tami and Ajax. He couldn't seem to get them out of his mind.

He murmured to himself, "You wanted me to catch you, right? See you guys tonight."



Chapter 268 Putting On A Show

Liam had four hours left before his plane would take off at seven o'clock. Since the journey to the airport would take an hour, Liam set out for the airport. He didn't want to risk missing this particular flight.

When he looked at the ticket that Theo had gotten him, he chuckled.

It seemed that Theo was used to booking first class only. Anyway, Liam just let it be since he wouldn't be running into anyone he knew.

Once at the airport, Liam went directly to the VIP lounge after taking his boarding pass.

Back at the Emperor Banquet Hall, Tyson left with the Axe Security once he was finished with his task.

Then, he publicly announced that he would terminate the contract with the Evans family and would never serve the Evans family, the Seymour family, and the Riley family again.

Naturally, this action would greatly affect the income of the Axe Gang. But he now served Liam who was from an even more powerful family. The petty profits he was going to get from those other families meant nothing.

As soon as the three families heard this announcement, they jointly issued a statement to boycott the Axe Security.

This was a great bullet to the upper class of Salem.

Axe Security seemed to be a security company, but it was actually the biggest gangster group in Salem. That was why the families had always wanted their service.

They didn't have as much money as the top ten families. But if it came to power, they were superior to most families.

Everyone who heard about this knew that things were soon going to change.

In a VIP ward of the Salem Hospital.

The Lambert family gathered around a bed and looked down at the pitiful Tyler with concern.

His fingers and toes were bandaged, and honestly, he looked a little funny.

He lay motionless on the bed, but his eyes were filled with anger and resentment.

The only thing he could think of was how to make Liam's life miserable. The Lamberts were all silent. They didn't want to do anything that would make Tyler pour his anger on them.

They had all seen how cruel Tyler could be, and they didn't want a taste of it.

Vera looked at Yolanda who was at the back of the crowd and motioned for her to walk forward.

Yolanda nodded, understanding what her grandmother wanted. However, all she felt now towards Tyler was disgust.

After what happened at the Emperor Banquet Hall, she had lost all interest in Tyler.

He was incompetent and useless.

Without his identity as the heir of the Riley family, he was nothing.

There was only one man that didn't need a title to command a whole room and act like he owned it.

That man was Liam.

And unlike Liam, Tyler was a complete loser who only had his family background to boast of.

Despite her disgust for Tyler though, Yolanda still had to rely on the Riley family. At least for now.

Or until Liam finally accepted her. ①

In that moment, Yolanda decided that if Liam accepted her, then she would willingly give up on this rich life she had always dreamt of. ①

Then again, it was just an impulsive decision she was taking now. If it really came to that, she would choose based on the reality of things.

Having grown up in the snobbish environment of the Lambert family, it was deep-rooted in her that the lack of money was worse than losing her life.

Yolanda sighed. If only Liam were rich. But it didn't matter even if he

wasn't rich though. Once she took all the property of the Riley family, she would marry him and take care of him. He just had to wait for her. Yolanda took a deep breath and placed a concerned look on her face as she walked towards Tyler.

As soon as Tyler saw her approaching, his face was filled with anger and resentment. Then he ordered coldly, "Everyone, except Yolanda, get out!"

The Lamberts were confused by his tone. What did Tyler want to do to Yolanda?

They had no right to question him though.

So, they rushed out of the ward and left Yolanda inside.

Before Vera left, she patted Yolanda's shoulder and said, "Take good care of Tyler."

Yolanda nodded and watched as she left. Once the door was closed, she leaned against Tyler and said softly, "Tyler, don't be angry, okay? Just focus on recovering."

Before Yolanda could understand what was happening, Tyler slapped her hard across the face.

Her tender face instantly turned red.

Her face was burning. What the hell was that for?

Yolanda held her cheek and burst into tears. "Why did you slap me?"

With angry eyes, Tyler shouted, "Why? I should be the one asking questions here! After all that I have done for you, satisfying all your needs and wants, how dare you have an affair with Liam? You haven't treated me with the same consideration I have you."

Tyler had planned to keep his hurt feelings to himself until he actually got some proof.

But the longer it took, the more feelings piled up and it killed him from the inside.

He was able to hold it in before. But after Liam crushed all of his pride at the banquet, he simply couldn't stay quiet anymore.

Yolanda's face paled when he said this.

Did Tyler see through her plan or what?

She didn't have the time to analyse that now.

She had to do some damage control very fast.

Just as soon, Yolanda raised her hand and slapped Tyler too.

She exerted all of her power in that slap, and it was so much louder and stronger than the one he gave her. Tyler looked at her in disbelief.

He opened his mouth to say something, but not a single sound came out.

Yolanda then started to put on a show. Tears welled up in her eyes and she cried, "A bastard like Liam is nothing compared to you. Don't you feel how well I treat you and how much I love you? I've been so devoted to you since day one. You bastard. How dare you think that I've been having an affair with the likes of Liam? You have no right to insult me like that!"

Yolanda then grabbed the small knife for fruits on the table and cried out, "I'd better not live like this!"

With that, she raised the knife and brought it towards her heart.

Chapter 269 That Loser Must Have Planned It

As the sharp blade rushed for Yolanda's heart, it suddenly stopped against a palm.

It was too late for Yolanda to stop or to reduce the force.

The tip of the knife dug into Tyler's skin and blood oozed out.

In shock, she opened her palm and the knife fell to the floor with a sharp sound.

Yolanda's face was pale. She was only just putting on an act. She never saw this coming.

As the blood dripped from Tyler's hand and onto the floor, Yolanda gulped, feeling a little guilty for the first time.

She never knew Tyler would really be able to do such for her.

Tyler ignored the blinding pain in his hand and pulled Yolanda into his arms.

In that moment, all his emotions seemed to surge up and overwhelm him.

"How can you be so stupid?" Tyler burst into tears.

Yolanda was relieved that he no longer doubted her. She choked on sobs and asked, "You said I cheated on you and that I was unfaithful!"

"No, no..." Tyler shook his head hysterically. "I'm sorry. I should have never doubted you."

Yolanda sniffed and said in an aggrieved tone, "You're the one I love!"

Tyler quickly pulled away from her at this and wiped the tears on Yolanda's face. He swallowed and said with guilt, "I know. I'll make it up to you, okay? How about I buy that necklace you've always wanted?"

What? That necklace was worth fifty million dollars!

Yolanda couldn't believe it. She had asked for that necklace numerous times, but it was just too expensive.

The Riley family was now at the bottom of the top ten rich families and as such, they couldn't afford to liquidate so much money at once.

So yes, she was ecstatic about this news, but she remained cool on the outside and said instead, "Tyler, you need to know that I want to marry you because of you and not your money. It's because you are nice to me. That necklace is too expensive for your family to afford it. Just let it be, okay? All I ask is that you spend more time with me whenever you can."

This was the first time that Yolanda said such loving words to Tyler.

He was touched and happy, but he still had a lot of questions.

It was better to sort it out now. So he asked, "Why did you turn off the surveillance camera when Liam came to see you at your office?"

Yolanda raised her eyebrows in confusion.

The surveillance camera?

But she didn't do that.

Yolanda frowned in confusion, then it suddenly occurred to her.

The female secretary?

Yolanda shook her head and looked at Tyler.

"I didn't turn off the camera. Like I said before, when Liam came to see me, I told him off and he left soon afterwards. There has to be a misunderstanding somewhere."

Yolanda furrowed her eyebrows as if in thought, then said suddenly, "I think I get it now. Is that what the female secretary told you? She made mistakes at work, and I slapped her to call her back to order."

Tyler frowned. He believed what Yolanda said, as he didn't tell her about what the secretary had done.

Something wasn't right.

Tyler decided to apologize. But before he could, Yolanda leaned against him and cried, feigning sadness.

"This is all my fault. I should have controlled my temper. If I hadn't slapped her, she wouldn't have done this out of vengeance."

Tyler nodded and sighed.

He was really confused. He didn't know what to think.

Then he thought of another incident and asked, "What about the time when you were hugging in front of Liam's gate?"

Yolanda's eyes were filled with tears as if on command. She was shocked by his words.

How did Tyler know about that?

Yolanda kept her surprise hidden, feeling a little scared now.

She had been really careless. What if she had ruined her chance to marry into a rich family?

She sniffed and made up a lie. "I went to Liam's house to personally give him our wedding invitation just to mock him," Yolanda said and burst into tears again.

"That day, I was wearing heels. When I was about to leave, I suddenly stepped on a wine bottle and fell down. I sprained my ankle and it swelled. It hurt for several days after that. Now that I think about it, that loser must have planned it."

After Yolanda said this, Tyler thought back to that time and realized that indeed, Yolanda wasn't walking very straight when she came out of Liam's house that day.

Everything made sense now. It clicked in his mind.

Now that everything had come to light, Tyler felt so guilty. He touched Yolanda's face lovingly with his bandaged fingers, ignoring the pain he felt.

"I'm sorry, Yolanda. I really am. I should have never suspected you this way."

Yolanda held Tyler's hand gently in hers as though she cared for him and whispered, "Be careful. Don't hurt yourself again."

Her soft words and actions comforted Tyler and reassured him.

However, that touching moment soon passed as his eyes were filled with anger.

"That female secretary tried to play me for a fool! How dare she? Don't worry. She's going to pay for what she has caused. Give me my phone."

Yolanda quickly did as he asked and opened the contact list for him. If he could direct his anger on anyone else but her, she would be glad.

Tyler endured the pain and swiped the screen two times. He dialed a number and brought the phone to his ear. "I want you to find some

people to gang rape the female secretary of the Telmar Company, and then throw her into a brothel where she will be a whore for the rest of her life."

Yolanda listened in horror.

She was so scared.

If Tyler one day found out that she had really betrayed him, he would surely do something worse to her.

Meanwhile, at the Salem airport.

The boarding announcement was made.

Liam walked out of the VIP lounge. Led by a tall stewardess with blonde hair, Liam boarded the plane to Hoiwa Island.

After he sat down, the sexy stewardess bent down to hand him a glass of whiskey. As she did this, her big chest rubbed against Liam's arm, the look in her eyes one of clear invitation.

However, Liam just took the whiskey and ignored her.

He looked out of the window and murmured to himself, "Just you wait for me, Ajax. I'll make you regret everything you've done."

Chapter 270 Dark Night Organization

When Liam got off the plane and reached the gate of the airport, a woman in a sexy bikini waved at him.

She had short blonde hair. Her eyes were as green as jade and her face as delicate as a porcelain doll.

Leaning against a huge Land Rover looking so sexy, she was definitely attractive.

Theo had sent him message when he was on the plane saying that he had sent him a very strong subordinate.

Liam smiled helplessly as he looked at the woman in front of him. So this was the strong subordinate, huh?

Liam decided to trust Theo and followed the woman into the car.

Seated in the driver's seat, the woman gave Liam a charming smile and said, "Dark Night Organization. My code name is Rose, but you can call me Annie. I'm in charge of the stronghold on Hoiwa Island."

"My surname is Hoffman," Liam introduced himself in return.

Dark Night Organization belonged to the exclusive armed organization of the Hoffman family. Liam knew them very well since he used to be a part of them.

As they drove ahead, Annie gave Liam a brown envelope and said seriously, "I'll call you Mr. Hoffman then. That envelope has everything you need to know about the task. Read it carefully."

Liam gave her a curt nod and opened the envelope.

It had Ajax's itinerary on the island. It was so detailed that it had what he ate, how he entertained himself, his address and so on.

It also detailed the amount of money he had spent and the number of women he had hooked up with.

Seeing how much fun Ajax had been having got Liam more furious.

The scumbag came to Hoiwa Island to enjoy himself while Julie was dying?

Images of Julie struggling to hang on and the scars that ran across her

face and on her chest made Liam even more furious.

In that moment, he realized that Ajax only had one fate and that would be death.

Liam was not even done reading the document. As he went on, he had to fight to stay calm.

Not only had Ajax been having fun, but he got involved with Chet Smith, a drug baron in the Golden Triangle.

They stayed together, ate, drank and played together.

This drug baron was always accompanied by a number of armed men.

Annie glanced shortly at Liam and said, "The drug baron's men are very cruel. Each of them has been through life and death situations and apparently, they have all been in the battlefield. Our men didn't get too close for fear of alerting the enemy. All they can do is follow them and observe."

Annie quickly pulled open the front drawer with one hand, took out a black bag and threw it on the back seat.

Liam opened the black bag and saw a Desert Eagle.

Annie glanced at him through the rear-view mirror and was unsatisfied with his reaction to the gun. She had to wonder if he was really capable or not to handle a gun. Why was he so excited to see one?

Theo had told her to listen to Liam no matter what. Of course, he didn't tell her that Liam was the heir of the Hoffman family.

So Annie just saw him as a superior who came on a mission.

Liam put the information back in the envelope and looked at Annie. "How do things work here?"

Annie took it as an order from a superior and answered, keeping her doubts at bay.

"I'm the one in charge of the stronghold set up on Hoiwa Island by the Hoffman family. Big shots often come here just for fun and I can get a lot of information from them. This is a tourist resort, but guns are not banned here. The people who come here are extremely dangerous. So it'll be better if you don't go out at night."

Liam nodded in understanding and holstered the pistol she had thrown

at him. He put it against his waist and hid it with his coat. That way, he would be able to take it out swiftly.

The Desert Eagle wasn't a gun he used in the battlefield, but he liked using it for training.

It was much heavier than an ordinary pistol. If he switched to a lighter, more powerful pistol on the battlefield, his hand would be steadier.

He thought the Desert Eagle was perfect for this situation.

After a while, Annie drove the car into an area filled with villas.

They were situated here with at least a hundred meters between each two. So each house had its own privacy.

After Annie parked in front of one of the villas, they got out of the car and went to the third floor.

There, Annie led Liam to a window.

She slightly opened a crack in the curtain and explained, "This is a special one-sided bulletproof window glass. Those outside can't see what is happening inside, but those inside can see out."

As ordered by the organization, she quickly bought the villa and changed all the windows.

Annie then took out a box from the bottom of the bed and quickly assembled a high power telescope.

This telescope was developed by the Hoffman family and was even more powerful than the one that was used in the battlefield now. With this one, one could see the fleas on the Doberman's fur outside the villa.

Annie put on the most advanced infrared imaging device on the telescope and began to observe the villa next to theirs.

She could see two figures walking inside the villa. And around the villa stood about a dozen bodyguards.

Liam picked up another telescope and did the same as Annie.

As soon as he looked through it, Liam's eyes turned ice cold, the desire to kill so obvious in them.

Tami and Ajax were standing at the window.

Ajax lit a cigar while Tami massaged his back. The perfect couple.

Liam clenched his fist and bared his teeth. If only he could rush over

there this instant and crush them with his bare hands.



Chapter 271 Drug Baron And Black Spider

Annie could sense the shift in Liam's mood and quickly said, "Hey, chill out. Tonight's not the night. We just found out that Chet, the drug baron, is planning to show up here later."

The person responsible for keeping tabs on Ajax had sent her a message, saying that he had bought a bunch of special food ingredients and even hired a skilled chef to cook them up.

It was obvious that Ajax intended to treat Chet to dinner here.

When Liam heard this, his eyes grew even redder, his anger bubbling to the surface.

Through gritted teeth, he sneered, "This is the perfect opportunity to take them both out!"

The Seymour family had strong ties to the criminal underworld, and their illegal clinics were known to engage in the illegal sale of human organs.

In the Golden Triangle, there were many similar organizations that dabbled in such sinister practices.

Liam was certain that the illegal clinic where Julie got injured had some sort of connection to Chet.

He intended on eliminating them both at once.

Annie was taken aback by Liam's words, and couldn't help but feel a tinge of disdain towards his impulsiveness.

In her eyes, he was being foolish and recklessly putting their plan in jeopardy.

"Look, it's fine if you want to get yourself killed. But I've been given orders to keep you safe, so if you're going to be impulsive, I'll have no choice but to take some drastic measures like knocking you out!" she scowled and said in a less polite tone.

Liam couldn't help but raise an eyebrow, a sly smile forming on his lips. "Wow, it looks like even the junior members of the organization can question their superiors now," he joked.

Annie was unimpressed by Liam's attempt to assert his rank over her. She rolled her eyes at Liam and said, "You're very young. You're certainly not at the top rank of the organization. I don't need to show you respect!"

Within the Dark Night Organization, members were divided into three different levels.

The first rank consisted of elite members like Annie. They had to be carefully selected and monitored for several years before being promoted for their loyalty to the Hoffman family.

The second rank was made up of even stronger members who were selected from the elites. They had to undergo more rigorous selection procedures and were subjected to strict supervision for ten or several decades. ①

It wasn't difficult to imagine the immense power the people of the third rank possessed.

Annie knew very little about them, except that they were few in number, and each one of them was incredibly formidable in battle.

Liam, with a mischievous grin, asked Annie in a playful tone, "So, what rank do you think I belong to?"

Annie rolled her eyes at Liam and replied dismissively, "What else could it be? You certainly belong to the regular first rank like me. You are very young. Do you have any elder in your family who works in the management of the Dark Night Organization and introduces you into the organization?"

Liam simply shook his head and smiled. "I'm very strong!"

Annie snorted at Liam's words, thinking he was just bragging, and didn't say anything else.

Liam wasn't bothered, though. As long as they fought that evening, Annie would know just how strong he really was.

The conversation lulled into an awkward silence for a moment.

Annie appeared to have thought of something, so she suddenly asked, "Since you were sent here by my leader, have you ever seen King?"

King was a code name in the Dark Night Organization!

However, he was independent from the people of the three ranks. He was a legend in the Dark Night Organization!

The rumors surrounding his strength were mind-boggling. It was said that he could take on everyone in the three ranks and still remain invincible.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that King was the idol of every member in the organization.

Despite his popularity, King remained a mysterious figure who only received the highest level tasks. No one had ever seen him before. They only knew of his existence.

Upon hearing King's name, Liam couldn't help but smile. "Yes, I've seen him."

Annie's eyes lit up at Liam's response and she eagerly asked, "What's he like? Is he handsome?"

Liam flashed a mischievous grin and nodded, "He's as handsome as I am, of course!"

Annie let out a derisive snort. "Do you really think that you can compete with King? You look good, but King must be much more attractive than you!"

"Judging from how you're speaking about him, you admire him, right? But I don't think he's all that great." Liam laughed.

Unbeknownst to Annie, King was actually Liam's code name in the Dark Night Organization.

Three years ago, before he joined the Lambert family, he had been executing tasks in Dark Night Organization!

Annie's face contorted when she heard this.

But it wasn't admiration or fear that overtook her. It was anger.

Even though there wasn't an explicit rule about it, there was a hidden code in the organization that King couldn't be disrespected.

Annie's face flushed with fury as she spat, "Who the hell are you to insult King like that? When this mission is over, I will definitely report you to my superior!"

Liam was about to respond to Annie's outburst when a loud commotion

erupted outside of the villa where Ajax was living.

Both of them turned their heads and saw five jeeps barreling down the wide road.

Through the infrared imagery, it was evident that the jeeps were packed with strong men.

At the center of the convoy was a Rolls-Royce Phantom.

It was clear that Chet, the notorious drug trafficker, had arrived.

Liam peered through the telescope and immediately recognized the tattoo on the neck of the burly man in black behind the steering wheel.

It was a huge black spider!

His lips curled into a cold smile. It had been a long time since he last saw members from Black Spider.

It was the members of the Black Spider that had besieged and attempted to kill Liam in the illegal clinic!

After Liam pieced together several clues, his previous hunch was finally confirmed.

The cold glint in his eyes revealed his killing intent. His stoic expression twisted into a smirk as he muttered, "Black Spider, huh? Ha ha, that's great! Today, I'm going to take each and every one of you down!"

Chapter 272 Sneaking In

Annie shook her head and muttered to herself as she watched Liam's erratic behavior, "This guy is out of his mind!"

Without wasting any time, Annie lunged forward and aimed to chop at his neck with her hand in order to knock him out.

But Liam quickly spun around and caught her, holding her tightly against the floor.

As he pinned her down, Annie could feel her bikini top slipping off, revealing her chest.

She blushed with embarrassment and yelled, "Let me go, you pervert!"

Liam got up and pulled Annie to her feet, flashing a sly grin. "You are walking around in a bikini. Do you even care about being seen?"

Annie scowled at him with narrowed eyes. "I can wear whatever I want. What I wear has nothing to do with who I am," she retorted.

Ignoring her, Liam turned to leave. "Just stay put and wait for me," he said over his shoulder as he walked downstairs.

"Hey, wait!" Annie stopped him before he went too far. "What's your code name and rank?" she asked, determined to get some answers.

Despite his seemingly simple move, Liam had managed to completely control Annie in just seconds. He was definitely not to be underestimated.

He was undoubtedly one of the best in the first rank, and he might have his sights set on entering the second.

Without turning back, Liam simply said his code name, "King."

Annie couldn't believe her ears. She was stunned and muttered in a low voice, "King... King!"

Her eyes immediately widened in disbelief.

No way!

Was Liam really King?

Annie slapped herself on the cheek and murmured, "No, no, no! This

brat is definitely not saying the truth. He is still so young. How on earth could he possibly be King?"

However, Liam didn't hear any of that.

Fortunately, there was a thick forest between both villas.

After Liam left the villa, he quickly made his way to the next villa through the large bushes and headed straight for the kitchen.

"Who is there?" Suddenly, a bodyguard in black appeared and pointed his gun at the bushes, ready to fire.

The other guards followed suit, all on high alert.

Unexpectedly, a mouse darted out of the rustling bushes.

The bodyguards rolled their eyes in disdain at the overly startled bodyguard at the back. "It's just a mouse. Why are you creating a scene?" one asked.

Meanwhile, Liam had knocked out a cook who came out to smoke, worn his clothes, and slipped into the villa undetected.

The masks that all the cooks wore for sanitary purposes made it even easier for him to blend in.

As he hurried through the kitchen, Liam encountered many strange cooks who greeted him, but he simply nodded and kept moving.

Under the guise of needing to use the restroom, Liam explored the villa and assessed its defenses.

Just then, an old cook with grey hair approached him, clearly displeased.

Seeing that Liam was still roaming, he scolded, "You are still slacking off! Send the dining cart to the living room immediately!"

Liam grinned slyly. This was exactly the opportunity he needed.

He pushed the dining cart through the villa, undetected.

As Liam made his way towards the living room, a group of guards suddenly blocked his path and yelled in anger, "Wait!"

He furrowed his brow and clutched the dining cart tightly.

One of the guards gave Liam a once-over before opening the door to the living room. He then barked at Liam, "Why have you taken so long! Mr. Seymour has been waiting anxiously. Tell the cooks to serve the dishes immediately!"

"Okay." Liam let out a sigh of relief and pushed the dining cart into the living room.

He caught sight of the man at the table, and his eyes turned icy.

It was a face Liam would always remember.

Ajax!

Ajax was sitting at a long table with Chet and several sexy ladies, chatting and laughing as they enjoyed their drinks.

Sitting next to Ajax, Tami smiled sheepishly as she poured him a glass of wine.

Chet who sat opposite them couldn't take his eyes off Tami, ogling her shamelessly.

Liam noticed that Tami had gotten plastic surgery again. She wore a revealing red evening dress that showed off her mature, attractive figure in the light.

Chet was a middle-aged man who had a thing for women like Tami.

He couldn't help but stare at her chest, openly admiring her assets.

"Ajax, you lucky man. You must have a lot of fun with her in bed," Chet remarked, his voice dripping with lust.

Ajax caught onto what he was implying and responded generously, "Well, Mr. Smith, this lady is quite the obedient one on the bed. I just need to give her a little pat, and she knows exactly what position to change to. If you're interested, why don't you take her with you tonight?"

Chet's eyes widened with excitement at Ajax's suggestion. "That sounds like a great idea!" he exclaimed.

Without a moment's hesitation, he made his way over to Tami, wrapped his arms around her waist and squeezed her ample bosom. This made Tami continually let out a shriek.

After spending so much time with Ajax, she never expected him to offer her up to someone else so easily.

She couldn't help but feel crestfallen.

But she knew better than to go against Ajax's wishes in front of someone as dangerous as Chet, the drug baron.

Normally, Tami didn't worry too much about offending Ajax. Even if she

did something wrong, he would usually only give her a minor punishment. But now, in the presence of Chet, things were different. Tami knew that saying the wrong thing could lead to her death.

She leaned into Chet's chest, blushing and putting on a flirtatious tone. "Oh, Mr. Smith...Please be gentle."

"Hahaha, alright!" Chet couldn't contain his laughter as he looked at the beauty in his arms.

He grabbed Tami on his thighs, pulled away her bikini top and squeezed her plump breasts.

This caused her to pant heavily for a while. The people in the living room were left feeling a bit hot.

Ajax watched with resentment as Chet played with his woman. He muttered to himself, "Damn it! Bitch, you sound so nasty. You are obviously having a nice time!"

Although Tami was sent out by Ajax, she was still his woman, and it was hard not to feel a twinge of jealousy seeing her being played with in front of him.

Chet, growing tired of Tami's reactions, pushed her aside and turned his attention to Ajax.

He lifted his wine glass from the table and shook it a few times before speaking in a cold tone. "You know, it hasn't been easy training those mercenaries I sent you, and I haven't heard anything back from them in a while."

Liam clenched his fists so tightly that his nails left visible marks on the handle of the dining cart.

It was him!

Anger boiled inside him like a volcano about to erupt.

Chapter 273 Gouge Out Your Eyes

Liam didn't make any move yet, so nobody in the living room paid him any attention.

When the topic of the illegal clinic came up, Ajax's expression soured and he let out a scoff. "Those guys were all useless. They all died as the house blew up, but somehow it's my fault?"

The people from the Black Spider got blown up instead of killing Liam. To clean up the mess, the Seymour family had to put in a lot of effort. Chet slowly lit a cigar and said nonchalantly, "Ajax, you only paid me ten million dollars for my services, but now everyone's dead. Whether it was an accident or not doesn't matter to me. I'll still work for you, but this time, you have to pay me a hundred million dollars as compensation when it's all said and done."

When Ajax heard Chet's willingness to continue working for him, he believed his plan was successful.

Ajax raised his glass and flashed a sly grin. "Alright, but that bastard is very difficult to deal with. You have to send over some more powerful people this time!"

"Consider it done. Here's to a fruitful partnership!" Chet raised his glass and clinked it with Ajax's.

"Do you really think it's that easy to kill me?" Suddenly, an out-of-place voice interrupted them.

The sudden remark startled everyone in the room.

Ajax spun around to face the man in a chef's uniform. His ears perked up at the familiar voice.

Ajax sized Liam up and interrogated, "Who are you?"

Liam smirked and took off his mask to reveal his face.

Ajax's eyes twitched, but he quickly regained his composure.

Even though he was unsure how Liam managed to track him down, he had faith in the Black Spider's protection.

Ajax downed his drink and erupted in laughter. "You're playing with

death, Liam! Mr. Smith, your target has made it easy for you by walking into this place. Why don't you take action?"

Chet was taken aback by the mention of that name.

Despite his surprise, Chet remained collected and composed.

The fact that someone was able to breach the Black Spider's security was an insult to him.

Chet raised his glass and slammed it down hard at Liam's feet. He bellowed at the door, "Dylan, you pathetic excuse for a man, get in here!"

The living room door immediately swung open, revealing a man of massive stature, towering over everyone at 2.5 meters tall.

Liam couldn't help but notice a deep scar over the man's left eye, with the eye itself being a fake.

It was none other than the mercenary captain, Dylan Lynn. He approached Chet, knelt down and asked politely, "What's wrong, Mr. Smith?"

Slap!

Suddenly, Chet slapped Dylan across the face as his anger boiled over. "You're a pathetic loser. How could you not notice someone sneaking in?" he shouted.

Dylan stood up and fixed a fierce gaze on Liam. "Just a little bug flew in," he said in a low voice, Dylan turned to look at Chet and promised, "Mr. Smith, don't worry. I'll tear him limb from limb. You can enjoy a bloody feast!"

Chet nodded his head, pleased.

Dylan looked Liam up and down. His face was twisted with coldness and arrogance.

"Liam, it's okay that you messed with Ajax, but breaking into the villa uninvited and disturbing me? That's unforgivable! Gouge out your eyes and maybe I'll consider sparing your life!"

Chet looked at Liam without a hint of fear.

This man must have a death wish.

This was Chet's territory, and he had all the firepower he needed.

Not just to take down Liam, but hundreds or thousands of him.

Liam sneered at Chet's offer, and replied, "If you're willing to gouge out your own eyes, I might cut you some slack."

Chet's temper flared at Liam's insolence.

He feigned calmness and waved his hand with a sneer. "Dylan, let's show this punk what happens when you cross me! I want his body chopped into pieces and fed to the sharks!"

Ajax jumped in, "Hold on! Someone grab my phone and record this. I want to show those rich snobs in Salem how my boys take care of the lowlife that offended me!"

Liam shook his head in disgust and said, "Stop talking nonsense. Your breath stinks!"

He grabbed a plate from the dining cart, flicked his wrist, and hurled it towards Ajax.

Slap!

The plate spun like a Frisbee and hit Ajax's head with a satisfying smack.

The force knocked Ajax off his chair, sending him crashing to the floor. He rose to his feet, eyes burning with anger as he cursed at Liam. "Bastard, I will make sure that I wreck your life!"

Chet wasn't pleased with Liam's actions and bellowed, "Break the hand that threw that damn thing!"

"Yes, Mr. Smith!" Dylan replied, charging towards Liam. He pulled out a knife from his waist and aimed it at Liam's wrist.

His intention was clearly to chop off Liam's hand.

Chapter 274 Killing Them In Minutes

Liam dodged easily and swiftly twisted the man's wrist, causing it to snap.

Crack!

The captain winced in pain as his wrist bent at a strange angle. It had obviously been broken.

With his other hand, Liam snatched the knife from the man's grip and deftly sliced his throat in one swift motion.

A thin red line immediately appeared on the man's neck.

"Ah..." He stumbled backwards, clutching at his throat in disbelief and then fell heavily.

The other mercenaries watched in shock as their captain fell to the floor. The Black Spider had more than a hundred mercenaries on Hoiwa Island, but none of them were as strong as Dylan.

Dylan had never been defeated even if he had a dozen opponents at once.

However, even a person that powerful was no match for Liam!

The mercenaries suddenly aimed their pistols at Liam and stared at him, wary of his next move.

Ajax was terrified as he looked at the lifeless body as blood oozed out of it.

He leapt up, pointing at Liam and screamed, "What are you waiting for? Shoot him! Kill this bastard!"

But the mercenaries remained motionless.

They were all from the Black Spider, and Chet was their boss. Without their boss's instruction, they wouldn't act recklessly.

Ajax's arm froze in mid-air and his anger simmered.

Chet was also stunned by Liam's skill. He saw him as a big threat!

However, he kept a calm expression. The death of his skilled subordinate did not seem to affect him in the slightest.

Chet rose from his seat, clapping and chuckling as he praised Liam, "Wow, you're amazing! I have great admiration for people with exceptional abilities. Why don't you come work for me? I'll pay you a million dollars a year! Else... "

Chet paused for a moment, but Liam merely sneered and asked, "Else what?"

Chet glared at Liam, his eyes burning with anger.

"You made me lose one of my best men. Killing you outright would be too easy for you," he spat. "I'll lock you up in the dungeon, put chains around your neck and pull you out every day for my soldiers to fight you!"

Liam smirked. "You want me to work for you? You think you deserve that?"

Chet's face contorted with rage at Liam's insolence.

"Break his limbs but don't kill him!" he commanded his mercenaries.

Without a moment's hesitation, the mercenaries raised their pistols and fired at Liam's limbs.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Gunshots echoed throughout the living room.

This caused Ajax to cower under a nearby table.

But Liam was quick on his feet. He grabbed the body of the captain and used it as a shield. With a knife in hand, he lunged at the nearest mercenary.

Whoosh!

The sharp knife sliced off the soldier's head.

Without hesitation, Liam charged towards the dead mercenary with the shield of the captain's body. Snatching up the pistol that had been left behind, Liam swiftly spun around and fired!

Using his battlefield experience, great memory, and super high IQ, Liam was able to form a three-dimensional image in his mind.

He could naturally anticipate every possible move of the soldiers.

This incredible skill made him seem almost like a prophet.

Each of Liam's bullets found their mark, accurately striking the head of a mercenary.

The bullets were like magic, killing even those who were hiding in the shadows!

The massive shield of human flesh had effectively blocked out everything. Once Liam had exhausted the bullets in his pistol, he swiftly grabbed another gun and continued firing!

With the situation now under control and all the mercenaries defeated, Liam discarded the corpse he had been holding.

The living room was now littered with bodies.

Their eyes stared wide in death, and the floor was stained red with blood.

Liam removed the chef uniform he had been wearing.

Dressed in a suit, he stood atop the pile of corpses, with no blood stain, looking graceful.

Only Ajax, Chet, Tami, and the other women were alive in the living room.

They crawled out from under the table and surveyed the gruesome scene with mixed expressions on their faces.

Their initial disbelief slowly turned into terror. They felt like they were living through a nightmare.

The entire gunfight had lasted only a few minutes.

Liam could fire three shots in one second, each one resulting in a casualty. ②

"It can't be...It's impossible!" Ajax muttered in terror.

He was completely stunned by what he had just witnessed.

Liam's incredible ability to take out an entire team of mercenaries in minutes was beyond belief.

Was he even human?

Chet's eyes bulged in shock. He didn't even realize that the cigar in his mouth had fallen to the floor.

He swallowed hard and couldn't help but tremble.

Even in the Golden Triangle, where he was known for his dominance and disregard for human life, he had never encountered such a fearsome soldier.

In that moment, Liam appeared like a king who could control all living things.

Those women eventually regained their senses.

They were all terrified and they fell to the floor, weeping uncontrollably.

Liam casually tossed aside his pistol and pulled out a Desert Eagle from his waist. He sauntered towards the people, taking slow and deliberate steps.

This simple action caused a ripple of fear to run through the crowd once more.

Liam was actually armed!

This meant that he didn't need to pick up the pistols on the floor. He could easily take lives without breaking a sweat.

To them, Liam seemed to regard the fight as a mere game.

Ajax could no longer keep his terror at bay. His forehead was slick with sweat, and his body trembled uncontrollably.

Liam locked eyes with Ajax and flashed him a smile. He then sneered, "Do you still think that I am just a lowly citizen you can torture and kill?"

Chapter 275 Do You Regret It

As Liam inched closer toward him, Ajax started to panic. Waving his hands, he bellowed, "Get me out of here! Get me out of here this instant!" However, Tami, the woman in charge of pushing his wheelchair, had already collapsed to the floor. She was so weak that she could barely stand up.

After all, a few stray bullets almost grazed her body just now.

For the first time, Tami felt close to death.

As Liam got closer and closer, Ajax's fear increased exponentially.

Mustering whatever strength he had left, he tried his best to push himself away in the wheelchair.

However, there were corpses all over the floor which thwarted his attempts. Soon, the tires of the wheelchair became stuck amongst the corpses and the wheelchair toppled over instantly. With that, Ajax came crashing down onto the floor.

Ignoring the searing pain upon his face, he crawled away like a pathetic mutt with a broken leg as his crippled leg had not recovered.

However, before he could get far, a gunshot was heard.

Bang!

In that instant, Ajax felt a sharp pain upon his calf. He turned around and found that the cast on his leg had cracked open and his calf was bleeding.

Screaming in pain, he arched his body forward as he cradled his injured leg.

A satisfied smile appeared on Liam's face as he took in Ajax's pathetic state.

However, in the eyes of others, his smile looked extremely malicious.

Liam looked down upon Ajax in a condescending manner. As if concerned about the injuries of an old friend, his voice was incomparably gentle as he asked, "Does it hurt?"

Grimacing from the excruciating pain, Ajax turned around and begged

for mercy. "I'm sorry. I'm really sorry. Don't kill me. I don't want to die!"

Bang!

Another shot!

An extra wound appeared on Ajax's other leg.

"Argh!!! It hurts!"

Ajax couldn't bear it anymore. At the moment, his face was flushed as he let out a blood curdling scream. One could even see the throbbing veins upon his temples as his body protested against the torment.

Looking at this scene, Liam shook the Desert Eagle in his hand and said in an indifferent manner, "Does it hurt? That's exactly what I want. But the pain in your body is nothing compared to the pain in my heart! Because of you, my woman almost died in front of me! Do you know what I wanted to do at that time? I hate myself for not being able to protect her. I also hate those who hurt her to such an extent! I swore that I will make those people pay in the most painful way. I will make them taste the cruelest of punishments and experience the most agonizing pain of their life. I will make them regret everything they have done!"

At this moment, the fear of death had completely clouded Ajax's mind. Straining against his pain, he crawled toward Liam, while leaving a bloody trail in his wake.

He no longer cared about the dignity of his family. With tears all over his face, he begged for mercy. "Please, I can give you money! Don't kill me. Please just let me go."

Liam looked at Ajax in disgust and kicked him to the floor.

Following that, he produced a pair of nail clippers from his pocket and threw them toward Ajax. Then, with a cold voice, he said, "You know what I want, don't you?"

Since Julie's accident, Liam had kept this pair of nail clippers in his pocket.

All the while, he was waiting for this day to come.

Ajax's hands kept trembling as he held up the nail clippers. After a moment of silence, he crawled toward Tami.

Tami started to panic when she saw this. She kept retreating into the corner and shouted desperately, "Get away from me! You can't do this to me!"

Although Ajax was a cripple now, she didn't dare to fight back at all.

Not everyone had the courage to provoke the Seymour family.

There was a ruthless look upon his face, and the fear that he had nowhere to vent had turned instead into resentment.

His eyes were bloodshot as he laughed sinisterly. "Come over here, or I'll gouge your eyes out!"

Seeing as Tami was still retreating, Ajax became more furious. He roared, "Bitch, how dare you disobey me? Get over here!"

It was as if he could dispel all the fear and humiliation he had experienced with that single roar.

Chet's ability to climb to his current position in a place like the Golden Triangle demonstrated his resourcefulness.

Looking at the reactions of the two people, Chet instantly understood that Tami must have offended Liam.

With a sneer, Chet suddenly ran over and grabbed Tami's hair. Then, he forcefully dragged Tami toward Ajax.

"No! Let go of me! Let go of me!" Tami cried in pain. However, no matter how hard she tried to resist, she could not free herself.

Ignoring Tami's struggle, Chet raised his head and looked at Liam. In a fawning manner, Chet smiled apologetically and said, "This bitch has offended you, Mr. Hoffman. I'm willing to do anything for you."

At this moment, the drug baron no longer had the domineering arrogance he had had before.

In the face of death, Chet was just trying his best to survive.

Looking at the scene before him, Liam asked in a mocking tone, "Tami, do you regret it?"

Chapter 276 Scratching Tami's Face

When Tami heard Liam's cold voice, she immediately kowtowed and begged for mercy.

"I'm sorry. I know I was wrong. I'm not a human. I'm a beast. But I will never hurt anyone from the Fiber family again. Mr. Hoffman, I beg you. Please don't kill me. Don't ruin my face."

For Tami, the most important thing was her face.

Once her face was really scratched, she would lose everything.

However, Liam only laughed when he heard her begging.

He only had this kind of smile when he was on the battlefield.

It was a cold, ruthless, and cruel smile.

He looked down at her and questioned, "What about Julie? Did she also beg you when you scratched her face?"

Tami's heart skipped a beat when she heard Liam's question. Obviously, he was determined not to let her go.

She hurriedly cried and begged, "I was not myself at that time. Please forgive me. I am Julie's aunt. For her sake, please spare me."

Liam was stunned upon hearing these words.

Julie was Tami's niece, so he questioned Tami countless times why she could do such a cruel thing to Julie. But all he got was ruthless ridicule.

But now, how dare Tami mention she was Julie's aunt?

Liam clutched his stomach and laughed out loud. His laughter filled the entire living room.

He could say that this was the most ridiculous joke he had ever heard.

"You are Julie's aunt? Now you're saying that you are Julie's aunt?" Liam asked, wiping the tears from the corners of his eyes.

Tami was stunned. She had no trace of shame or self-blame on her face. There was only confusion.

She didn't understand why Liam was laughing. Did she say something funny? Tami said she was Julie's aunt, and it was true. What was wrong

with her words?

But Liam was not in the mood to talk to her anymore.

The coldness in his eyes returned. He turned to Ajax and shouted harshly, "What are you waiting for? Do it!"

When Ajax saw the look in Liam's eyes, he couldn't help but shiver in fear.

With a fierce look in his eyes, he quickly picked up the nail clippers and said viciously, "Tami, don't blame me."

Under Tami's frightened eyes, the sharp nail clippers got closer and closer to her.

In an instant, the skin on her face was torn open.

"Ahhh!"

Tami's scream resounded through the entire living room.

Tami covered her bleeding wound and struggled desperately, trying to break free from Ajax's grip.

But Liam didn't feel guilty at all. His eyes were still cold as ice, but his voice was gentle. "Does it hurt?"

However, the gentleness in his voice sounded so creepy that it made people's hair stand on end.

Everyone in the living room trembled involuntarily, feeling a chill down their spines. They didn't dare to look straight at Liam.

Tami knew that Liam was torturing her.

So she didn't dare to answer at all. She just covered her face with her hands and kept crying.

But Liam didn't intend to let her go. He shouted again with eyes wide open, "Answer me!"

Chet, standing on the side, stepped forward, pulled Tami's hair, and cursed, "Bitch, Mr. Hoffman is asking you. Answer him!"

Tami broke down and cried out loud, "It hurts! It hurts! Ahhh!"

When Liam saw this, he sneered, raised his phone, and played a video. It was the video of Julie's misery when she was abused in the Fiber family's villa.

In the video, Tami was laughing hysterically, cruelly, and abnormally.

"I've been wanting to do this for a long time. Cutting your face like this is like peeling a potato. It feels so great."

When Ajax and Chet heard Tami's words in the video, they couldn't help swallowing hard and looking down at Tami on the floor.

Damn! Tami was too cruel.

"Does it feel great? Then I'll enjoy the feeling too," Liam snapped and glared at Ajax.

Ajax shivered again, but he didn't dare to stop scratching Tami's face.

And every time Tami tried to dodge, Chet pressed her head hard.

No matter how hard she struggled, it was in vain. Her strength was no match for a middle-aged man.

For a moment, Tami's shrill screams reverberated around the living room.

However, no one pitied her.

After all, she also did this to Julie, who was her own niece.

At this moment, Ajax's heart was only filled with disgust and resentment.

It was all Tami's fault that he had suffered so much.

Liam looked at Julie on the screen of his phone again. His eyes were still cold, but his tears fell silently.

But he endured the pain in his heart and said hoarsely, "Julie felt pain at that time too. She is a kind woman. She always stays with me and trusts me unconditionally both in life and in the workplace. Her face is really beautiful, and it's her pride. But what did you do? You ruined her pride with your own hands. You even let people draw blood from her body and dig out her heart. You are her aunt, yet you are too cruel to her. Isn't it ridiculous? Shouldn't I laugh? Why were you so surprised that I found it very funny?"

Chapter 277 You Are Not Worthy

The people in the living room nodded in agreement with Liam's words. It all made sense to them.

They had shifted all the blame on Tami.

On the other hand, they felt pity for Liam.

Despite the pain he had caused them, they would always sympathize with the poor man.

Tami's face was a mess, covered in blood. She was lying on the floor, and unable to plead for mercy due to the excruciating pain she was in. After finishing his task, Ajax lay motionless on the floor with a pale face. His legs were seriously injured. He had lost too much blood, and the intermittent sharp pain on his legs made him nearly pass out.

The only thing keeping him alive was the fear of death.

Chet looked at Liam with a pleading gaze and spoke in a hushed voice. "Mr. Hoffman, it's all a misunderstanding. Even I was deceived by Ajax. That was why I sent my people to Salem."

Liam didn't answer Chet but instead gave him a sneer. He made a call to Annie and said, "Come over here and deal with the rest."

"Here I am!" Suddenly, the door of the living room burst open. It was Annie!

She had been watching the entire scene through a telescope.

The man in front of her had brutally massacred an entire team of mercenaries!

Annie's heart raced as she recalled Liam's earlier words.

Could it be true?

She stared at Liam with admiration!

She flipped her hair near her ear and asked, embarrassed, "Are you really King?"

Liam simply smiled faintly and gave her no answer.

Nevertheless, the silence was convincing enough!

By not denying it, Liam was acknowledging that it was the truth.

Annie's excitement soared. Without hesitation, she picked up her phone to contact her subordinates.

After about ten minutes, three trucks arrived outside the villa, each filled with a group of fishermen and fisherwomen.

They had dull faces and appeared honest. It would be difficult for anyone to believe that they were actually members of the Dark Night Organization even if they told them with their own mouth.

Fortunately, the chefs at the villa had already fled after hearing the sound of gunshots, so the group was able to enter with no obstruction.

When her people arrived, Annie's face lit up with joy. She proudly introduced them to Liam, saying, "I've spent a lot of time and energy on their growth. They are all results of my hard work. What do you think?"

Annie tilted her chin upwards as she eagerly awaited Liam's praise.

Liam smiled faintly and gave a nod of approval.

However, his focus was solely on finding a solution to the problem at hand.

Turning to Annie, he said with a serious tone, "Interrogate these people carefully and uncover the identity of the person behind this."

Annie quickly nodded and patted her chest in assurance. "I'm good at that. I promise to get to the bottom of this!"

she exclaimed, causing her two plump breasts to jiggle in excitement.

She ordered her people to move all the bodies into the trucks and said sharply, "Get them sent to the crematory and burned in the dead of night!"

Liam furrowed his brow at her command and voiced his concerns. "Crematory? Sending so many bodies to a crematory poses a high risk of exposure."

Annie flashed a sly grin at her idol's question and responded confidently, "The crematory is just a front. Actually, it's run by my people. You could say that the Dark Night Organization owns it!"

Liam was at a loss for words. How could his subordinate be so adept at managing and expanding the Dark Night Organization?

What a smart woman!

Chet's eyes widened at the mention of the Dark Night Organization.

He was petrified and completely taken aback!

Little wonder this man was so formidable!

It turned out that he was from that legendary organization!

He had been a drug trafficker in the Golden Triangle for years and had heard some stories about them.

The Dark Night Organization once appeared in Golden Triangle, taking out numerous notorious drug barons.

The Dark Night Organization also had a hand in some political upheavals in some smaller countries.

As Chet was being dragged away, he frantically yelled, "My name is Chet Smith, a drug trafficker in the Golden Triangle. I have some power and can be of use to you. Let me work for the Dark Night Organization, and I'll make you a ton of money!"

Annie gave him a look of disdain, and with one swift blow, she knocked out two of Chet's teeth. ①

She snickered, "You think someone like you can work for the man in front of you? You're not even worthy!"

Chet was nothing but a disposable pawn to Annie.

But Liam was a god in her eyes!

Chapter 278 Sexy Temptation

Afterwards, Liam instructed Annie to clean up the mess and headed back to the villa next door.

It was late at night, already past eleven o'clock.

When he returned to his room, he took a shower. After his shower, he noticed that his phone which was being charged on the bedside table had several missed calls.

He checked and saw that they were all from Julie.

Liam became worried as he wondered what could be so urgent that Julie needed to call him repeatedly.

"What could be wrong?" he muttered. He had informed her earlier that he had some business to attend to that evening.

So why had she called him so many times?

Liam called her back instantly.

His earlier murderous demeanor had completely disappeared and was replaced by tenderness.

With Julie, Liam was the typical caring and loving boyfriend he always was.

"I just wrapped up my work. What's the matter?"

Julie breathed a sigh of relief as soon as she heard Liam's voice. "I'm so relieved you're okay. I was worried sick," she said.

As soon as Liam heard the worry in Julie's voice, he asked again, "What's wrong?"

Julie began to explain in detail what she had seen on the news.

It was being reported on the news that Axe Security was being boycotted by the three great families, and that Liam would be boycotted, too.

Despite the concerning news, Liam remained calm and collected. "Don't worry. I've got this."

After exchanging a few more words of affection, they bid each other goodnight and hung up.

Meanwhile, Annie, who was guarding outside the room, had overheard everything.

What had happened earlier in the villa next door had already shaken her to the core.

Since learning about Liam's true identity, she had fallen hopelessly in love with him.

Annie had always pictured her idol as a man of immense strength and masculinity, cold and domineering like a true king.

But she just heard Liam's gentle and loving voice as he said goodbye to his lover.

Annie was completely shocked by the stark contrast. A wave of jealousy and envy swept over her as she thought about the woman who had managed to capture King's heart.

She muttered to herself, "I wonder what kind of woman could win King's heart!"

She was determined to meet this woman named Julie.

With these thoughts, Annie marched straight into Liam's room. She untied some straps on her bikini top, and purposefully exposed her cleavage.

Annie had always admired Liam. 📌

But now her feelings had transformed into adoration.

She continued to flaunt her cleavage in front of Liam, leaning over to give him a clear view of her ample breasts.

However, Liam acted like he was completely oblivious to Annie's suggestive behavior, as he was absorbed in reading the latest news about Salem on his phone.

Annie coughed a couple of times and tied her bikini straps before announcing confidently, "Everything's under control. I'll be interrogating Ajax and the others tonight, and I guarantee you'll be satisfied with the outcome."

Liam nodded and said coldly, "I see. You can take your leave now."

Annie was taken aback by her idol's indifference towards her.

He was nothing like the man who just spoke on the phone.

For a minute, Annie couldn't help but doubt her own charm as she looked down at her chest. ①

"Okay." She didn't dare to question him. She just gently walked out and closed the door.

For the members of the Dark Night Organization, King's words were law. Annie knew better than to go against his orders.

In the bathroom, Annie stripped off her clothes.

She stood naked in front of the mirror, examining herself closely. She ran her hands over her plump breasts and pinched her tight bottom.

She was slender, sexy, and had a perfect shape.

Living on Hoiwa Island all year round gave her a healthy tan, which accentuated her already stunning features. With her slim figure and baby face, she knew she could be any man's dream girl.

Annie gazed at herself in the mirror, gently touching her sexy red lips with her fingertips.

She was as stunning as a Miss World.

Confused, she whispered to herself, "I'm so hot and sexy. I was wearing a camisole bikini just now. Any normal man would have fallen for me. Why was he so unfazed and uninterested?"

However, she couldn't help but admire Liam even more.

In her heart, King should be exactly like this, so different from ordinary men.

Only a man like him could be Annie's Mr. Right.

Lost in thought, Annie couldn't help but feel a sense of remorse. "This man is so amazing. He must be looking for something different in a woman. I wonder if he prefers intelligent and skilled women or gentle and graceful women..."

For a moment, her heart was consumed with the kind of thoughts that girls experiencing their first love would usually have.

But these few days might be the only time she'd have to spend with King.

It was a once in a lifetime opportunity that Annie couldn't afford to let slip through her fingers.

Determined, she said to herself, "I've got to make King fall for me. It's now or never."

Annie slowly slipped into the bathtub filled with bubbles, the warm water enveloping her body. For a moment, every bubble on her skin seemed to reflect Liam's good-looking and cold face.

Surrounded by the endless bubbles, she felt her body relax and her face flush with excitement.

Annie couldn't help but hold her chest tightly. Her right hand slowly crept downwards, causing her body to quiver with anticipation.

As she fantasized about the feeling of being loved by Liam, the pace of her hand movement increased.

For a moment, the bathroom was filled with Annie's tempting moans as she gave in to her desires.

In the other bedroom, Liam had no idea he had just become Annie's latest obsession.

His gaze was fixed on his phone screen as he scrolled through the trending topics on the Internet.

The top three were all about him, and the clickbait titles only fueled his curiosity.

"He used to be the CEO of the Kingland Group and the founder of Funbuy. He was once worth billions but now he is just a normal guy?"

"Three extremely wealthy families unite against Liam. What did he do to get on their bad side?"

"Salem residents slam Liam's immoral character, and he's now blacklisted from all jobs?"

Liam's lips twitched into a wry smile as he read the articles and felt helpless.

Life had a funny way of turning things around. He now found himself at the mercy of the public's scrutiny again.

Chapter 279 The Head Of The Hoffman Family

Liam scrolled through the comments section, which was all about his drop in status and how the three families had boycotted him.

Most of the people were hurling insults at him, and there were all sorts of wild conspiracy theories.

Liam could easily tell that most of these people had been paid to smear his name.

Clearly, the three families had succeeded in manipulating public opinion against him.

As he read through the comments, he suddenly burst out laughing and said to himself, "They cursed so harshly and intentionally avoided mentioning the Hoffman family. It must be really hard for them."

It was obvious that even though Liam had been expelled from the Hoffman family, these so-called wealthy families were too afraid to mess with them.

Just as Liam was wondering what to do next, his phone rang. It was Theo calling.

On the other end of the line, Theo asked politely, "Mr. Hoffman, should we take down the news articles and warn the families in Salem?"

With a slight grin, Liam immediately declined, "I went to Salem to gain some experience. If I rely too much on my family's power, a lot of the people in the Hoffman family won't accept it. To convince everyone, I need to solve my problems perfectly on my own!"

Hearing Liam's determination to not give up, Theo let out a sigh and said with concern, "Mr. Hoffman, this is going to be tough for you."

Despite what Theo said, he was on Liam's side.

Being the heir of the Hoffman family was no easy responsibility.

Meanwhile, in the living room of the old Hoffman family's house, Theo ended the call and bowed to an old man.

This man was none other than Sergio, Liam's grandfather and the head of the Hoffman family.

Theo looked at Sergio and said respectfully, "He doesn't need our assistance."

Touching his beard, Sergio said in a gruff voice, "This kid likes to do things the hard way. Who knows when he'll come back! He has to come back to inherit trillions of dollars' worth of the Hoffman family's assets." Theo's lips twitched, as he didn't know what to say. Despite the servant and master dynamic between them, Theo and Sergio were more like brothers.

Both of them had been together since forever. Despite Sergio's gruff words, Theo could tell that he was filled with compassion, affection, and even pride for Liam.

After all, everyone could see just how exceptional Liam was.

He had made an impressive achievement with his online shopping application, Funbuy, which had quickly taken over half of Salem's online shopping market within a few months.

The news of its success even reached the capital, where Sergio proudly showed it off.

"Check out this app my grandson made all by himself. It's very good, right?"

This made the other wealthy families in the capital envious, and they urged their own grandchildren to put in work so they could develop an app like Funbuy.

Liam had become the talk of the town, and many rich young men in the capital hated him because of this.

Theo relaxed and went on, "The Lambert family is responsible for this incident. Liam's love life is not a smooth one. To me, none of these women are worthy of him!"

Sergio's countenance turned cold and he exuded an indescribable noble aura.

Even in his old age, Sergio still exuded a commanding presence, as though he had conquered numerous countries and ruled the world.

Bang!

Suddenly, he slammed his hand on the table.

He had seen everything the Lambert family had done.

Initially, he didn't think it was a big deal. After all, the more they oppressed Liam, the stronger he would become.

Sergio believed that a man's first thirty years of living had to be tough for a better future.

However, as Liam's grandfather, he felt guilty for suggesting such a cruel approach.

Sergio could still recall the times when Liam was a child and rode on his shoulders, pulling his eyebrows.

He loved Liam more than anything else.

With this thought in his heart, Sergio snorted and said solemnly, "He's been spending too much time with a woman from a low-class family. Liam has gone everywhere for her. I think he has fallen in love with her. But a woman from a small family isn't fit to marry into the Hoffman family. Even if Liam likes her, he can't do anything about it. At least, he should choose a woman from a family worth ten billion dollars to uphold our reputation."

After his statement, Sergio turned to glance at Theo.

As Sergio's long-time best friend, Theo found Sergio's stubborn and yet soft-hearted nature amusing.

But Theo just nodded and said, "I'll go to the Cortezs' house in Salem myself." ②

Liam had no idea about the conversation between the two of them.

The following morning, Liam woke up very early.

He was burning with the desire to solve the problem at hand and hurry back to Julie.

Annie stood next to him, dressed in a slim lady's suit. She looked sophisticated and smart.

Quite different from her usual sexy and casual style, she even wore glasses to make herself appear more serious.

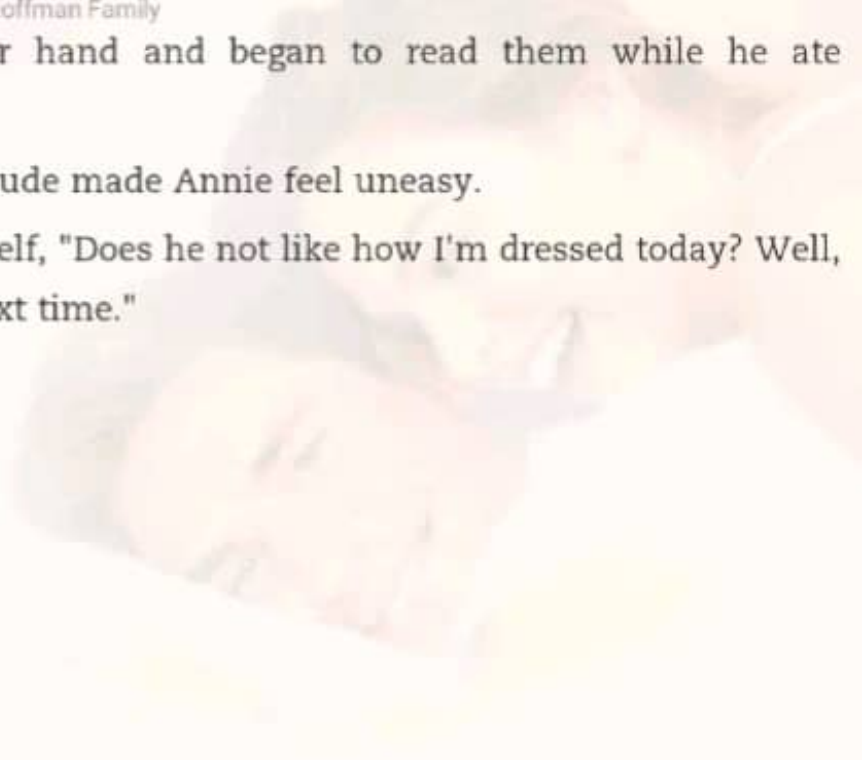
Liam was surprised by her sudden transformation. He muttered to himself, "What changed her?"

However, he didn't halt what he was doing. He simply took the

documents from her hand and began to read them while he ate breakfast.

This nonchalant attitude made Annie feel uneasy.

She muttered to herself, "Does he not like how I'm dressed today? Well, I'll just dress cute next time."



Chapter 280 Interrogating Ajax

The documents showed that Ajax's illegal businesses were mainly done in cooperation with Chet.

He didn't only cooperate with Chet in drug trafficking but also in auctions of human organs once a month.

And there were at least a hundred places like the illegal clinic in Salem.

As for the big shot in the capital, he hid himself well. Even Ajax and Chet didn't know his identity.

It was Onyx Ortega, the leader of another gang in Golden Triangle, who contacted Chet back then. He used the nickname Viper.

It was Ajax who asked Tami to tell Jarrod someone was looking for the heart with Julie's blood type in the black market.

Although the truth had surfaced, it could only be considered the tip of the iceberg.

The real big shot behind this had not been found yet. ③

So Julie was still in danger all the time.

With a solemn expression, Annie said in a cold voice, "Most of the information we got was from Chet and Tami. Ajax didn't want to say anything. He will only speak up when he sees you."

Liam nodded and said in a bone-chilling tone, "I will see him then."

Annie then led him to the basement of the villa.

The basement was twice the size of the villa. It had shelters, an armory, and an interrogation room.

At this moment, Ajax, Tami and Chet were shackled in the interrogation room. They lay on the floor, almost dying.

In his blurry mind, Ajax sensed that someone had come in. His chapped lips moved, and he murmured weakly, "Water... Water..."

His clothes were all tattered, and his body was covered with bright red wounds. They were obviously caused by whipping. ①

But when Liam saw Ajax's appearance, he didn't feel even the slightest

pity. Instead, the hatred and anger in his heart intensified.

After all, his woman almost lost her life when her heart was about to be dug out, and her blood was drawn.

According to Chet's record, many people died at the hands of the Seymour family. It was very shocking.

There were also countless people who were not recorded because they were secretly slaughtered.

Tens of thousands of families were destroyed, and lives had become their chips to earn profits.

So fiends like Ajax didn't deserve sympathy at all.

Liam looked at Ajax condescendingly and said coldly, "Wake him up."

Annie nodded. Then she took a basin of ice-cold water and poured it on Ajax.

Ajax was instantly drenched in cold water. He shivered and woke up in pain.

"Don't kill me. Please don't kill me. I don't want to die. Please..."

Ajax trembled all over. Although he hadn't fully regained consciousness yet, he already started begging for mercy.

It was not until the second basin of cold water was poured on him that he completely woke up.

When Ajax raised his head and saw Liam, he immediately crawled to Liam, cried, and begged for mercy. "Mr. Hoffman, I'm a beast. I'm really wrong. Please don't kill me. I really don't want to die. Please..."

Liam looked down at him and asked coldly, "I just want to ask you some questions. First, have you ever felt sorry for the living creatures you slaughtered? Have you felt sad when you sold human organs to earn profits?"

Ajax was stunned by these questions. Didn't these pariahs exist to make money for him?

Liam also came from a big family. Ajax didn't believe that the Hoffman family had no dark side.

But at this moment, for him to survive, Ajax naturally didn't dare to speak his mind.

He bit his lip, and tears instantly burst out of his eyes. He lowered his head and cried, "I am sad. I'm also very sad. I regret everything I did. Mr. Hoffman, please spare my life. I have money. My family has lots of money. You can go to my father, and you can definitely get billions of dollars in exchange for my life."

When he mentioned money, Ajax suddenly raised his head and looked at Liam sincerely.

For him, no one would refuse billions of dollars.

However, Liam just looked at him disgustedly and said in an even colder voice, "You're hopeless!"

Liam then turned around and was about to leave. But suddenly, Ajax burst into laughter behind him.

Ajax looked at Liam's back with a sinister smile and eyes full of resentment.

He sneered. With his mouth covered with blood, he said viciously, "Liam, you bastard! Do you think I'm really begging you to spare my life? Ha-ha! Regret? I was just kidding, you idiot! I killed too many people. I am invincible."

Ajax paused, smacked his lips with nostalgia, and sighed, "I still remember the day I took over this business for the first time. There was a three-year-old child on the ship, and he was very noisy. I was so pissed off that I personally poured the red-hot iron coal into his throat. His screams sounded so pleasant. They were music to my ears. Ha-ha!"

They even had a ship to transport people?

Indeed, every human life was nothing in Ajax's eyes.

Liam was shocked. His eyes narrowed, and they were filled with killing intent.

But the angrier Liam was, the more excited Ajax became.

Regardless of the pain, he stood up, stared at Liam, and laughed out loud. "Kill me! Kill me if you have the guts. Avenge them, Liam. Kill me to avenge them. If you let me survive, I swear to spend the rest of my life taking revenge on you for all the pain I've suffered today. I will rape Julie. I will ravage her body, record it, and post it online to let the world

appreciate it."

Ajax almost roared his last sentence.

He struggled desperately, trying to reach out and grab Liam in front of him. But he only dragged the iron shackles, constantly making the noise of collisions between steel and granite.

Watching Ajax acting abnormally, Annie couldn't stand it anymore.

She quickly drew out her pistol and aimed it at him. She was about to shoot the beast in front of her.

Chapter 281 Win King's Heart

But before Annie could pull the trigger, Liam raised his hand and stopped her.

Blue veins stood out on his arms, and the corners of his eyes were extremely red.

Obviously, he was full of killing intent, but he was restraining it.

He sneered and snapped, "If we kill him now, we will only make things easy for him. He doesn't deserve it at all. I want you to pour hot iron coal in his throat, ruin his face and fingerprints, and send him to the street to be a beggar. Ask someone to watch over him all the time. Remember to give him only one bun and one glass of water every day. I want him to live in hell for the rest of his life."

When Ajax heard this, he kept pulling the iron chains. He was like a madman, trying to grab Liam.

He roared unwillingly, "Liam, kill me now. I dare you to kill me if you have the guts."

Liam didn't want to talk to Ajax anymore, so he turned around again. But before he left, he said without looking back, "Remember? You once wanted to break my limbs and make me a beggar. Then you said you would use the money I got to drink and play with women. I just want to let you live such a life. How many families have you destroyed? Because of you, they have been living in hell. I will let you go to hell too to accompany them now."

"You son of a bitch! Liam, you're a loser! Even if I die, I swear not to let you go. I'll wait for you in hell," Ajax roared behind Liam.

It was a clear day, and the scorching sun shone brightly outside. As soon as Liam walked out of the villa, the sunshine poured on him.

But he didn't feel any warmth or light at all.

The darkness and cruelty of this world made him unable to feel any happiness at the moment.

Annie stood beside Liam respectfully and asked in a low voice, "What

about the rest of them?"

Liam was silent for a moment. Then he said, "Send Tami to the coal mine. She won't be able to return to Aperia for the rest of her life. Then get all the information about Chet's organization and let the people of the Dark Night Organization take it over."

It could be said that Chet's power in Golden Triangle was a good thing for Liam.

This was the only way for him to get in touch with the big shot in the capital, so the clues could not be destroyed.

Now that Ajax and Chet were both imprisoned, the current crisis had been temporarily resolved.

At present, Onyx from the Golden Triangle only knew that there was a suitable heart in Salem.

Although Onyx did not know the specific information of the heart, his existence was still a hidden danger for Liam.

At the thought of this, Liam turned to Annie and said, "Book the earliest flight for me. I'm leaving."

Annie was stunned upon hearing this. And her heart was filled with disappointment.

Although Annie looked enchanting in the sexy outfit she wore, she grew up in the Dark Night Organization, and she had never been in love.

But she must win King's heart immediately.

Annie looked at Liam and said, "Then I'll go back to my room to book a flight for you."

Liam nodded. He didn't say anything more.

As soon as Annie entered her room, she turned on her computer. But instead of booking a ticket, she started searching online.

She looked for some tips on how to win a man's heart.

Suddenly, so many answers came out.

It said that as long as a woman was charming, pure, and good at cooking, a man would fall in love with her.

But Annie shook her head. King couldn't be so superficial. These answers from the Internet were all wrong. The people who wrote these

didn't know how to love someone.

Suddenly, she saw a comment that had the most number of likes. It was a comment about how a woman conquered a man.

"All men like sex. So the best way to win men's hearts is to have sex with them and conquer them in bed."

After Annie read this comment, her eyes lit up. She had a deep understanding of it.

She used to play many different roles to complete the tasks given to her by the organization.

She had played the role of a successful businesswoman, a cold female president, an innocent princess, and even a prostitute in different places. During those times, there were indeed many men who wanted to have sex with her.

But at the thought of this, Annie couldn't help feeling nervous.

If someone asked her how she could conquer a man in bed, her answer was she couldn't.

She was wild, and she dressed sexily at ordinary times.

But at her age, she was still a virgin, and she was very conservative about sex. 📌

And when she thought of seducing Liam, her face flushed.

She touched her hot face and whispered, "Is sex really the best way to conquer a man?"

For a moment, Annie's face was burning, and she felt flustered.

How could she do it when she had never had sex with a man?

Chapter 282 Seducing

Annie had made up her mind and booked the last flight for the day, which was at nine o'clock in the evening!

She knew she had to make every second count in order to conquer Liam. She decided that before going to bed, they could have dinner together to create an intimate atmosphere!

She concluded within herself not to let the time at noon go to waste!

Annie searched through the wardrobe and found a sexy yoga suit which she changed into.

In an instant, she was transformed from the cold beauty into a fitness girl with fierce passion.

Admiring her stunning figure in the mirror, she clenched her fists and cheered herself up. She told herself that she had what it took to win King over.

After leaving the room, she headed straight to the balcony on the second floor.

She found Liam on the balcony leaning against a deck chair. There was a glass of whiskey on the table beside him. A hunk was lying next to his feet, staring blankly into space.

Liam was quietly flipping through a book. From his side view, he was looking even more handsome in the sunlight.

The scenery outside was beautiful. People walked by, other people walked their dogs, and the bright sunshine added to the picturesque scene.

The quiet and cool atmosphere made Annie's heart beat even faster.

She reassured herself that such a powerful and good-looking man like Liam belonged to her.

Annie calmed herself down, walked over to Liam calmly and placed a yoga mat beside him.

From Liam's viewpoint, he could see Annie's perfect shape.

Each graceful movement showed off her gentleness and charm.

This created an intimate atmosphere.

Annie's yoga suit was the perfect choice. It made her breasts appear more plump and round, and her buttocks more curvy and inviting, leaving men wanting to have sex with her.

The sun shone through the window, illuminating her two round buttocks. This created a tempting image that made it seem as if her yoga suit had been torn open, exposing her wheat-colored skin.

Sexy and charming, Annie was a perfect reflection of sensuality in that moment.

Each time she changed her yoga position, she would sneak a glance at Liam, hoping to catch his attention.

However, Liam looked oblivious to her presence. He continued to focus on his book, as if no one else was on the balcony.

Annie got frustrated when she realized that Liam was paying her no attention.

"Ahem!" she intentionally coughed loudly. Taking a deep breath, she made up her mind and aimed to make a move.

Her breasts had been partially revealed from her yoga suit, naughtily hanging in the air. The sunlight shone on her chest, making her sweat look golden.

Annie had learned this posture from a post on the Internet.

According to the woman who posted it, no man could resist this position.

If Liam was still uninterested after this, then he must have a serious problem in sex!

Finally, Liam raised his head and looked Annie's way.

There was no iota of lust in his eyes.

Annie was overjoyed with the hope of success as long as she was in his line of sight.

She believed that this move had worked! King was still a real man. She was convinced that he was attracted to her as a woman. She eagerly anticipated having sex with him in the evening to let him experience her irresistible allure.

This thought caused her to tremble with excitement.

However, Liam's indifferent glance caught her off guard.

He frowned and said, "Be silent as you practice your yoga. I hate to be disturbed while reading."

Annie was completely shocked by Liam's reaction. She stopped her yoga practice and stared at him in disbelief.

She then cursed under her breath. Damn it! Was Liam even a man? She had tried different methods. Why was Liam not attracted to her? Why was he more interested in reading that book?

That woman said online that a man who was uninterested even after this act must have a sexual issue. This made her entire body quiver again.

She had a bad feeling because she had never heard that King was with a woman. Perhaps he was not interested in women at all and preferred men?

Immediately the possibility of King's sexual orientation being different came to Annie's mind, her hope collapsed in an instant.

Why did God do this to her?

Meanwhile, Liam's frown grew deeper. "Have you purchased the plane ticket? What time is it?"

Annie was totally dumbfounded. She was in a daze until after Liam called out to her several times.

Her face went pale as she lowered her head and said in a hushed voice, "It's nine in the evening. I planned to show you around Hoiwa Island to have some fun. But, if you're in a hurry to go back, I can change the flight."

Liam pondered for a moment before shaking his head and saying, "No need. I can go around and buy some souvenirs for my girlfriend."

Annie couldn't help but shiver at his words.

"You're into women?!" she blurted out without thinking.

Taken aback, Liam replied, "How did you get the idea that I'm gay?"

Annie breathed a sigh of relief and patted her big chest. Thank goodness she still had a chance. Maybe that woman's tactics were all wrong.

However, Liam's next words caught her off guard. "So, were you trying



Chapter 283 Intimate Contact

Annie got flustered when Liam exposed her.

She used to effortlessly use her charm to handle any man to accomplish tasks.

But it was all an act.

Now, she was genuinely in love with a man, and she had no idea how to use the skills she had learned.

She looked lost and had no clue how to respond.

As Annie looked at Liam, her lips quivered, and her cheeks turned rosy. She summoned the courage to confess her love to Liam, but just as she did, Liam abruptly cut her off.

"I'm already in a relationship, and me and my girlfriend are getting married. Don't waste your time on me. Focus on your tasks and personal growth to excel in the Dark Night Organization."

Annie was shaken to the core and felt utterly let down.

She was overwhelmed with a mix of sadness and anger!

She lifted her chin and locked her eyes onto Liam as she retorted, "Who do you think you are? You're delusional! Plenty of men are interested in me. And by the way, I'm just doing yoga! Get over yourself, you narcissist!"

Liam shot Annie a mischievous grin, but said nothing.

However, in Annie's head, she felt his eyes roam over her body as if they were invisible hands. She felt like she was constantly being caressed.

This made her snort involuntarily. To prove her point, she had to continue the yoga.

But her heart was in turmoil, causing her movements to become awkward. Her leg suddenly had a cramp which made her groan in agony. Annie turned to look at Liam, hoping for some sympathy, but Liam was too engrossed in his book to notice her discomfort.

This only further irritated Annie. Liam was terrible with women and had no sense of empathy!

Noticing its master's unusual behavior, the dog became frantic and ran circles around Annie while barking incessantly.

The noise eventually grabbed Liam's attention, causing him to glance up at Annie. With a faint smile on his face, he set his book aside and sauntered over to her.

"I need a guide to show me around Hoiwa Island, and since you need my help, you'll be the guide,"

Liam said and then placed his hand on Annie's slender waist.

Annie's body felt like it had been jolted by electricity the moment Liam's skin made contact with hers. The sensation left her feeling weak and numb all over.

Liam's strong hand pressed and rubbed her leg. This sent a hot stream of energy through his palm and caused her leg to gradually recover.

As he worked his magic, Annie couldn't help feeling embarrassed and her eyes were filled with longing.

She had been to many massage shops before, but nothing compared to this top-level experience with Liam.

His fingers seemed to have a magical power that made her feel something she had never felt before. She couldn't help but whisper to herself, "If only I could be pressed and pinched by those fingers all the time..."

Immediately this thought came to her mind, Annie covered her mouth. Even she was stunned!

The intimate contact with Liam made her heart race.

She was experiencing a feeling that was different from mere admiration. It was a kind of affection, sweetness and hesitance.

That was how Annie felt when she ate her first strawberry. She couldn't get enough of it.

When she was taken in by the Dark Night Organization, she was just eight years old.

She remembered the day she was adopted vividly. The organization had

sent her a large basin of strawberries.

She carefully took a small bite of the strawberry.

The juice suddenly splashed in her mouth. The sour taste was just like the unease and trouble in her heart now.

But as she licked the surface of the strawberry, the sweet flavor gradually spread in her mouth.

She gently chewed on the strawberry, feeling the sweet and sour flavors mix. This made her cry tears of joy.

That sense of joy was similar to what she felt for Liam at this moment. Annie couldn't stop herself from gazing into Liam's eyes.

His eyes were deep and had the power to make her fall into endless lust.

As a gentle breeze blew, Liam's unique aura surrounded her.

It was like a sweet fragrance quietly embracing her.

Annie's mind was totally occupied by Liam.

She couldn't help but crave his closeness and the comfort of his strong embrace.

Her heart raced faster as she gazed at the handsome man before her and her face flushed with shyness.

Liam, unaware of her thoughts, prepared to leave as he was done with the treatment.

However, before he could stand, Annie suddenly grasped his wrist.

Annie then pressed her plump chest tightly against his chest.

He smelled the distinctive fragrance of her hair.

The smell was refreshing and exciting.

Liam looked at the blushing but bold woman before him and nervously asked, "What are you doing?"

Annie looked shy and her lips trembled due to nervousness.

She responded in a shaky voice, "Didn't you just say that I was seducing you?"

She bent her head and kissed him on the lips with her red lips!

Chapter 284 Closer

As Annie kissed Liam, she felt something was off.

It felt weird!

All she could feel was a wet, slobbery tongue constantly licking her lips.

Why was Liam so eager?

Annie was excited that he had finally given in to her sexiness after seeming cold and distant just moments ago.

Just as she was about to revel in her triumph, she heard the sound of a dog.

Suddenly, Annie's eyes snapped open. She didn't see Liam's handsome face, but the excited dog.

The dog was wagging its tail and panting with its tongue out.

Annie was stunned. She felt like she was going to break down!

Did she just give her first kiss to a dog?

Annie quickly stood up and raised her head.

Standing behind the dog, Liam looked at her in disgust and shook his head.

She was fuming with anger as she clenched her fists and thought of the sheer number of people who wanted to kiss her. Liam had the perfect opportunity and didn't take it. What a shameless man!

Looking at her, Liam stood up and said coldly to her, "I'm sorry. I won't kiss every woman I meet."

This made Annie both shy and infuriated!

She couldn't take it anymore and forgot that the man standing in front of her was King. She snorted and shouted, "You should be grateful that I even considered kissing you. You'll regret it one day!"

Then she stood up, blushed and turned away!

Liam turned to the dog and said, "You lucky dog!"

Hearing this, Annie stumbled and nearly fell.

On the other hand, Liam simply stroked the dog's head without any

lustful thoughts.

Even though Annie was just as beautiful as Yolanda and Julie, Liam had come to realize that beauty was only skin deep. He understood that no matter how beautiful someone's body was, it could never compare to a good soul.

Therefore, he only had eyes for Julie and could not love any other woman.

No matter how beautiful other women were, Liam was not impressed.

He couldn't help but miss Julie.

He made a mental note to bring her even more gifts and surprises when he returned to her.

Julie had mentioned wanting to taste the delicious special products of Hoiwa Island during their chats.

He was pleased to know that he could make her wish come true.

The thought of Julie's beaming smile after receiving the surprises made him chuckle.

After lunch, Annie wore a long face and took Liam around Hoiwa Island. They stopped by famous scenic spots on Hoiwa Island, and bought a lot of special products.

Liam took a bite of a freshly baked biscuit.

The biscuit had a slightly bitter taste, but it was so delicious that it made people want to eat more and more.

Liam's face lit up with joy as he declared, "Julie must love this biscuit!"

Annie rolled her eyes in disgust at Liam's constant mention of Julie and grumbled, "Geez, you've talked about Julie nonstop. It's getting old."

They both strolled and had fun until the sun began to set. Then, they searched for a unique restaurant to eat dinner.

Liam felt overwhelmed as he perused the menu, unsure of what to order.

Although he had traveled extensively, he was clueless about the culinary delights of Hoiwa Island.

Annie noticed Liam's expression, snatched the menu away, and confidently ordered a plethora of dishes.

Soon enough, dish after dish was brought to the table, leaving Liam in awe.

"Are you sure you can finish all of this?" he asked.

Annie sat opposite Liam. She was still peeved about what had happened this morning and retorted with annoyance, "I've been your tour guide all day. I'm exhausted. The least you can do is treat me to dinner."

Liam was taken aback by Annie's reaction but relented, saying, "Okay. It's really the least I can do."

After spending the day together, both of them got along well and there was no longer a hint of awkwardness.

Their relationship grew even closer especially after the comical mishap earlier that day.

As they strolled along the road after dinner, the sky was painted with shades of orange and pink from the setting sun.

"Will you miss me when you're gone?" Annie gazed at Liam with a hopeful expression and asked.

He nodded with a small smile. "Of course I will. You're my first friend here!"

"Just friend?"

Annie's heart sank at his response.

But she tried to keep her spirits up as she didn't want to ruin their last moments together. She put on a smile and said, "Even though you're a bit dull, you're a great person. I accept you as my friend! And if anyone ever messes with me in the organization, I'll tell them that King of the Dark Night Organization is my friend!"

With those words, all remaining grudges between the two dissolved and they laughed together.

Suddenly, Liam's expression turned serious as he furrowed his brow. He couldn't shake the feeling of unease and apprehension that washed over him.

Liam's gut instinct told him that he was being targeted by a sniper rifle. Before he could even react, a sexy figure stepped forward and shielded him.

Bang!

The sound of a gunshot rang out, and Liam's ears were filled with a deafening silence as he watched in horror.

He narrowed his eyes and saw that Annie had taken the bullet and the left side of her chest was now bleeding profusely.

Blood splashed and sprayed onto his face.

The blood covered his left eye.

"No!" Liam shouted without thinking. He felt a deep sadness well up inside of him.

Annie's eyes glazed over and she looked stunned and incredulous.

She slowly slumped towards Liam, her face twisted in pain.

As Liam looked up, he noticed a bright light shining on a building in the distance.

Liam's eyes narrowed with a fierce determination. His battle instincts kicked in, and he knew it was the reflection of a sniper rifle's scope.

The next moment, a bullet hurtled through the air towards Liam's head.

He was about to be shot.

Chapter 285 Sniper

Liam tightly held Annie in his arms and sprinted for cover.

The sound of gunfire rang continuously in their ears.

The bullets were whizzing past them, grazing their skin and hitting the ground with a thud.

He pushed himself to the limit and finally made it to a pickup truck with a surfboard attached to it. He used the surfboard as a shield against the relentless attack.

Bang! Bang!

A bullet pierced through the gas tank of the truck with a loud bang.

The pungent smell of gasoline filled the air.

This caused Liam's nose to twitch in disgust. He cursed under his breath, "Damn it!"

Liam instantly picked up Annie and took some steps back.

Suddenly, the tank erupted into flames.

Boom! Boom!

This sent shock waves through the air and caused a deafening explosion.

The blast shattered the car into countless pieces, which flew in every direction, some heading straight for Liam.

He would have been able to dodge the bullets with ease if he was alone.

But he couldn't leave the woman in his arms behind. She risked her life by taking a bullet for him and he couldn't abandon her now.

He gritted his teeth and held the woman tightly in his arms. His arms and legs had been stabbed by the fragments.

The smell of burning gasoline filled his nostrils, mixed with the smell of debris in the air.

For a moment, Liam winced in pain as the blue veins on his body bulged.

He was in so much pain.

But he knew that their survival was more important than the pain he felt.

He had to find a new cover quickly before they were both shot down by the sniper.

The sniper was obviously an expert marksman.

He shot with deadly precision.

If this person was a member of the Dark Night Organization, he might also be among the third rank.

Liam gritted his teeth. He felt a surge of killing intent rising in his heart.

The body in his arms was growing colder by the second.

And he couldn't bear the thought of losing Annie, his first friend in this place.

"Stay with me. Don't close your eyes," Liam said in a hoarse voice, pressing down on Annie's wound with all his energy.

Annie's eyelids fluttered slightly, and Liam felt a glimmer of hope. Her face was as white as a sheet, and she looked so frail and weak.

Annie gazed weakly at Liam, forcing a smile despite the pain she was in.

She then tried to speak. "It's funny... This is the first time you've hugged me, but I feel so cold in your arms..."

Annie struggled to speak and then closed her eyes slowly.

For a moment, Liam looked scared. He yelled, "Don't sleep. I beg you. Don't sleep! We just became friends. You can't leave so soon. I won't allow you to die!"

But Annie's hand dropped limply, and Liam knew that she couldn't hear him anymore.

Liam was seething with anger and his palms were throbbing with blue veins. Ever since what happened at the illegal clinic, he had vowed not to let any woman bleed for him again.

But here he was, faced with the harsh reality of it all.

His heart was filled with wrath, causing his face to twist in a vicious manner.

Memories of the past two days spent with Annie flooded his mind. He realized that no matter how much Annie had annoyed him at some point, the moment she was willing to lay down her life for him, she had become his most important friend.

Annie had already taken up a significant spot in his heart.

He was determined to save her and obliterate those who had harmed her.

With eyes now bloodshot, Liam scooped up Annie in his arms again and dashed away at lightning speed.

He felt as though her delicate body was weightless as he ran.

With each step he took, the fragments of the car in his legs went in deeper which only worsened the excruciating pain he was already in.

Despite this, he soldiered on, cautiously seeking cover with Annie in his arms. This slowed down his dodges and he almost fell.

Typically, it was not possible for a sniper to harm Liam in the slightest.

Despite his extraordinary abilities, Liam felt the weight of the injury on his legs and the unconscious body of Annie in his arms.

He let out a primal scream, unable to fathom leaving Annie behind or allowing any further harm to befall her.

Puff!

Another bullet whizzed by and landed with a thud in the sand next to Liam's feet.

The sniper seemed to be mocking him. That person had intentionally shot sideways!

Liam had no choice but to keep moving and searching for cover.

The rocky terrain was littered with debris from the sniper's relentless attacks.

Liam stumbled and fell.

But he did his best to shield Annie from the impact of the fall.

Bang!

The bullet came as Liam expected.

But to Liam's horror, it had hit Annie's left leg. The sniper had not been aiming for him intentionally.

The sniper continued to rain down bullets on Annie's defenseless body, hitting her right leg, right hand, and left shoulder blade.

Liam felt her trembling as she was hit.

His anger boiled over at the sadistic torture inflicted upon her.

If he ever caught the perpetrator, he vowed to make them pay dearly for their cruelty.

Meanwhile, the loud explosion of the car drew many people's attention.

A kind-hearted middle-aged man attempted to offer aid to Liam, but was tragically shot in the chest by the sniper.

The bullet had been aimed for Liam's heart.

And the man had paid the ultimate price for his selfless bravery.

"Stay away from me!"

Liam roared.

The people behind this attack were ruthless and bloodthirsty.

They were willing to take any life to achieve their goals.

Anyone who dared to help him would be putting themselves in mortal danger.

They would get killed.

Chapter 286 Rescued

"Stay away from me!" Liam bellowed.

The crowd of onlookers froze in fear. Their eyes were filled with sympathy. They watched as if they were witnessing a public execution. Suddenly, the wail of police sirens and ambulance horns came from a distance.

Someone had already called for help.

As soon as the police heard about the severity of the situation, they dispatched officers and an ambulance from the nearby hospital.

The two police cars screeched to a halt beside Liam, shielding him.

Six officers swiftly emerged from the vehicles, drew their pistols, and circled around Liam with tense apprehension.

The crowd held their breath as the police maintained their guard for a nerve-racking five minutes. When no more gunshots rang out, the officers finally breathed a sigh of relief.

Some of the officers grabbed their walkie-talkies and called for the ambulance to come to the scene.

After the traumatic event and such a lengthy delay, Annie's complexion had become even paler, and her breathing was shallow and feeble.

Liam's voice trembled with worry. "Hang in there, Annie. Don't sleep!" He cradled her gently, placed her carefully onto the stretcher and accompanied her into the ambulance.

Although the medical staff saw a composed Liam, only he knew that he was holding back his fierce rage.

Immediately they entered the ambulance, the doctor began administering emergency treatment to Annie.

"This bullet went through her left lung and lodged in the bone. We need to stop the bleeding and give her oxygen immediately!" the doctor exclaimed urgently.

The nurse noticed Liam's injury and attempted to treat him, but he took the scalpel and disinfectant solution from her and began to treat

himself.

Seeing this, the nurse gasped. "Wait, we need to anesthetize you first!" However, Liam had already lowered the scalpel to his shin, slicing off some burned flesh.

The intense pain made his veins bulge, and sweat poured down his forehead.

But even so, his hand was steady.

Within five minutes, Liam performed self-debridement, stitching, and bandaging his injury with impressive composure.

The medical staff were all left in awe.

This man cut his own flesh without flinching.

He was a true fighter.

But Liam had no time to dwell on their reactions. He immediately turned his attention to Annie, who lay motionless. She was in a coma. Annie was briefly examined. Despite her critical condition, her years of training under the Dark Night Organization had given her exceptional physical and mental resilience.

There was still hope for her to stay alive.

Liam believed that if he could perform an operation on himself, he could save her.

At the moment, the most important thing was a safe environment to operate in.

While in the ambulance, Liam reached for his phone and dialed Theo's number. He recounted the whole ordeal of the sniper rifle attack.

Theo's heart skipped a beat at the news of the danger Liam had faced and outrage filled his heart.

"I will immediately call all the members of the Dark Night Organization on Hoiwa Island to the hospital to ensure your safety. Mr. Hoffman, don't worry. I'll find out who is behind this!"

After ending the call, Liam heaved a deep breath.

He was certain that the killer had spared him not out of mercy, but out of sheer arrogance.

The killer had teased him, as if he was nothing but an insignificant ant.

This thought filled Liam with a fierce determination for revenge.

As the greatest member of the Dark Night Organization, the code name 'King' was forged from the blood and bodies of his enemies.

It was a symbol of absolute power and respect.

Anyone who dared to cross him would suffer a most gruesome fate.

Liam clenched his fists and swore to himself, "You bastard, you will regret ever crossing me!"

When the ambulance arrived at the hospital, a large crowd had already gathered at the gate.

The director and all the doctors who were not busy came to the gate to welcome Liam.

To make things easier for Liam, Theo had immediately bought the hospital.

Now, Liam was the new boss.

As Liam stepped out of the ambulance, the director rushed up to him eagerly. "Mr. Hoffman, we have the best surgeon in the hospital on standby. He'll do everything he can to save your friend!"

Liam's expression remained icy cold as he replied firmly, "No, I'll be performing the surgery myself."

His words shocked everyone.

The doctors were skeptical and sneered in their minds.

Liam looked so young.

He was just a young man from a wealthy family.

Most of them believed that he knew nothing about medicine.

Most importantly, the surgery Liam was about to perform was extremely complex. Even the doctors weren't confident in their ability to pull it off.

Chapter 287 Hoff Appeared Again

Just then, an elderly doctor with gray hair walked out.

He was the skilled surgeon who was recommended by the hospital director to perform the operation.

Liam, being young and arrogant, rubbed the doctor the wrong way. He was extremely displeased and shouted angrily at Liam, "Don't think that just because you own the hospital, you can do whatever you want. You are putting the patient's life at risk!"

Hearing the old doctor's outburst, the other responsible doctors joined in.

"Surgery is not a game. It's not just for rich men like you to mess with!"

"You're so young. You may have medical skills, but without any operating experience, you're in over your head!"

"We will never leave a person's life in your hands!"

The hospital director was embarrassed. Liam was the new owner of the hospital, but the other doctors were experienced.

The director looked at Liam, feeling uneasy, and pleaded, "Mr. Hoffman, please don't act impulsively. Let the professionals handle this complex surgery."

Liam was solely focused on saving Annie as quickly as possible and was not in the mood to explain anything.

Without further ado, he rushed inside, muttering coldly, "Age doesn't determine medical skill. I'll take responsibility for any result."

Immediately he said this, the old doctor scolded, "Who do you think you are? How many surgeries have you performed at your age? Can you possibly be more experienced than me? If the patient dies, how can you take responsibility for it?"

However, Liam was in no mood to entertain the old doctor's questions. He followed the transport stretcher into the operating room and slammed the door shut behind him.

Seeing this, the old doctor became furious and stomped his feet. "Alas! The hospital is doomed now that he has taken over!" he exclaimed.

Other doctors joined in, intending to resign.

They entered the medical field to save lives, and they could not bear to see someone take human lives so casually.

Inside the operating room, Liam paid no attention to the people outside. His focus was solely on the operation.

Three hours later, the light outside of the operating room finally turned from red to green.

Liam stumbled out of the room and collapsed on a chair in the corridor. He was drenched in sweat and completely exhausted.

After resting for a while, Liam regained some of his strength. He then bent down and lifted his trouser.

His leg was bleeding through the bandage he wrapped around it in the ambulance.

Feeling the blood seeping into his shoe and sock, he quickly removed them.

His sock was soaked with blood and stuck to his shoe.

He had been on his feet for three hours straight during the operation without any break despite his recent injury.

Although he had a sturdy build, his leg was hurting.

The hospital's director and doctors rushed towards him from the monitoring room.

They were amazed by the successful operation that they had just witnessed.

It was remarkable.

The fact that it was done by a young man of only twenty-eight years old was unbelievable!

The director's face lit up with excitement as he said, "Mr. Hoffman, your medical skills are out of this world! Sorry about what happened earlier, but could you give us a lecture and share your expertise with us?"

The old doctor behind him felt even more embarrassed.

He squeezed his way out of the crowd, bowed to Liam, and said loudly, "Mr. Hoffman, I'm sorry for insulting you!"

Liam simply leaned back in his chair and nodded silently, showing that he wasn't bothered by it.

Then the old doctor cautiously asked, "Mr. Hoffman, have you heard of a famous international doctor named Hoff?"

The other doctors immediately joined in the conversation at the mention of the name.

"Hoff is a highly skilled doctor! He has performed so many difficult surgeries with great success!"

"Yes. The videos of his operations have circulated in all the major hospitals. He is highly respected by everyone."

"I've heard that Hoff has a special talent. His hands are like robots, incredibly precise and fast!"

He had the ability to find the exact location of a wound and perform surgeries quickly and flawlessly so his surgery videos were regarded as teaching materials.

Hearing the name, Liam tried hard to put on a smile.

Hoff was actually his alias back when he worked at a famous hospital. He wanted to learn medical skills before he went to the battlefield so he studied medicine and surgery. He had also successfully performed several difficult operations.

He could vaguely recall that even members of the royal families had sought out his expertise.

They praised his skills, saying that every operation he performed was flawless.

The hospital director even asked if they could use his surgery videos for educational purposes on social media.

Liam didn't really pay much attention, but he did notice that at least one million dollars of the copyright fee was transferred to his private account each year.

In fact, he used the name Hoff not only in the medical field, but also in other industries.

It was just a name, and he didn't want to bother coming up with different names for each industry.

Of course, he knew that the medical and racing industries were completely different and no one would link the two powerful personas. Becoming the best in any industry took an incredible amount of effort and dedication.

Some people might need a lifetime to reach the top. Even those who were naturally talented.

It was simply unbelievable that Liam could be a peerless genius who excelled at everything he did.

His grandfather had once said that he was the most talented and intelligent person he had ever met in his life.

That was why Liam's grandfather liked him so much and held him in such high esteem.

Liam was likely to elevate the Hoffman family to even greater level.

He was in no mood for the doctors' discussions.

So he said politely, "I've never heard of him. Can you bring some medical tools here? I have to take care of this wound."

That was when everyone saw the severe wound on his left leg!

Everyone looked terrified.

Liam stood there for three hours straight, despite the serious injury on his leg. He had just finished performing a complicated surgery. It was unbelievable that he was still not trembling in pain.

Was he even human?! ③

He endured such excruciating pain to save someone's life.

Most people would not have been able to stand for even a minute in his situation, let alone perform a three-hour surgery. ①

Such a noble doctor was worthy of admiration!

Everyone's view of him took a drastic turn. They all respected and thought highly of him!

The old doctor hurried over and personally brought the tools with courtesy.

He didn't act like an experienced expert but more like an intern who had just joined the hospital.

Liam took the tools from him and said casually, "Thank you."

The doctor waved his hand and responded excitedly, "No, you're welcome!"

Even if Liam did not admit that he was Hoff, his medical skills and ethics had won over everyone present.

Chapter 288 The Bloody Dungeon

Seeing Liam's extraordinary bandaging technique, the director begged again, "Mr. Hoffman, please spare some time to teach us."

Liam thought that since this hospital was now the property of the Hoffman family, if the medical skills of the doctors here improved, it would be beneficial to the people of the Dark Night Organization. They could get the best treatment.

So he promised, "Okay. I'll come again when I have time to teach all of you."

It was only then that everyone felt satisfied. And they knew that Liam wanted to rest, so they all left consciously, leaving the old doctor to assist him.

The old doctor studied medical skills with great concentration. But when he was in front of people with better medical skills than him, he was very humble.

However, this kind of personality made him rather stubborn. So he insisted on staying to help Liam.

Liam was rendered speechless for a moment. Then he said, "Okay, you can stay here."

He thought it was indeed safer to have an old doctor take care of Annie. Since Liam was in a wheelchair, the old doctor pushed him all the way. He only left quietly when Liam entered the ICU ward.

Annie lay on the hospital bed. Her face was still pale, and her eyes were closed. It was as if there was no sign of her waking up.

Even if the operation was successful, it didn't mean she was already out of danger. So she needed a doctor to accompany her all the time to monitor her condition.

Liam looked at the weak Annie on the bed. He couldn't help but think of the moments they spent together.

His photographic memory made him suffer unforgettable pain every time he remembered those moments.

A bitter smile crept across his face. He murmured to himself, "I don't know whether the photographic memory is a curse or a blessing from God."

Under the setting sun, Annie confessed that they were good friends. And as soon as she said this, she immediately blocked the bullet for him.

The moment the blood splashed on Liam's eyes, everything that happened in the past replayed in his mind uncontrollably, giving him so much pain.

He was overwhelmed by complicated emotions, feeling that all the good things were instantly destroyed.

The feelings of astonishment, grief, anger, and despair were all intertwined in his heart. And these made him almost suffocated.

In the end, these complicated emotions turned into extreme anger and killing intent.

Liam could no longer control himself. His eyes were bloodshot, and blue veins stood out on his forehead. He looked more and more ferocious.

He gripped the armrest of the wheelchair so tightly that his knuckles turned pale.

He closed his eyes for one minute.

Two minutes...

Five minutes...

Ten minutes had passed before the silent emotions in his heart finally came to an end.

Liam took a deep breath to suppress his impulses. Then he regained his calm.

However, the coldness in his eyes when he opened them remained.

He held Annie's hand and said in a hoarse voice, "Don't worry. I promise to catch the people behind this, and I will let you deal with them yourself."

After saying this, he turned his wheelchair around and pushed it out of the ward.

As soon as Liam's wheelchair got out of the ward, he saw a group of men and women in fishermen's clothes anxiously guarding the corridor.

They were very ordinary people on Hoiwa Island. But now, they exuded a terrifying aura.

When they saw Liam, their faces were still cold. But they bowed their heads respectfully and greeted, "Mr. Hoffman..."

These people didn't know that Liam was King. Only Annie did.

So in their eyes, he was just a temporary commander. Annie was still the leader they respected the most.

And their leader was assassinated by a sniper and almost died. This kind of thing made them feel a manic killing intent.

A man with short spiky hair walked out of the crowd and introduced himself. "Mr. Hoffman, my code name is Jaxtyn. I'm Annie's assistant."

Liam nodded at him and said coldly, "Annie is fine for the time being. For now, I want all of you to search the entire Hoiwa Island and find that sniper. Take that person here."

"Okay, Mr. Hoffman. We will immediately execute your order."

As everyone shouted in unison, their eyes were full of killing intent. ④

At this time, Jaxtyn took the opportunity to come forward and said, "Mr. Hoffman, when you were ambushed, Ajax and the others in the dungeon were taken away. They also left a phone for you. Please have a look."

When Liam heard this, a sense of madness surged in his heart. "Damn it!"

He quickly took the phone from Jaxtyn and opened it. There was only a video in it.

When Liam played the video, Ajax's face suddenly appeared on the screen. He was still in the dark and damp dungeon at the time.

The crisscross wounds on this face caused by the knife looked ferocious and terrifying. And when it suddenly appeared on the screen, the hearts of the people watching the video were filled with fear.

Ajax stared at the screen excitedly. Although his throat was red and swollen because of the iron coal, it also made him look crazy.

Then the camera was turned, showing the entire wall of the dungeon. It was covered with red words.

It said, "Liam, do you remember what I said? Soon, the video of me

raping Julie will be released to the whole world. Remember, I will keep my promise. You just wait for me." ①

Ajax pointed at the bloody words on the wall, then at himself. He wanted to say something, but he could only make a hoarse cry.

His throat was completely destroyed, so his voice sounded extremely harsh.

Upon realizing that he couldn't speak normally, Ajax stomped his feet and roared angrily.

After shouting, he seemed to be exhausted. He crawled on the ground with tears all over his face, choking up with sobs.

But in just a few seconds, his sobs suddenly turned into ferocious laughter.

Then he roared harshly with difficulty, "Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The word "kill" sounded very sharp, piercing through people's ears. But it was incomparably clear.

And because of his messy appearance and crazy expression, he looked like a lunatic.

Chapter 289 Gorgeous Killer

The moment Liam saw the words written in blood, his pupils shrank.

An overwhelming urge to kill welled up inside of him.

It was at this moment that Liam completely lost control.

He wanted to kill all of them!

His cold, murderous rage seemed to sweep across the entire room, plunging the temperature down to subzero degrees. Everybody present couldn't help but tremble at his murderous intent.

"Move!" His ferocious tone sent shivers across everybody's spine, terrifying the living daylights out of them.

The members of the Dark Night Organization didn't dare to dawdle as they quickly moved out to carry out his orders.

Be it for Liam's or Annie's sake, they had to find the sniper and Ajax as soon as possible!

Slowly, Liam calmed down and returned to Annie's side. Following that, he closed his eyes for a rest.

About half an hour later, a beautiful woman in a nurse uniform entered the room and said in a gentle voice, "The patient needs some antibiotics."

Liam nodded expressionlessly.

Just when she was about to inject the drug into Annie's infusion tube, her wrist was caught in Liam's tight grip.

The short-haired nurse endured the pain and forced a smile. She asked in confusion, "Sir, what's the matter?"

Liam sneered and said, "When I first came here, I memorized all the faces of the medical staff here. I don't remember a female nurse as beautiful as you. Moreover, nurses don't wear high heels!"

As soon as the woman entered, Liam found it peculiar that the woman's hands were full of calluses. In addition to that, her steps were steady and confident. She did not seem like an ordinary person at all!

In an instant, all traces of fear vanished from the woman's face. Loosening her grip on the injector, she caught the falling injector with

her other hand and stabbed it straight toward Liam's eye.

With a snort, Liam kicked the woman in the abdomen with his uninjured right foot!

"Slam!"

The nurse was sent flying and crashed into the wall. In that instant, she coughed up a mouthful of blood.

This kick alone had sent her flying five meters away!

Enduring the pain in her abdomen, she quickly pulled out a pistol from her waist and pointed it toward Liam. Then, she pulled the trigger.

However, her pupils shrank in pain the moment she made her move as a sharp pain swept over her body.

"Argh, Argh!"

A blood-curdling scream was heard in that instant.

Unbeknownst to her, Liam had appeared before her and broke her wrists within a split second.

Her face contorted in pain, which made her look all the more ruthless.

Biting her lip against the pain, she kicked Liam's abdomen with her right leg.

The moment her foot shot out, a metallic glint was seen at the tip of her stiletto.

A blade!

It turned out that she was hiding a blade in her stiletto!

He would definitely die if he were to be pierced by it.

Although the woman had slender legs and smooth skin, it was difficult for Liam to fantasize about her.

In that instant, his killing intent became all the more apparent.

Grasping the ankle of woman's right leg directly with one hand, he yanked her toward him and dislocated her right femur.

He did the same with her left leg.

Crack!

The next moment, both her legs were splayed apart as she crumbled onto the floor in a heap.

"Ugh!"

The searing pain from her dislocated limbs caused her to scream in pain again.

Flushed with anger, she bellowed, "Bastard, I will castrate you for this!"

Liam smirked. "Bastard?"

He pushed the wheelchair forward and ripped her collar open.

In that instant, her ample breasts were put on full display.

However, tattooed across her smooth breasts was a terrifying image of a black spider!

With her collar ripped and both her legs splayed open, she oozed a charming, sexual appeal.

At this moment, there was a sudden sound of footsteps outside.

The old doctor was resting in the next room just now. He rushed in to take a look when he heard the commotion.

But he was stunned the moment he stepped into the room and saw the scene before him.

Young people nowadays!

"I'm sorry. Please continue," he apologized and left in a hurry.

Liam raised his eyebrows and didn't bother to explain.

Turning around, he looked at the woman coldly and asked, "How many of Black Spider's people are still hiding on Hoiwa Island?"

Chapter 290 Chet The Puppet

The short-haired nurse smiled charmingly and deliberately pulled her neckline a little lower. Then she said coquettishly, "I bet you've never seen a woman like me.

So as long as you let me go, I can satisfy all your desires. I'm great in bed, and we can also do it in the bathroom. I'm fine with sadomasochism too. Anything you like, just name it."

After saying this, she looked at Liam's crotch, stuck out her tongue, and licked her red lips.

But Liam only sneered and said, "You must have dealt with many men with this move. Otherwise, how would an average fighter like you become an assassin? I think a man will definitely fall into your trap as long as he wants you to be his plaything."

Generally speaking, men with poor willpower were easily seduced by women like this slutty nurse. Then they began to have obscene thoughts. After all, this woman's figure was comparable to world-famous models. With her gorgeous face and seductive voice that was deliberately trained, most men would want to release their lustful desires with her before killing her.

But unfortunately, Liam was not tempted at all. He didn't have even the slightest interest in this nurse. Instead, he only had deep disgust in his eyes when he looked at her.

He was almost running out of patience, so his voice became even colder when he said, "Tell me everything you know. Otherwise, I will slowly destroy your face with a knife, then throw you into a group of beggars. Those hungry, ugly, and horny evil men will ravage you at will."

When the short-haired nurse heard this, she immediately raised her neck and scolded angrily, "How shameless you are! Just kill me if you want. I'm not telling you anything."

Although she tried to look brave in front of Liam, her trembling body had given her away.

Liam sneered again and said disdainfully, "I know you are not afraid of death. But what I said just now is only the first step. There are still many ways to make you feel worse than death."

The short-haired nurse's heart skipped a beat for a moment. She instantly fell silent.

After a while, she finally opened her mouth and said with difficulty, "I don't know exactly how many people are there. But the Black Spider members on Hoiwa Island are divided into two groups, the bright team, and the dark team. The mercenaries you saw that were following Mr. Chet Smith are from the bright team. And the dark team members are all hidden as a backup in case of accidents. Every member of the dark team is well-hidden without any base. They are only in contact with their superior. As long as nothing unexpected happens, they will look like ordinary tourists and will never be sent out."

Liam frowned.

If this was the case, it would be troublesome to investigate.

So he quickly asked, "Isn't Mr. Smith your leader?"

The short-haired nurse snorted disdainfully, "Leader? Do you think he deserves to be a leader? Not at all! He's nothing but a puppet. The Black Spider assigned him nothing but the mercenaries from the bright team. They are losers who will never be selected into the dark team for the rest of their lives."

Liam nodded silently. That sniper was indeed much stronger than the group of mercenaries. As a member of the dark team, that sniper had skills comparable to that of the third rank of Dark Night Organization.

If that sniper was Chet's subordinate, he might not be able to take Chet down so easily the other day.

Liam grabbed the injector and looked at the sloshing liquid inside. Then he asked, "What's in it?"

"This injection contains potassium cyanide,"

answered the short-haired nurse after hesitating for a while.

Liam's pupils shrank slightly. The killing intent in his eyes was outrageous. He resisted the urge to kill the woman on the spot.

He questioned again, "When you came here, why didn't you kill me directly and attack Annie instead?"

Before the short-haired nurse could answer, a strong hatred flashed through Liam's eyes when he thought of the name he was about to mention.

He gritted his teeth and asked angrily, "Is it because of Ajax Seymour?"

The short-haired nurse had already betrayed the Black Spider. So now she was ready to say everything to survive.

"I came here today because I received an order from the superior to ensure this woman on the hospital bed dies in front of your own eyes. As for why I didn't kill you, I don't know."

Liam nodded, and his expression turned cold. He continued to ask, "Who rescued Ajax Seymour? How can I find him?"

"I will only tell you if you promise to let me go." As she spoke, the short-haired nurse stared at him closely.

A murderous aura instantly overflowed in Liam's body. And his eyes were like ice that would never melt for thousands of years.

The short-haired nurse trembled. She swallowed hard and quickly said, "I know a secret. At twelve midnight, all the dark team members will gather on the Victory which will sail away from Hoiwa Island."

"Why?" Liam questioned with a grim face.

The short-haired nurse bit her lower lip and said timidly, "There will be an organ auction."

As soon as she said this, Liam suddenly clenched his fists, squeezing the armrests of the wheelchair so tightly that they were deformed. ①

It was as if it was his way of venting out the undisguised manic killing intent in his eyes.

He sneered and said, "Reply to their message and tell them that you have completed the mission. I won't kill you if you do as I say."

When the short-haired nurse heard that Liam was willing to let her go, hope flashed through her eyes. She nodded repeatedly.

At this moment, her desire to survive made her extremely eager to live.

This time, Liam turned and shouted at the room next to him.

The old doctor heard it and rushed in. He asked in confusion, "Are you done? That fast?"

Liam frowned and went straight to the point. "Help me disguise Annie as if she was poisoned by potassium cyanide."

The old doctor's eyes widened. His eyes looked back and forth between the short-haired nurse and Liam.

And when he saw her high heels, he immediately realized something.

This short-haired nurse was a killer.

The old doctor suddenly trembled all over, and his scalp even numbed.

Of course, he didn't dare to delay. He immediately put some foam at the corners of Annie's mouth, making it look like saliva. Then he applied a layer of red solution on her arms.

After doing all this, he looked at Liam and said solemnly, "It's done."

Liam waved his hand, and the short-haired nurse immediately took a photo. Then she sent it to her superior as a task report.

After sending the message, she looked at Liam and said anxiously, "You said you would let me go. I hope you don't go back on your word."

Liam smiled coldly and said playfully, "I'm a man of my word."

After saying this, he took out his phone and called someone.

Soon, Jaxtyn rushed in with several fishermen. They all looked anxious.

Jaxtyn saw Liam beside Annie.

Then there was another woman on the floor, wearing a nurse uniform. Her legs were spread apart.

Her slender legs and smooth breasts made him swallow his saliva hard. She was so sexy that he couldn't help but be tempted and aroused.

But before Jaxtyn lost control of himself, he withdrew his eyes with difficulty and asked in confusion, "Mr. Hoffman, why did you call me here in such a hurry? What happened?"

Liam didn't even look back. He just said coldly, "Inject the liquid into her body, drag her to the crematorium, and burn her."

When the short-haired nurse heard this, her eyes widened. She shouted, "You broke your promise."

Chapter 291 In Action

Liam smiled at the short-haired nurse playfully. Then he said disdainfully, "Yes, I said I wouldn't kill you. But I didn't say I wouldn't let someone else do it."

The short-haired nurse stared at Liam and roared hysterically, "You lied to me. You broke your promise. Even if I die, I won't let you go. I will haunt you."

Jaxtyn, standing at the side, just listened to the conversation between Liam and the short-haired nurse. And when he saw the injector on the floor, he instantly figured out what was going on.

It turned out that this sexy nurse on the floor was an assassin.

A touch of ruthlessness instantly crept across his face. He stepped forward, squatted in front of the woman, and pressed her face with both hands. Without saying anything, he twisted it hard.

A loud crack sound echoed in the ward.

"Ahhh!" The short-haired nurse screamed in pain. But she could only whimper.

Apparently, her jaws had been dislocated.

However, it was far from over. Jaxtyn wasn't done yet.

Under the terrified and trembling eyes of the short-haired nurse, he picked up the injector on the floor, pinpointed the artery in her right hand, and injected the liquid little by little.

Watching the liquid continuously enter her vein bit by bit, the short-haired nurse twisted her limbs desperately, trying to break free.

However, the group of fishermen had already stepped forward and held her shoulders tightly, preventing her from moving.

Even her hands and feet were pressed by several people so hard that her bones were also dislocated. She couldn't move a muscle.

At this moment, her eyes were full of ferocity and resentment.

When Liam saw that the short-haired nurse was still staring at him, he sneered and asked coldly, "Does it hurt? Are you afraid now? But this

was exactly what you wanted to do to Annie, right?"

His indifferent voice echoed in the ward, making even souls shiver.

The short-haired nurse suddenly felt endless pain and remorse. "If I had known earlier that this would happen to me, I shouldn't have become an assassin."

She looked at Liam with eyes full of hatred. But Liam didn't show any sign of fear at all. There was only indifferent expression.

Not all people in this world were human beings. Others could only be called beasts.

Since Liam learned that Ajax had escaped, he had a deep understanding of the truth.

Some stinky scumbags must be punished to death.

Otherwise, more innocent people would suffer from them. There would be endless troubles.

Soon, the short-haired nurse's skin turned red, and she completely stopped moving.

The fishermen immediately wrapped her in a bag and randomly stuffed her into a huge suitcase.

Jaxtyn personally pulled the suitcase and led everyone out of the ward. The room fell silent again.

Liam lowered his head. And when he looked at Annie's elegant and quiet face, a touch of pain flashed through his eyes.

He smiled self-deprecatingly and sighed, "It seems that because I have been out of the battlefield for too long, I was being too kind to the enemy, which made me suffer. It's a pity that I figure this all out too late."

At this moment, Liam's phone suddenly rang.

He took it out and checked. It was a message from Klaus.

Klaus informed him that Julie and the others with her had been relocated to an undisclosed location.

Somehow, the tension in Liam's heart eased.

There were many people in Furi Hospital. And he had been in and out many times, so it was not safe anymore.

So after watching the video left by Ajax, he called Klaus and asked him to move everyone to a safe and secret place as soon as possible.

The moment Liam read the message, Julie's face appeared in his mind. His mind was actually filled with manic thoughts. But his longing for her was like a soothing trickle that made him gradually calm down.

He leaned against the chair, took a deep breath, and murmured, "Julie, I will kill all the people who threaten your safety. I promise you that. Wait for my good news."

Liam was filled with determination. He asked the old doctor for a syringe of painkiller and injected it into his left leg.

Then he stood up from the wheelchair, wore a ghost mask, and sent a message to Jaxtyn.

"Half of the members of the Dark Night Organization on Hoiwa Island stay in the hospital to protect Annie. The other half put on diving gears and sneak into the Victory from the bottom of the sea to install a time bomb."

Liam didn't want to alert the enemy. So this time, he planned to take only Jaxtyn with him. The two of them would be exploring the cruise ship by themselves.

A car soon stopped at the gate of the hospital, and Jaxtyn got in the driver's seat.

When he looked at Liam's ghost mask, he suddenly shivered all over. But he still said respectfully, "Sir, I got the invitation."

With the influence of the Dark Night Organization, they easily got two invitations for the cruise ship.

Liam nodded and said decisively, "Let's go."

They went all the way unimpeded, passed the security check of the cruise ship, and started strolling in the ballroom.

In the ballroom, some people wore masks like Liam to hide their real faces. But some didn't care at all and showed their faces directly.

These people were from all over the world and regarded themselves as from the upper class. At this moment, they were chatting and laughing happily. They were obviously having fun.

While watching this scene, Liam's eyes became colder. And his lips under the mask curved into a cruel smile.

All of them, without exception, were all beasts participating in the organ auction.

Suddenly, Liam felt a chill on his back. It was as if a sharp gaze was fixed on his back.

He looked back and saw a two-meter-tall strong man in a camouflage uniform in the corner of the ballroom.

The brawny man wore a gorilla mask. His physique was extremely sturdy, and his aura was completely different from those around him.

At a glance, Liam had already confirmed that this person was very strong. And he could tell that this man had killed more than one hundred people.

Liam grabbed a glass of wine from a roving waiter and took the opportunity to scan the guests.

He relied on his super memory and keen observation to spot and target the assassins among the crowd one by one.

Chapter 292 Dark Auction

It was already half past eleven when the ball ended.

At this moment, a wheelchair was slowly pushed onto the stage, and a man was in it.

He wore a suit, a wolf mask, and a pair of white gloves.

Everyone fixed their eyes on the man, and there was no need for Liam to take a sneak peek.

He clearly saw that the exposed skin of the man's wrist was full of scars. It must have been caused by torture.

Liam smiled faintly. He was more than certain that this man was Chet. It was just that, at this moment, Chet was no longer humble and miserable. It was as if he had changed into a different person. He was full of pride and confidence.

He clapped his hands, and the spotlight immediately shone on him.

Chet cleared his throat and said loudly, "I now officially start the auction you are all looking forward to."

The audience responded with thunderous applause. Everyone was extremely excited.

Liam mixed in the crowd and applauded with them. In this way, he could hide his identity.

Chet's gaze swept the crowd. And when he saw everyone's reaction, he was very satisfied.

He raised his hand, signaling everyone to be quiet. Then he continued, "The first item for the auction is an eighteen-year-old young woman."

As he spoke, the assistant beside him lifted the black cloth off the cage behind him.

Suddenly, a tall and slender woman was exposed in front of everyone.

Her eyes were empty and glassy, and she was totally naked in front of everyone, showing every part of her body.

The first item was so stunning, and the audience became even more

enthusiastic. The atmosphere in the crowd was intense.

Chet smiled faintly and introduced aloud, "This woman is not only a virgin but also an international supermodel. And don't worry. She is very healthy. We have completely tamed her. If you take her home as your sex slave, she will give you the greatest experience. The starting bid is ten million dollars."

As soon as Chet said this, all the information about the auction item played on the big screen.

The photos of the sexy woman shown on the screen constantly stimulated the desires of all the men present.

As expected, the greed in every man's heart was ignited. They looked at the woman on the stage wantonly.

A wealthy businessman below the stage could no longer hold back his desire. He raised his bidder card and said, "Twenty million dollars!"

The others followed suit, raising the bid.

"Thirty million!"

"Fifty million!"

"One hundred million!"

In a short period, the price soared to one hundred million dollars.

Liam looked at the crazy people around him. Their appearances made the cruelty in his eyes become more intense.

He clenched his fists so tightly that his knuckles turned pale.

At this moment, the woman who should have been cherished and regarded as a treasure turned into a commodity, being priced and auctioned.

The woman's final bid was two hundred million dollars, and that bidder took her away.

Before she was pushed down the stage, another cage was pushed up.

Someone lifted the black cloth, showing a naked white girl inside.

Since the crowd was still in an uproar, Chet seized this opportunity. He shouted again, "Here is a fourteen-year-old girl from Aperia. Although she is young, you can all see how tall she is. Her body has matured, and she already has perfect and tender breasts."

This time, the screen showed colorful pictures of the girl's organs.

And each organ was marked with a corresponding price.

This was Chet's way of dealing with ordinary goods that were not well-known.

Whoever got this girl, they could let her become their sex slave or sell her organs directly.

In the end, all the girl's organs were bought by one person for five million dollars.

After this, many items were pushed onto the stage one after another.

As the auction items were bought one by one, the atmosphere became very warm. Chet's tone got higher and higher, as he prepared to give this auction a perfect ending.

Needless to say, all the rich people present were excited and satisfied with their harvest tonight.

The wealthy businessman who bought the supermodel even put a chain around her neck and kept her naked. Then he walked around with the woman, showing off his purchase.

Liam's eyes narrowed. This old man was too evil.

With the old man's stooping posture, he knew very well that this old man had already lost the ability to have sex.

He only bought this supermodel to torture her.

When Liam saw all this, his killing intent grew even stronger.

The group of people next to him didn't realize how inhumane they were. They were even discussing and exchanging goods excitedly.

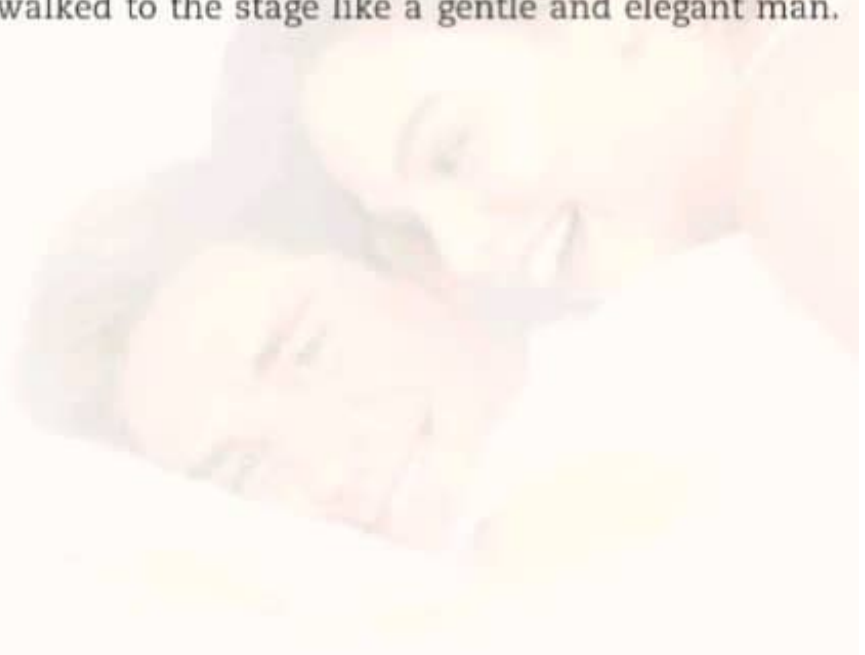
So for him, these beasts all deserved to die.

At this moment, Jaxtyn approached Liam, leaned over, and whispered, "Mr. Hoffman, everyone has come in. The women abducted backstage have been saved too. But we couldn't find Ajax. There's one more thing. Our people found that the bottom of the cruise ship is equipped with a detector. They can't get close to the ship to install the bomb. We need to distract the attention of the people in the monitoring room first."

Liam sneered. The climax of this show had finally come.

He nodded and said gently, "Leave it to me."

After saying this, he suddenly stood up. Under the surprised eyes of everyone, he slowly walked to the stage like a gentle and elegant man.



Chapter 293 What Are You Doing Here

As soon as Liam stepped onto the stage, all the Black Spider dark team members put their hands on their waists.

They stared at him vigilantly, ready to draw out their guns at any time. Liam observed everyone and saw their alert actions.

However, he didn't show even the slightest fear. He still slowly walked and stopped in front of Chet.

Chet frowned, but his attitude was polite. "Sir, is this your first time to come here? We do not allow guests to come up on the stage. Please step down immediately."

Liam smiled playfully and said lightly, "What if I insist on coming up?" A cruel look flashed in Chet's eyes. He said coldly, "This is not a place for you to come up to. Either you get out of here, or you die."

Liam clicked his tongue and said playfully, "Tsk, tsk, tsk. You seem to forget my voice so soon."

He stood under the spotlight. And in front of everyone, he slowly lifted the mask off his face.

Under the mask was a handsome face with perfect features.

The man was Liam. How could Chet forget Liam's face?

The memories of being tortured in the dungeon instantly filled Chet's mind. He couldn't help trembling in fear.

He couldn't keep his calm anymore. He exclaimed in a trembling voice, "Liam Hoffman! What are you doing here?"

As soon as the members of the Black Spider on the ship heard Liam's name, they rushed toward him in an instant.

Liam grabbed Chet's neck with one hand, pulled him up from the wheelchair, and shouted angrily, "Don't come over! Otherwise, I'll snap his neck."

However, the members of the Black Spider did not stop at all. They continued moving towards him.

Chet screamed in horror. He shouted in a panic, "No! Don't come over! When he says it, he means it. He will kill me. I don't want to die. Don't move!"

It was only then that the members of the Black Spider stopped in their tracks. Chet was still their leader on the surface, and they had to pretend to protect him to keep this secret.

Besides, there were so many distinguished guests on the ship. They couldn't fire.

At this moment, a man in a camouflage uniform strode out from the crowd.

He was tall and strong. And he gave off an overwhelming aura.

The members of the Black Spider around all nodded at him and retreated.

Liam's eyes narrowed. He was on guard against them.

The man who came out was the strong man he noticed when he first boarded the ship.

When Chet saw that the strong man was still walking forward, his heart almost jumped out of his chest. He shouted angrily, "Frey, are you trying to get me killed? I said don't come over!"

Frey Duncan smiled coldly and said with feigned politeness, "Mr. Smith, this person is too dangerous. Don't worry. I will save you."

But inwardly, he only thought Chet was a loser. Chet was even captured by the same enemy twice. Did Chet really expect him to follow his order?

In his eyes, Chet was nothing but a puppet. Things would be easier for them if Chet died. So why would he save Chet?

Frey's eyes became even colder. He turned to Liam and said sarcastically, "You are indeed very strong. I found it the moment I sniped at you. But unfortunately, I'm better than you. You are nothing in my eyes. I can crush you like an ant."

Liam was shocked when he heard this.

A manic killing intent swept through him in an instant.

He stared at Frey and asked in a low voice, "Was you the sniper on the beach?"

Frey smiled smugly and said complacently, "Obviously, you have the power and strength. But you can be influenced by a woman. Aren't you a fool? But that woman who took the bullet for you was more stupid."

Liam's face turned grim. He found it difficult to speak, but he finally squeezed out a question. "Why did you shoot her limbs?"

A look of disgust immediately crept across Frey's face. He clicked his tongue and sneered, "If it weren't for that bitch, I would have killed you with one shot. Since she wanted to protect you so much, I let her take a few more shots for you. Ha-ha!"

As he spoke, his face became even more ferocious. And his face was filled with morbid excitement.

Then he laughed out loud and said, "But I have to thank you all for letting me have such a good time. After all, killing a person is too simple and boring. But playing with a fool like you who was bound by the bond between you and that bitch was too interesting. It was so much fun. Ha-ha!"

Frey called Liam a fool. He called Annie a bitch.

When Liam heard this, a touch of violence appeared between his eyebrows. The murderous aura emanated from his body.

He lowered his head and said in a deep voice, "Do you think I don't dare to kill this stupid pig?"

Frey smiled confidently and said arrogantly, "Do you? He is your only way to survive. Okay, kill him. Do it! Ha-ha!"

Upon hearing Frey's harsh laughter, Liam also laughed.

But his laughter was more presumptuous and arrogant.

Liam stared at Frey meaningfully and said, "Well, it was you who asked me to kill him. Everyone here heard it."

He turned Chet's face to Frey and sneered, "Remember that face, so you know whom to haunt when you are already in hell."

As soon as Liam finished his words, he put his hands on Chet's head.

"No, no, no! Don't!" Chet screamed in fright.

The expression on Frey's face drastically changed. He roared, "Bastard, don't you dare!"

Liam grinned, his white teeth shining with a cold color under the light.

Then he turned Chet's head around with force.

A cracking sound echoed on the stage.

Chet's head turned one hundred and eighty degrees in an instant.

He died on the spot.

Liam's eyes were icy cold. He stared at the furious Frey and sneered, "You guessed it right. I dared to kill him."

Frey's face flushed in anger. He roared, "Shoot him! Kill this loser!"

At this time, the mercenaries of Black Spider raised their guns, aimed the muzzles at Liam, and pulled the triggers.

Chapter 294 Arlo And Averi

Bullets poured out of the muzzles of the guns like raindrops.

But this time was different from during the last time. There was no longer Annie Liam needed to protect.

Liam grabbed Chet's body and used it as a shield while he constantly moved towards the door.

As soon as he reached the door, he instantly disappeared.

Frey didn't expect it to happen. After all, there were so many members of the Black Spider in the area. How could they let Liam run away?

His eyes widened, and he roared, "Arlo, Averi, take half of our men and kill that bastard."

"Yes, sir!" As soon as this voice fell, two men strode out of the crowd and stood in front of Frey.

One wore a hyena mask, and the other was a black bear. After gathering a group of mercenaries, they set off to chase after Liam and kill him.

The people in the dance hall all trembled in fear when they heard the series of gunshots in the corridor.

They all shrank back, and no one dared to go out.

Frey was so angry that his face twisted, and he gnashed his teeth. He cursed inwardly and swore he must kill Liam.

The big shots and powerful people in the audience had long been terrified by the scene. They all broke out into curses.

"What is going on? How can this auction be so unsafe?"

"Do you know how precious my life is? All your lives can never compensate my life if I die."

"I want to get off the ship. Return to the dock. I want to get off the ship."

Everyone was so scared that they stood up and ran out frantically.

However, the exit had already been surrounded by the remaining mercenaries, and they were all fully armed.

The old man who bought the supermodel turned to Frey and scolded,

"Get out of my way! I want to get off the boat."

Frey walked up the stage, held the microphone, and said with a faint smile, "Don't worry, everyone. He's just a small potato. I can kill him at will. But for now, please be patient. Give me a little time. I suspect he has some companions in the crowd, so I need to check carefully. Don't worry. When everything is over, we will definitely compensate all of you. We will make sure you are satisfied."

After he said this, the look in his eyes changed, and they instantly became cold.

The warning in his words was very obvious.

So when those rich people heard this, they couldn't continue clamoring. They could only return to their seats and wait as he instructed.

At this moment, Liam was in the corridor of the cruise ship. He casually threw Chet's dead body aside, hid in a corner, and sent Jaxtyn a message, "Take action."

Just a few seconds after he sent the message, all the lights on the cruise ship went off, followed by a loud bang.

Liam instantly disappeared into the darkness.

In the Dark Night Organization, he was called King because he was the strongest. But he was not just powerful while fighting head-on.

He was also powerful in the dark and he was considered the king of darkness.

The real top-level killers often hid in places they couldn't be seen by people, but they killed their enemies with just one move.

The densely packed rooms on the cruise ship all looked exactly the same. So once the lights were turned off, it would look like a maze.

In the dark, Liam suddenly approached a mercenary, covered his mouth, and slashed his neck with a knife. Then Liam dragged him into a room silently.

In this way, the mercenaries of the Black Spider were attacked and killed one by one.

Who wouldn't be terrified?

People kept disappearing and dying in the dark.

And during the entire process, Liam never fired a single shot.

Compared with the group of mercenaries of the bright team brought by Chet, these killers who belonged to the dark team were far better in terms of strength.

However, they were very weak when faced with Liam in the dark.

At this moment, Arlo and Averil, who were very confident just now, were already sweating profusely because of fear.

What was terrifying was not the death of their people but the silent disappearance of the people around them.

Damn! It was giving them the creeps.

They looked around crazily and roared, "Get out, you bastard!"

But as soon as they turned around, they swallowed their saliva hard in unison and shivered.

There was no one behind them.

But in the corridor, many corpses lay on the floor, and thick blood splashed on the walls.

These people were killed one by one, and they died in different ways.

The only thing they had in common was their eyes were opened wide in shock and horror. They were all looking at Arlo and Averil.

Everyone died with open eyes.

Suddenly, the creak of the door broke the silence.

The door in front of them opened.

Then Liam slowly walked out of the room, looking fierce in the darkness.

His eyes were cold, and his body emanated a very strong killing intent.

He looked at them, shook his head, and sneered, "Is that your dying wish?"

Arlo and Averil exchanged glances. And what they saw in each other's eyes was endless fear.

But they forced themselves to calm down and plucked up their courage.

Then Arlo shouted harshly, "You bastard! Do you already see yourself as powerful because you killed these people? How dare you come to us! You must be courting death!" ③

He and Averil had been in the dark team for many years, and they had killed hundreds of people.

At this moment, the fear in their hearts was alleviated a lot.

After all, only the darkness and the unknown were the most terrible.

As long as Liam stood in front of them and fought with them openly, they had nothing to be afraid of.

Liam sneered and teased, "I'll fulfill your wish then."

After saying this, he suddenly stomped his foot and rushed toward Arlo and Averil.

Chapter 295 Enjoying The Battle

"You will die!" Arlo roared as he drew out his dagger and rushed towards Liam.

Averi stood behind with his gun, ready to shoot at any time.

But suddenly, Averi's eyes widened in disbelief.

Liam raised his leg and kicked Arlo's knee heavily.

A loud crack sounded, and Arlo's right knee was broken.

He only felt the sudden pain in his knee, then his right leg bent forward feebly.

Liam seized this opportunity. He grabbed Arlo's hands, twisted them hard, and kicked Arlo's chest with his right foot at the same time.

With the sound of his bone cracking, Arlo spat out a mouthful of blood. He was so injured that he already had difficulty breathing.

Averi, behind Arlo, clearly knew that Arlo was doomed.

So he immediately prepared to shoot, regardless of whether he would accidentally hurt Arlo.

But before he could pull the trigger, Liam picked up the dagger dropped by Arlo and threw it hard, hitting Averi in the blink of an eye.

The sharp dagger was like cutting bread, instantly piercing through Averi's forehead. ①

He only managed to pull the trigger the moment he fell to the floor.

He shot towards the ceiling.

It only took Liam less than a minute to deal with Arlo and Averi.

Liam slowly walked towards Averi. He squatted down, broke off Averi's fingers from the gun, picked it up, and shot Arlo's forehead twice.

After making sure that Arlo and Averi were dead, he sat down on the floor.

After those violent movements just now, his leg was already bleeding, and his wound cracked again.

The effect of the painkiller had subsided, and the tearing pain made his

breathing distorted.

Liam tore off the hem of Averi's clothes and tied his leg more tightly to temporarily stop the bleeding.

He didn't even grimace while doing it.

After all, pain was common in a fight.

In fact, Liam feared the pain in his heart more than the physical pain.

At this moment, Liam received a message.

"All the people in the monitoring room have been taken care of. Our people have dived into the bottom of the ship and started planting the bomb. It will only take them fifteen minutes."

Liam's actions not only attracted the attention of the members of Black Spider but also the scattered personnel of the ship.

So it was not surprising that the people of Dark Night Organization invaded the monitoring room effortlessly.

Liam's people now needed fifteen minutes to install the bomb.

He stood up again and found Averi's remaining bullets.

Then he quickly loaded the magazine of Averi's gun.

He put the gun by his waist and sneered, "Let's enjoy the battle then."

It had been a long time since Liam's last hearty battle. He surely missed it.

At this moment, he felt like he had returned to the battlefield, and even the blood in his was boiling.

All the rage hidden deep in his heart now rushed out like a volcano that erupted.

Liam noticed that the communication device on Averi vibrated.

He bent over, picked it up, and pressed the button.

Then Frey's angry roar came from the other end of the line, "You two losers! Have you killed him?"

There was a faint sense of anxiety and uneasiness in his voice.

Because just now, he suddenly lost contact with the people in the monitoring room.

Liam sneered, "They have been killed."

As soon as Frey heard Liam's voice, his heart trembled. He cursed, "Fuck you, bastard!"

Liam smiled disdainfully and said through clenched teeth, "Fucking idiot!"

Then he directly cut off the communication device.

Frey was still in the dance hall at the moment. When he heard Liam call him an idiot, he got even more furious.

He was about to scold Liam back, but the communication device was already cut off.

Anger welled up in his heart, making his chest grow more and more constricted. But unfortunately, he had no way to vent out.

Frey's face flushed with anger, and the veins all over his body popped up.

Suddenly, the communication device sounded again.

He looked at it, waiting for someone to speak up.

Liam said mockingly, "Just in case you idiot don't know where I am, I'll wait for you in the dining hall."

Then he hung up again without even giving Frey a chance to say anything.

After being humiliated twice, Frey went totally crazy.

He clenched his fists, raised the communication device, and smashed it to the floor. Then he stepped hard on it as if it was his only way to vent his anger.

"Fuck you, bastard! Fuck you! I will kill you! I swear I will kill you!"

Chapter 296 The Fierce Battle In The Dining Hall

A ferocious killing intent, like a raging storm, immediately engulfed all the dignitaries present.

They all trembled in their seats, looking at Frey, who was getting out of control. No one dared to make a sound.

At this moment, Frey's eyes were red, and his face was ferocious. He was like a mad wild beast.

After roaring for a long time, he gradually calmed down. Somehow, he finally vented his anger.

Looking at the broken communication device under his feet, he scowled and said coldly, "Everyone, stay here and don't move around. I will seal this place to ensure your safety. But if you run around and get killed, don't blame me for not reminding you."

After saying this, Frey left the dance hall with the rest of the Black Spider members.

While walking towards the dining hall, he was boiling with anger.

He was a highly skilled sniper. He was good at hiding and long-distance killing.

But to gain the advantage, he had to seize every opportunity, choose a vantage point, and measure the wind speed. In short, preparation in advance took a long time.

However, they were on a cruise ship now.

He couldn't use his skill of long-distance killing.

Besides, he had no choice at this moment but to go to the place designated by his opponent.

This made him feel like a trapped mouse, so he was extremely upset.

Frey clenched his teeth, looking more ferocious. He roared, "You little bastard! I'll kill you if I catch you."

Halfway through going to the dining hall, the communication device in

one of the members' hands sounded.

Then Liam's voice came. "Hey, what's taking you so long? Are you afraid of coming without a sniper rifle? You're such a loser!"

His words were like a sharp knife, hitting Frey's nerves.

Frey grabbed the device from his man and cursed, "You son of a bitch! I used to live in Ruwi, the most combative country, and I tore a black bear with my bare hands. When I kill you, you will be my next work of art, and I'll hang it on the wall of my bedroom."

At this moment, the image of Liam's pieces being put back together, and photographed artistically appeared in his mind.

When Liam didn't say anything, Frey thought he got scared. He immediately licked his lips and said excitedly, "After hanging your photo on my wall, I will appreciate it every day before I go to bed. Ha-ha!"

When the other members of the Black Spider saw their leader's twisted appearance, they felt a chill down their spines.

Meanwhile, Liam was extremely indifferent. He said disdainfully, "Oh, are you that powerful? Idiot!"

After saying this, he hung up again.

Frey clenched his teeth tightly until a bloody smell came out of his mouth.

He shouted at the communication device, "Fuck you! You fucking idiot!"

Actually, what pissed Frey off was not being called an idiot but Liam's indifferent attitude.

Frey's prey would either cry or beg for mercy when they fell in his hands. They didn't even get a chance to utter a word. No one dared to be indifferent to him.

He was surrounded by many mercenaries now. As a ruthless killer, how could he remain calm after being humiliated by Liam? He couldn't lose face in front of his men.

Frey roared, "Follow me!"

He then led the group and ran towards the dining hall.

But as soon as he passed by the lounge, he suddenly felt he tripped over something.

He looked down and saw a long transparent line.

Frey's eyelids twitched wildly. Then he yelled at his men, "Get down!"

As soon as he ordered, there was a loud bang.

It was caused by the sudden explosion of the two hand grenades buried in the pots on both sides.

After the explosion, Frey's face was covered with dust.

He lay prone on the floor, feeling the ringing in his ears. And it took him a long time to stand up again.

But as soon as he got up and turned to his men, his eyes popped out of his head.

The five men closest to the pots were blown into pieces.

They fell to the floor, and their limbs were disintegrated. They seemed to be dying.

At this moment, the anger in Frey's heart grew even stronger. He was like a volcano that was about to erupt. He could no longer suppress his temper.

He shouted to his men behind him, "Everyone, be more careful and vigilant. Let's go!"

But as they went on, they encountered not only grenades but also gas bombs and even some toxic pushpins.

These weapons were all placed in dark corners and connected through various mechanisms. That was why no matter how excellent Frey was in killing people, it was impossible for him to guard against them.

Those weapons that originally belonged to the Black Spider had now become the sickles that could kill them at any moment.

Worse was, every time there was an accident, the communication device would sound. It was as if Liam had been monitoring them.

And Liam's ridicule echoed in Frey's ears over and over again. He felt like it was an endless torture.

He was already furious to the extreme, but he hadn't even seen Liam or any of Liam's men.

His anger was driving him crazy. All he wanted now was to kill Liam.

Finally, they reached the dining hall. But unfortunately, only two men

Frey and his two men still dared to step into the dining hall. Of course, there was no turning back. But as soon as they entered, their pupils suddenly contracted.

Liam sat at the table in the middle of the hall. He wore a fancy suit, and there was a white napkin around his neck. He was gracefully cutting a piece of freshly fried steak.

Smoke still billowed from the steak. And as he used the knife and fork to cut it, small streams of blood seeped out of the meat.

Liam finished the steak on his plate before he put down the knife and fork, picked up a napkin, and wiped his mouth. He raised his head, smiled faintly, and said lightly, "You are so slow. The steak was getting cold, so I had to eat it."

This relaxed demeanor was in sharp contrast to the miserable experience the members of the Black Spider had experienced along the way.

Frey felt like he was about to explode.

His chest, filled with incomparable anger, heaved up and down violently. At this moment, he was like a devil crawling out of hell. His face twisted to the extreme.

His knuckles cracked when he clenched his fists tightly. He fixed his vicious eyes on Liam, but he didn't dare to take a step forward.

After all, they had encountered a lot of dangers along the way. He was afraid that there was also a trap here.

Frey didn't talk nonsense anymore. He grabbed the gun from one of his men, aimed the muzzle at Liam, and shot crazily.

But Liam didn't show any sign of fear at all. Instead, he smiled playfully and kicked the table in front of him. Before anyone could react, the knife and fork in his hands shot out at the same time.

In the blink of an eye, the two men were hit in the forehead.

Liam killed them with just a knife and a fork in one blow.

When Frey saw this scene, he roared, "Fuck you, bastard! I will kill you!"

He held the trigger tightly and pulled it. The muzzle of the gun blazed

with orange flames, and the bullets poured out like a storm, shooting towards the table in front of Liam.

After all the bullets had been fired, white smoke soon rose from the barrel of the gun.

The bullets pierced through the table, and it was already full of holes.

But there was still no movement behind the table.

Frey's brows furrowed tightly. He quickly changed the magazine and slowly approached the table in front of him.

He moved the muzzle of the gun and aimed at the back of the table.

But much to his surprise, there was no one there.

At this moment, Liam was hiding in the corner. Since Frey did not notice him, he seized the opportunity and threw the Swiss Army knife in his hand to Frey's crotch.

Frey subconsciously stepped back. He quickly lowered the gun, trying to block the flying knife at all costs.

However, Liam didn't show mercy at all. The table knives hidden in his clothes became his weapons. He shot them out at Frey one after another.

In this fight, clearly, the brave one would win.

Frey had already lost when he subconsciously defended himself.

He had no way to stop Liam this time.

The sharp knives instantly pierced through the different parts of his body.

Dark red blood spurted out like little fountains.

In the end, Frey's body, which was like an iron tower, crashed to the floor with a loud thud, smashing all the tables and chairs around him.

He struggled to grab the gun beside him, but his limbs had no strength at all. All he felt was severe pain.

Frey lay on the floor, and his neck flushed. He roared like a beast, "You bastard! If I get my sniper rifle, you will be toyed like trash. You only know sneak attacks to defeat your enemy. Fuck you!"

Chapter 297 Losing His Penis

"Are you still not going to surrender?" Liam smiled coldly, quickly flipped a table knife between his fingers, and threw it hard at Frey's crotch.

The sharp knife shot out and pierced through his crotch.

"Ahhh!" Frey cried out loud, feeling an inexplicable pain.

His body twitched uncontrollably.

He had experienced being shot by bullets on the battlefield many times, but he had never groaned in pain.

However, this time was different. What he felt now was the pain of losing his penis.

His manhood was gone.

This piercing pain was a trample on Frey's dignity, completely crushing his tenacious heart.

Liam threw another table knife in his hand into the air and asked in a cold voice, "Where did that pride of yours go when you were with the sniper rifle during the day?"

The flying knife shot through Frey's left eye.

"Weren't you having fun playing with me?"

Then another knife pierced through Frey's right eye.

Every time Liam spoke, he threw a table knife, hitting the different parts of Frey's body.

At this moment, Frey lost all his fighting power.

He lay on the floor with a pool of blood, wriggling like a maggot.

But he continued to roar, "Kill me. If you have the guts, just kill me now!"

Liam stepped on Frey's chest, looked down at him, and said jokingly, "You have committed so many crimes that even if you die ten thousand times, it won't be enough compensation. I'm not killing you yet because someone else wants to kill you. I'll leave your last breath to that person."

Liam decided to leave this bastard Frey for Annie to handle.

Frey was like a dead dog now. He dragged Frey away from the dining hall step by step and walked outside.

So in the entire dining hall, there was only a thick bloodstain and two dead bodies now.

The entire cruise ship was controlled by people from the Dark Night Organization.

At this moment, there were men and women in black diving suits. They all had fierce eyes, and their bodies were stained with a lot of blood.

At first, the speedboats of the Dark Night Organization were hanging around outside the range of the cruise ship's radar scan.

After they invaded the monitoring room, they rushed over frantically and took over the entire cruise ship in the shortest possible time.

But even though Liam had killed most of the core members of the Black Spider, many of Liam's men still got killed.

So there was a trace of sadness on everyone's faces.

Dedicating their lives to the organization and fighting to their last breaths was the fate of everyone in the Dark Night Organization. And this was their vow to the organization until they died.

When Jaxtyn saw Liam come out of the dining hall, he immediately greeted Liam respectfully, "Sir, we have successfully taken down the cruise ship. Are you all right?"

Liam nodded his head and threw Frey on the floor. "This is the sniper who shot Annie. Take him with you to the speedboat and let Annie deal with him."

As soon as Liam said this, everyone in the Dark Night Organization looked at Liam with respect and admiration.

Liam killed almost all the powerful members of the Black Spider on the cruise by himself.

Everyone was sincerely convinced that Liam had what it took to be their leader.

Moreover, he had avenged Annie.

Jaxtyn turned to Liam and asked in a low voice, "How do we deal with those dignitaries in the dance hall?"

This question reminded Liam of the scenes in the previous auction.

He smiled playfully and said, "Let's go see the true colors of those people."

In the dance hall, all the dignitaries remained in their seats. Many of them kept poking their heads outside and whispering to each other.

They were obviously terrified by the explosion outside just now.

A fat woman shook her body, suddenly stood up, and pulled the long rope in her hand hard.

The rope was tied to the neck of a muscular naked man with a handsome appearance.

At this moment, the man's face flushed because of the fat woman's violent actions. The rope around his neck tightened, and he was about to suffocate.

However, the fat woman didn't care about him. She said in a trembling voice, "Something terrible must have happened. It's really not worth it to buy this pig. I shouldn't have come here."

Next to the fat woman, a bald middle-aged man with yellowish teeth sneered, "What are you afraid of? The Black Spider is extremely powerful. This is no big deal for them."

When the others heard this, they all began to flatter Frey.

"The master behind the Black Spider mercenaries is the Duncan family. They have been hiring mercenaries since hundreds of years ago." ①

"That's right. Frey's family, the Duncan family, has overturned several countries."

"That loser provoked Frey single-handedly. I'm afraid his dead body will be thrown to the sea later."

Suddenly, they heard a loud bang.

There was a sudden explosion at the door.

Dust and smoke filled the air at once.

"Ahem!"

The man at the door coughed twice. He fanned the dust in front of him with his hand and shouted, "Frey, is that you? Have you killed that idiot?"

But what everyone saw was not Frey. Instead, the people of the Dark

Night Organization strode into the hall.

The man in the lead was Liam.

When he left, he was chased by the members of Black Spider. And those dignitaries in the dance hall despised and mocked him as overconfident rubbish.

Who would have thought he would return with glory?

When the man at the door met Liam's cold eyes, he swallowed his saliva hard and collapsed to the floor.

He was so scared that he wetted his pants. ②

Chapter 298 Sky-high Prices For Lives

In a suave and refined manner, Liam gracefully stepped onto the stage. Casting his gaze upon the audience, he echoed the very words that had been used to ridicule him.

The individuals who had just mocked Liam were now trembling in fear. With a mischievous smile, Liam addressed them calmly, "Those who were talking about me, why don't you remove your masks?"

Concealed amidst the crowd, they averted their eyes, too terrified to utter a single word.

Yet, the other influential and affluent figures would not miss a chance to curry favor with Liam.

Without waiting for his assurance, they promptly rose to their feet and pushed the group out.

Liam's lips curled into a faint smile as he waved his hand, signaling the people behind him.

The members of the Dark Night Organization swiftly advanced, unveiled the masks worn by those individuals and swiftly scanning their faces with a device.

In a matter of minutes, Jaxtyn had got the complete information of every single person involved.

Liam snatched the phone from Jaxtyn's hand, his eyes narrowing with an icy intensity as he glanced at its screen.

With a focused gaze, he read, "Peter Russell, the renowned MP representing Pennsylvania's first district. Doug Stump, the wealthiest man in Gaffney County. Carlisle, the esteemed president of the teachers' union, all known far and wide for their philanthropy."

How could individuals like them, who portrayed themselves as paragons of charity, engage in such actions? They were hailed as great philanthropists!

A burst of laughter erupted from Liam, starting as a mocking chuckle and escalating into a wild, uninhibited roar.

As those people's true identities were laid bare, a wave of shame transformed into seething anger among them.

Their once hidden personas were now exposed for all to see. They became vulnerable to potential blackmail that could be as devastating as death itself.

Their faces flushed with indignation and they directed their rage towards Liam.

"We have performed countless acts of benevolence, far beyond anything you could comprehend! You have no right to laugh at us!"

"My family's fortune surpasses ten billion dollars. Should any harm befall me here, rest assured, they will seek revenge! There will be a lucrative bounty on your head in the underground market!"

"I'm an MP. Do you really want to become enemies with my country? Are you prepared to face the might of my country's army?"

Their words echoed through the air, momentarily diminishing their fear. Individually, any one of them possessed the power to effortlessly overpower ordinary people, let alone the combined might of their collective strength.

They believed they could easily crush Liam beneath their heels.

Their accusations swiftly garnered support from the rest of the crowd.

"Step aside! Who do you think you are? You've dared to offend us. That alone is enough to warrant your death a hundred times over!"

"You wretched fool, kneel before me and lick my shoes! Lick them well, and I might offer you more wealth than you could ever imagine!"

"Get lost! I want to leave!"

Many among them had already risen from their seats and begun making their way towards the door.

Liam's voice, low and chilling, cut through the commotion. "Those who speak too much seldom live long," he said, his cold gaze fixed upon them.

Jaxtyn got it right away and yanked those people out, giving them a bullet right then and there!

The floor got showered in blood, painting a gruesome scene.

All of a sudden, silence took over the air.

Those who had been shouting just moments ago fell eerily quiet.

As some people approached the door, they recoiled, pulled their heads back and retreated.

Now, everyone stopped their threats and started offering bribes to Liam.

One hundred million dollars, one billion dollars, ten billion dollars!

The figures kept getting thrown around like they were nothing, as if it would make Liam have a change of heart.

Deep down, Liam loathed them. These same beasts had just traded people and organs for money, and now they were trying to buy their own lives!

A faint smile played on his lips, but those who knew Liam well understood that this was when he was at his most dangerous.

"So, you're all rich, huh?" Liam scanned the group of affluent and influential individuals with a playful glint in his eyes.

Hearing his remark, those people assumed Liam had been swayed, causing them to look down on him somewhat.

In their minds, he was just another money-hungry loser, nothing more! With an air of arrogance, they answered one by one.

"Yes, we're very rich!"

"Just set me free and swear to keep today's events a secret. I guarantee you'll be a billionaire!"

"I'll endorse your membership in Congress. The wealth and luxuries you'll have at your disposal will be beyond your wildest dreams!"

As everyone boasted about their fortunes, Liam's smile widened even further.

Before him stood a group of individuals who looked like primitive men flaunting their strength to a modern army.

Being the heir of the prestigious Hoffman family, he had already conquered the world. Wealth held no allure for him!

To people, the Hoffman family appeared to be just a family worth a trillion dollars.

Little did they know that there was more to it.

Locking eyes with Jaxtyn, Liam barked, "Strip away these people's masks and document every last detail about them in the system! And if you want to save your sorry lives, you better disclose any valuable intel you possess!"

The information was the key to unraveling the powerful clans' vulnerabilities. Even if these individuals were dead, it could still be used by the Dark Night Organization to manipulate the families backing them.

It was worth far more than any amount of money!

With that, he turned around and sought out a room where he could finally catch a breather, paying no mind to the others.

After all, even he, Liam, was no machine. He too could feel pain and exhaustion!

In that moment, all he yearned for was a chance to rest and recuperate. It wasn't until three hours later that Jaxtyn rapped on the door, rousing Liam from his sleep.

"Come in." Liam sat up in bed and gulped down a glass of ice-cold water to jolt himself awake.

Glancing at Liam, Jaxtyn respectfully reported, "We've gathered all the valuable intel and stored it in the Dark Night Organization's information network, but..."

Observing that Jaxtyn seemed hesitant to speak further, Liam gestured with a wave of his hand, signaling him to continue.

Feeling a sense of shame, Jaxtyn hesitated briefly before admitting, "However, we haven't been able to locate Ajax."

Liam remained composed, his expression betraying little emotion. He simply nodded curtly.

Witnessing Liam's lack of reproach, Jaxtyn breathed a sigh of relief and proceeded to ask, "What should we do with these people?"

A wide grin stretched across Liam's face with his pearly white teeth on full display. He chuckled and remarked, "Scumbags deserve nothing less than a one-way ticket to hell, don't you think?"

About ten minutes later, Liam and his men reached the waters which

was five hundred meters away from the cruise ship, having traveled there by speedboats.

As the cruise ship appeared no larger than a palm from their vantage point, Jaxtyn handed over a remote control with utmost respect, saying, "Mr. Lin, this is the remote control for the bomb."

Chapter 299 Two Gifts

Liam grabbed the remote control and grinned mischievously as he gazed out at the distant cruise ship.

These supposed do-gooders appeared wealthy and influential on the surface, but they were nothing more than a group of heartless bullies.

What a bunch of scum! They didn't deserve to call themselves men.

It was all so ridiculous.

At that moment, Jaxtyn's phone rang.

"Really? That's fantastic!" Jaxtyn exclaimed with elation after answering the call.

He nodded excitedly and turned to Liam. "Mr. Hoffman, Annie is awake!"

Liam's face lit up with joy when he heard the news. "Make a video call to her and point the camera towards the cruise ship. We'll watch the fireworks with Annie tonight!"

Jaxtyn eagerly followed Liam's instructions. In a matter of seconds, Annie's frail form appeared on Jaxtyn's phone screen.

Liam gazed at Annie, still bedridden and pale-faced, and said lightly, "Annie, take a good look. This is the first gift I'm giving you!"

With no hesitation, he pressed the button on the remote control.

In a split second, the luxury cruise ship was engulfed in a fiery orange blaze. It exploded like a grand fireworks display!

A thunderous boom echoed through the skies.

The flames violently wrapped around the cruise ship, obliterating any trace of its existence before it sank into the depths of the endless abyss.

Annie, who had been weak, now watched in awe with her bright eyes.

It was a bloodbath, all because of King's wrath!

Before, she had only heard rumors from her superiors that King was terrifying. However, she thought it was just a fabrication from the TV shows.

But now, to avenge her, Liam had traveled across the sea and eliminated

all of their enemies, just to set off the fireworks for her!

This daring and romantic gesture not only moved her, but also stirred an indescribable emotion within her.

Their encounter on Hoiwa Island made her fall for King!

Annie couldn't help but cry tears of joy. She choked as she spoke. "Thank you. I like it so much." ③

As the cruise ship sank, Liam's anger slowly dissipated.

He let out a faint smile and said softly, "I have one more gift for you. I'll bring it myself. Just wait for me, okay?"

After he hung up the call, the speedboat sped away.

Two hours had passed and the sky was starting to brighten in the east. As the sun began to rise from the seaside, Liam finally set foot on land again.

A new day had begun.

Liam stared at the rising sun and felt his heart ache with longing for Julie.

The past few days had been filled with too much chaos and danger, and he had almost lost his life.

He let out a sigh and said to himself helplessly, "It's time to go back. Unfortunately, the real culprits behind all of this have yet to be dealt with."

He turned, got in the car, and went directly to the hospital.

Liam made his way to the VIP ward of the hospital on Hoiwa Island.

Immediately he entered the ward, Annie turned her head to check who it was.

As soon as she realized it was him, a weak smile appeared on her face as she said, "Hi, there."

Liam's heart ached as he took in her pale face. He rushed over to her and said softly, "Don't speak yet. Let me check on you first."

After conducting a thorough examination, Liam confirmed that Annie was doing well and just needed rest.

He then shared some dos and don'ts with the old doctor on how to deal

with any accidents that might occur after the operation.

The old doctor assured Liam, "Don't worry, Mr. Hoffman. I'll make sure to complete the task and keep Miss Lindberg safe!"

With the old doctor's skills, he didn't need Liam's guidance, but he still nodded repeatedly, like a primary school student, and took Liam's advice with an open mind.

Liam felt a mix of emotions when he heard his respectful response.

It was weird for Liam to be treated in such a way by someone who was forty years older.

The doctor, being old but wise, purposely left the ward, leaving just Liam and Annie in it.

The air in the quiet room suddenly became a bit romantic.

Breaking the silence, Liam asked Annie, "Why did you risk your life to take the bullet?"

Annie simply smiled. "You're King of the Dark Night Organization, and I'm just a devoted follower. It's my honor to protect you."

Liam's face grew serious as he retorted, "You're not just a follower. From this moment, you're a true friend of mine, Annie! My true friends can't risk their lives for me. Only I have the power to do that for them. And I won't allow it again!" Liam's voice boomed with a commanding authority.

Annie's eyes began to be filled with tears again.

But she put on a brave smile and replied, "Sure, I'll let everyone know that you're my good friend from now on!"

With those words, their relationship was defined.

Though Annie's love for Liam burned so fiercely it seemed to consume her, they could never be together.

Chapter 300 Interrogating Frey

Liam stayed on Hoiwa Island for another three days.

In these three days, he conducted lectures to the doctors in the hospital. But almost every moment, he had been missing Julie.

At this moment, Liam sat on the bed alone. He was talking with Julie on a video chat.

On the other end of the line, Julie sat alone in the garden, chuckling.

"I am much better now. In fact, I can already walk on my own. And the wounds on my face have basically healed. So don't worry about me."

Liam smiled faintly and reminded her, "Even so, you still need to rest more."

Julie chuckled lightly. "Yes, I know. When are you coming back?"

Liam pondered for a moment. Then he said, "In a few days."

Julie didn't ask anything more. She just nodded silently.

She knew that since Liam had left, he must have something important to do.

In her heart, Liam was very important. For her, he was more important than her own life.

She didn't want to be like other women who pestered their men all the time. And she didn't want to be a burden to him.

She didn't know what Liam was doing, but she trusted him unconditionally.

After the video call with Julie, Liam hung up, turned around, and walked into the next room.

In the past few days, he had been staying in the ward next to Annie's to observe her condition conveniently.

Jaxtyn was in the ward, preparing the breakfast on the table with a smile.

When he saw Liam come in, he immediately said respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman, these are all the local people's favorite dishes. There are

spams, egg sandwiches, and omelet. Please try them."

Liam nodded. Then he picked up a piece of omelet and took a bite.

And he was surprised that the omelet was really delicious. It tasted a little sweet, and it was soft inside but crispy outside. As soon as he bit it, it melted and dispersed in his mouth.

Eventually, the three of them had an enjoyable breakfast.

While Liam was on the island these past few days, he didn't put on airs, although he had a high position. He treated everyone in the base as his friends, and he had a deep attachment to the people of the Dark Night Organization. So he got along well with all of them.

Although these people were casual to him on the surface, they respected him more in their hearts.

After eating, Jaxtyn looked at Liam and said awkwardly, "Mr. Hoffman, Frey hasn't drunk or eaten anything for three days. He must be very thirsty and hungry now. But he is still stubborn and tight-lipped. He doesn't say anything, so we can't get any information about Ajax from him. If this goes on, I'm afraid Frey won't be able to hold on. He may die any moment."

Liam nodded. Then he turned to Annie on the bed and said in a deep voice, "It's time to see the second gift."

After saying this, he stood up, picked up Annie, and put her in the wheelchair.

Annie clutched the corner of Liam's clothes tightly, and her eyes were full of attachment.

But sadness surged in her heart because his very warm embrace did not belong to her.

In his eyes, she was nothing but a friend. They didn't feel the same for each other at all. Sometimes, Annie wondered if their ending would be different if she had met him earlier.

Unfortunately, she couldn't turn back the clock. And no one could give her an answer.

Liam pushed Annie's wheelchair into the elevator and went straight to the underground morgue of the hospital.

There was a small cubicle in the morgue, which was very secluded and soundproof. It was a temporary place built by the Dark Night Organization to imprison and interrogate Frey.

Jaxtyn unlocked the door with his fingerprint. And when the cubicle door opened, a stinky smell immediately came to their noses.

Liam frowned slightly. He turned to Annie and said, "Shall we have it cleaned first before going in?"

Upon seeing this scene, Annie understood what Liam's second gift was. She shook her head and said firmly, "No need. I'm not a spoiled little girl. Let's go in."

Liam didn't insist. He nodded and pushed Annie into the interrogation room.

In the interrogation room, both Frey's hands and feet were bound by iron chains. His body was full of wounds and bruises. Some had brown scabs, and some had suppurated after being soaked in his urine. 📍

Worse was, his eyes were gone. Only two terrifying dark holes were left, and they looked shocking.

At this moment, he lay on the floor like a corpse. Even when Jaxtyn, Liam, and Annie came in, he didn't make any movements.

Jaxtyn picked up a basin of cold water and poured it on Frey's face.

A splashing sound was heard in the interrogation room.

Frey immediately woke up.

And the first thing he did instead of struggling was to lick the drops of water around his mouth with difficulty.

As if he hadn't drunk enough, he licked the water on the floor like a wild dog.

At this moment, he was just an extremely thirsty and hungry man, instead of a powerful sniper.

Liam looked at Frey condescendingly and said coldly, "What can you say about your situation now? Do you find it interesting?"

Frey trembled all over. He raised his eyeless face, stared at Liam, and said hoarsely, "Liam, I've been waiting for you for three days and nights. Finally, you are willing to see me."

Liam asked indifferently, "Can you tell me your family's secrets and get rid of your misery as soon as possible?"

Frey suddenly burst into laughter after hearing this. Although his laughter was hoarse, it sounded very unbridled and arrogant.

At this moment, he seemed to have returned to being the domineering sniper of the dark team of the Black Spider.

Frey smiled sinisterly and said, "You are the only man who made me lose so thoroughly. So you're the only one qualified to interrogate me."

Chapter 301 The Craziest Person

Liam looked straight at the bloody dark holes that used to be Frey's eyes. He didn't show any fear at all. Instead, he snapped, "Then tell me. Where is Ajax Seymour?"

The corners of Frey's mouth curved into a playful smile. He said madly, "You want to know where he is? Ha-ha! Of course, he left Hoiwa Island and went to sleep with your woman. Actually, I've been holding on for three days and nights because I want to tell you the news in person. Are you surprised?"

Upon hearing this, Jaxtyn immediately shouted angrily, "That's impossible! The people of our organization blocked Hoiwa Island long ago. We have also checked all the surveillance videos of the dock and airport. Even a mosquito can't fly out, let alone a living person. What's more, he is crippled and disfigured. How did he leave this place?"

Frey snorted contemptuously and said disdainfully, "Well, yes, a living person can't leave. But how about corpses?"

Jaxtyn was rendered speechless by these words.

However, Frey didn't mind it. He continued, "I have to say that Ajax is the most cautious and craziest person I've ever met. Actually, he had the chance to leave on the cruise ship, but he didn't do it. Since he left the dungeon, he had been very uneasy. And he expected that you, Liam, would definitely board the cruise ship to kill him. So he hid in a coffin and spent the night with a corpse. Ha-ha!"

Liam was not surprised to hear this.

He said coldly, "So what?"

The smile on Frey's face froze. And the hysterical craziness on his face was replaced by contortion. Obviously, he didn't expect Liam's reaction. He stared at Liam and said in a horrifying voice, "Liam, I regret it. I should have shot you in the head that time. I should have just killed you." ②

Liam said bluntly, "But unfortunately, as a sniper, your biggest

weakness is arrogance."

Frey nodded in agreement and continued, "At first, I heard from them that you were very strong and terrifying. But I didn't believe it. I thought they were only shit-scared and ignorant. It turned out I was the ignorant one. Liam, I must admit that you are indeed a formidable enemy, but I don't think I lose.

Even if I die, I will bite off a piece of your flesh. I want to make you regretful, sad, and indignant. I want you to feel desperate. Ha-ha!"

Liam listened to Frey's words, and a hint of imperceptible madness flashed through his eyes. He sneered, "You lingered on for three days to make sure that Ajax was safely sent out of Hoiwa Island, right?"

Joy was written all over Frey's face. It was as if he had taken revenge. He laughed again and said, "Yes, you're right. The Seymour family has taken him away. And from now on, you will face endless revenge from the Seymour family. Yes, you are smart and powerful. But I am stronger than you. Ha-ha! It's a pity that I'm blind. Otherwise, it must be wonderful to see your shocked and regretful expression at the moment."

Liam also laughed.

Frey didn't expect this again. Liam's laughter gave him a sense of panic. He was stunned for a while.

A bad feeling surged in his heart.

Blue veins stood out on his flushed neck as he roared, "What are you laughing at?"

Liam stopped laughing and looked at Frey solemnly. Then he said disdainfully, "I'm laughing at you for being stupid. Even if Ajax arrived in Salem, so what? Do you think he can scare me? I'm telling you, he will only bring disaster to the Seymour family. You don't know how powerful your enemies are."

Frey retorted with a frown, "Aren't you from the Dark Night Organization? You are just armed forces like our Black Spider. What's more, you are merely avenging yourself this time. In the future, if the Seymour family retaliates, the Dark Night Organization may not help you."

At this moment, Liam was no longer in the mood to listen to Frey's nonsense.

He took out the Desert Eagle Annie gave him when he first came here and handed it to her. Then he said indifferently, "This is my second gift for you."

Annie immediately understood Liam's meaning. He was giving Frey's life to her to avenge herself. So she took the pistol from him.

For a moment, hatred and anger appeared in her eyes, making them look terrifying. It was as if she wanted to tear Frey apart completely.

After all, this man in front of her almost killed the man she liked and respected the most.

How could she not hate Frey? Of course, she would never let him get away.

Annie raised the Desert Eagle and aimed it between Frey's eyebrows.

When Frey heard the sounds, he looked very anxious.

He said nervously, "Liam, you haven't told me yet. Who on earth do you rely on? I didn't lose, and I won't lose. You must be lying to me, right?"

Frey kept roaring, exhausting all his strength.

Suddenly, there was a loud bang.

It was the sound of a gunshot.

Frey's roar dissipated in the air.

The entire morgue returned to silence.

Chapter 302 The Third Gift

Jaxtyn swiftly tidied up the mess, packed up the lifeless body of Frey and arranged for its direct incineration at the crematory.

Liam pushed Annie alone and strolled around the park outside the hospital.

The radiant sunshine instantly banished the chill that lingered from the morgue.

Clutching her clothes tightly, Annie inquired, "Are you leaving?"

After a brief pause, Liam nodded. "I've been away from home for far too long. It's about time I return."

Annie's gaze dropped instantly and her eyes brimmed with sorrow.

Both of them remained in silence, neither uttering a word.

After a prolonged silence, Annie patted her face and raised her head.

In that moment, the sorrow on her face transformed into a radiant smile.

Casting a playful glance at Liam, she quipped, "You know, you've been haunting my ward, checking up on me every single day. It has become quite bothersome. So, leaving might just be a good thing!"

Once she finished, the tension in the air immediately dissipated.

Both of them locked eyes and erupted into laughter, like mischievous children stumbling upon something captivating.

As evening fell, Liam prepared to deliver a lecture.

Approaching the multimedia conference room door, he slowed his pace and furrowed his brow.

In the past, this room would have been bustling with activity and brightly illuminated.

But now, it stood in complete darkness, devoid of any signs of life.

Perplexed, Liam voiced his confusion. "What's going on?"

However, as soon as he finished his question, a series of sounds emanated from within the meeting room.

With a nervous expression, Liam leaned forward and cautiously opened

the door.

To his astonishment, a huge light board greeted his eyes!

In the midst of darkness, the glowing words appeared on the board, lighting up from left to right.

"Today marks our third day together with Mr. Hoffman. We've gained invaluable experiences during this time. Mr. Hoffman, please grace us with your presence often in the days to come. Farewell!"

The boards bearing the word 'Farewell' ignited one by one, resembling flickering candles in the night.

Liam's body relaxed, and his eyes grew slightly teary. He felt a touch of emotion.

Even at their advanced age, this group of people were so thoughtful.

Wearing a gentle smile, Liam was about to switch on the lights when Jaxtyn's voice rang out from the crowd. "Wait, don't turn on the lights yet. I haven't lit the candles!"

Annie, slightly irritated, scolded, "You're so clumsy. Hurry up and bring out the cake!"

Jaxtyn nodded hurriedly and wheeled out the cake trolley.

The scene where Liam looked up at the burning cruise ship in the distance was painted on the cake. It was adorned with twenty-eight flickering candles.

Suddenly, a chorus of voices erupted, belting out the words, "Happy birthday to you!"

Then, the entire group launched into a joyful rendition of a birthday song.

Liam found himself torn between tears and laughter. He raised his hand and declared, "But it's not my birthday yet."

Emerging from the crowd, the old doctor stepped forward with a smile, remarking, "We might not be by your side on your actual birthday, Mr. Hoffman. Tonight, we'll celebrate it in advance!"

The old director standing nearby joined in the laughter and added, "Indeed, Mr. Hoffman, we've not been involved in your birthday in the past twenty-eight years. Let's make up for lost time tonight! Everyone,

let's say 'happy birthday' twenty-eight times!"

With that, the entire crowd joyfully chanted the phrase a grand total of twenty-eight times!

In an instant, the once quiet meeting room transformed into a bustling hub of noise and liveliness, touching the hearts of all present.

Even Liam, a tough man, couldn't help but feel a gentle touch of emotion. His eyes grew moist in the face of such a spectacle.

His heart overflowed with warmth and tenderness!

In just a matter of days, he had found a genuine circle of friends, forming bonds that felt real and lasting.

"Thank you." Liam's voice was tinged with emotion as he sincerely expressed his gratitude.

Holding a knife, Jaxtyn called out, "Birthday boy, come on over and slice the cake!"

Caught between laughter and tears, Liam momentarily hesitated, unsure of how to react.

He eventually took the knife in his hand, skillfully divided the grand cake into individual portions, and ensured everyone received their share.

Leaning in close, Jaxtyn whispered in Liam's ear, "Annie was the mastermind behind all of this. I've never seen her take such an interest in any man before."

He winked mischievously at Liam, implying that he should seize the chance.

Wearing a subtle smile, Liam turned around and made his way towards Annie. He extended the sliced cake to her and said softly, "Even though our time together has been brief, I'm truly grateful to you. Thank you for everything you've done for me, and I'll never forget you."

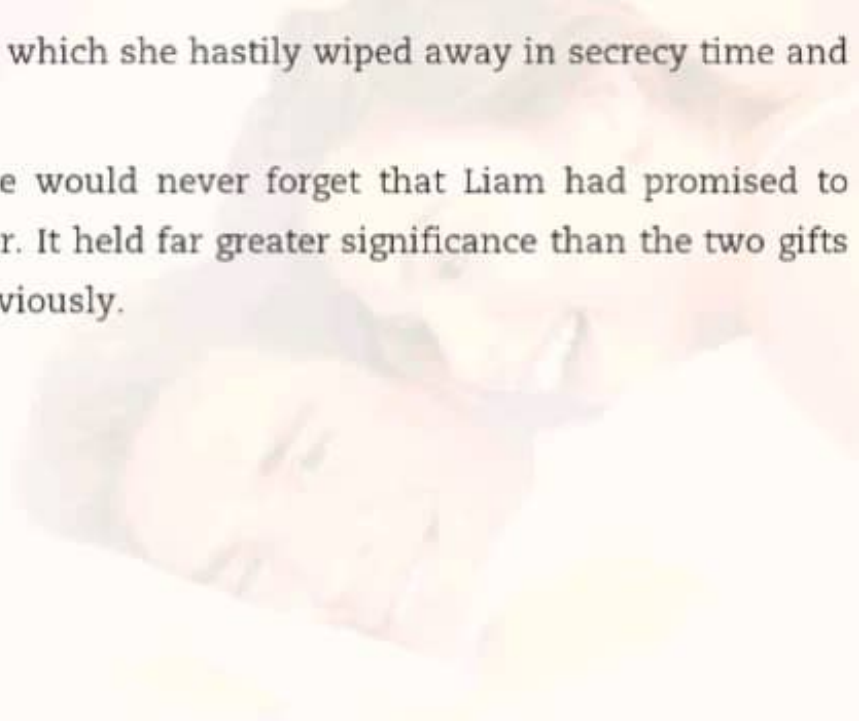
As Annie heard his words, her eyes welled up with tears once more. Playfully, she raised her tiny fist and waved it, feigning a threat. "If you dare to forget about me, I'll have to teach you a good lesson!"

The onlookers simply believed that the two were reluctant to part ways, so they exchanged smiles. The atmosphere remained lively.

Amidst the crowd, Annie was the only one who lowered her head. Tears

brimmed in her eyes which she hastily wiped away in secrecy time and again.

In Annie's heart, she would never forget that Liam had promised to always remember her. It held far greater significance than the two gifts he had given her previously.



Chapter 303 Rowan Seymour

The next day in the morning, Annie and Jaxtyn were at the airport of Hoiwa Island.

Jaxtyn pushed Annie's wheelchair and looked at the plane flying away in the sky.

When Jaxtyn saw Annie's depressed expression, he couldn't help sighing and comforting her, "Judging from Mr. Hoffman's strength, he must be in the third rank of the organization, right? Don't you think he is much too good for you?"

Of course, Annie understood what Jaxtyn meant.

But she was not the kind of person who gave up just like that.

She looked up at the plane, which was getting further and further away. She clenched her fists tightly, and became more determined.

Annie swore to herself she would do her best to catch up with Liam. She must become his most capable assistant.

After she fully recovered, she would accept the promotion quest.

As long as she completed the quest, she would be promoted to the second rank. If this happened, she could be stationed wherever she liked and take up a post at will.

Jaxtyn watched Annie's expression for a while, feeling a pang of sadness in his heart.

Fortunately, he stood behind her. He was able to hide all the affection in his eyes.

Actually, he could only dare to look at her like this when she couldn't see it.

It was just a pity that Annie never had feelings for him.

In Salem, there were more than ten heavy trucks outside Furi Hospital. They were like tall walls surrounding the gate of the hospital.

At the front was a black Rolls-Royce.

Suddenly, the doors of the trucks opened.

Then a group of brawny men rushed out one after another.

"Get out of our way!"

"If you don't want to die, get out of the hospital."

They broke into the hospital, cursing. It was as if they didn't see the obstruction of the Axe Security.

As they rushed in, these burly men kept pushing away the doctors and patients getting in their way. They were extremely arrogant and domineering.

They turned all the wards upside down one after another, and everybody was harassed. As a result, the entire Furi Hospital was busted up.

Inside the Rolls-Royce, a man in a suit and leather shoes sat in the back seat.

Around his right wrist was a green Rolex Submariner watch. The corners of his eyes were slender, making him look like a viper.

He held a photo in his hand. He looked down and stared at it with malicious eyes.

In the photo was a family of three. They were the members of the Fiber family.

The man took out a pair of scissors and slowly cut out Julie's figure.

He looked at the beautiful face of the woman in the photo with greed in his eyes. Then he stuck out his slender tongue and licked it a few times.

The man suddenly laughed and said obscenely, "No wonder that loser Ajax likes you so much. It turns out you are so beautiful that even every part of my body is being seduced. I am dying to rape you."

The head of the Seymour family had three grandsons. The eldest was Ajax, the second was Raul, and the youngest was Rowan, who was the one sitting inside the Rolls-Royce now.

Since Ajax was the eldest, everyone knew that he was raised as the heir of the Seymour family. And the second grandson Raul was the most frightening madman raised by the Seymour family.

But the people in Salem didn't know that the youngest Rowan was the most patient poisonous viper in the Seymour family.

Once he launched an attack, it would be fatal.

Raul was defeated by Liam, and Ajax was seriously injured and disfigured.

So it was time for Rowan to show up.

As long as he could get rid of Liam, he would be favored by everyone in the family, and he could gain their full support.

And in the end, he would be the only heir.

At this moment, a group of strong men rushed out of the hospital.

Rowan rolled down the car window. The leader of the strong men stood in front of the window. His eyes flickered before he said, "Mr. Seymour, we can't find her."

Viciousness flashed in Rowan's eyes. He sneered, "Mobilize all the resources of the Seymour family. Offer a one-hundred-million-dollar reward to those who can tell us the whereabouts of this woman. Also, contact the Riley family and the Evans family. Tell them the time has come. It's either they pay money or send people."

In the past few years, Rowan had kept a low profile. But he built a deep relationship with the core members of the other influential clans in secret.

Moreover, they had a common enemy, and it was Liam.

Tonight, the news about the astonishing bounty spread to all the underground forces in Salem, causing a huge sensation.

The target was Julie, and the bounty was one hundred million dollars.

Who would not be interested? In fact, such an enormous bounty was destined to make many people unable to sleep.

Of course, this news was also sent to Klaus. He didn't waste any time before telling Liam, who had just gotten off the plane.

When Liam saw the message on his phone, a murderous look flashed in his eyes.

He sneered and snapped, "The three major families? I'll destroy one of them first, then."

Chapter 304 The Birthday Party

Klaus also sent Liam an address.

It was where Julie hid now.

Liam was in the car at the moment. When he thought of the information he had received from Klaus, he couldn't help feeling relieved. He murmured to himself, "Fortunately, I transferred them in advance. I can't be too careful when dealing with these animals."

Following the message provided by Klaus, he drove to a remote manor. Since the place was secluded, there were only a few people there. And now that it was under Klaus' full control, even the network was cut off. It was no doubt a suitable place for Julie to hide.

At the same time, moving Julie to a quieter place was also good for her to rest and recuperate. It could be said that what Klaus did made him kill two birds with one stone.

At this moment, Julie was in the greenhouse of the manor, sitting in a wheelchair and taking pictures of butterflies.

When she was still a CEO, she had never been as idle as right now. Now that she had a lot of free time, she could finally sharpen up her rusty photography skills again.

As soon as she aimed her camera at the butterfly at the door, a man's figure entered the lens.

Liam stood at the door, dressed in simple casual clothes. As the warm sunshine sprinkled on his face, he looked more handsome. He was as handsome as he was in her dreams.

Tears welled up in Julie's eyes, and her heart jumped for joy like a deer dancing in the forest, difficult to control.

She smiled and pushed her wheelchair towards Liam at the door.

Liam was about to walk up to Julie when she suddenly said, "Wait! Don't move."

As soon as she said this, his foot froze in the air, and his eyes became vigilant.

At this moment, Julie picked up her camera and focused the lens on the top of Liam's head, then pressed the shutter release.

It was only then that Liam felt relieved. He couldn't help chuckling.

Julie smiled proudly, pushed the wheelchair to Liam's side, and handed him the camera. She said, "Look! It's gorgeous, isn't it?"

Liam leaned over and looked at the screen of the camera, only to see two blue butterflies landing on his hair.

The background of the photo were green trees and houses with smoke curling up from the chimneys.

It was like a beautiful painting of the countryside inside the camera, full of vitality.

Since Liam was also looking at the photo, their heads leaned together. And a romantic atmosphere immediately filled the greenhouse.

Liam coughed lightly and said gently, "You still need to rest. Don't stay out for too long."

However, as soon as he said this, he felt a soft touch on his left cheek, which was a little wet.

He turned his head only to see Julie propping up herself. Her eyes were full of affection when she kissed him gently on the cheek.

Liam had been missing her terribly. So after being kissed by her, he could no longer hold back. He kissed her on the lips hard.

Their lips only parted when they both felt out of breath.

Julie tugged at the corner of Liam's clothes. With a flushed face, she said shyly, "Won't you leave me this time?"

"No," Liam said, shaking his head.

He stayed with Julie in the greenhouse a little longer before watching her leave.

Klaus had been waiting for a long time outside.

Liam's gentle face suddenly became indifferent. And coldness constantly surged out of his eyes.

At this moment, he seemed a different person. He was no longer the gentle and soft man in front of Julie just now.

He was only gentle in front of Julie. But in front of others, he acted as a

noble and dignified superior.

Liam looked at the butterflies in the distance and asked coldly, "How is your search for Ajax?"

Klaus swallowed his saliva hard and didn't dare to speak for a while.

He felt that the Liam in front of him now was totally different from the Liam he met before.

The Liam standing in front of him now was even more frightening.

Klaus suppressed the nervousness in his heart and said in a trembling voice, "We still don't know his whereabouts."

As soon as he said this, he instantly sensed the cold killing intent approaching.

He felt like he was in an ice cellar. It was so cold that he could hardly breathe.

Klaus quickly knelt on one knee and said in horror, "Mr. Hoffman, I've already sent all the people out. Everyone in the Seymour family is being monitored. We'll definitely get the news as soon as possible."

Liam said with an impassive countenance, "It's okay if he doesn't come out. After I destroy the Seymour family, he will have no one to rely on. He will be doomed soon."

Upon hearing this, Klaus immediately stood up and handed over the Seymour family's information to Liam. He said with righteous indignation, "Ajax's grandfather will celebrate his seventieth birthday three days from now. And at the party, he is going to announce the next head of the Seymour family. Humph! The members of the Seymour family are still in the mood to hold a birthday party. How stupid they are!"

Liam smiled disdainfully and said coldly, "I accidentally helped the Seymour family a lot this time. Now that only one of the three young members of the Seymour family can move freely, that person will naturally become the head of the Seymour family."

Although Liam spoke casually, he did not suppress the cold killing intent in his body at all.

So Klaus, standing next to him, was as nervous as a rabbit waiting to be

torn into pieces by a tiger. He trembled all over and didn't dare to raise his head.

After talking with Klaus, Liam returned to the gentle and sunny young man. Then he went straight to Julie.

For three days, Liam and Julie enjoyed the peaceful moment in the villa. Then the birthday of Ajax's grandfather came.

Liam was wearing a dark blue suit, straight and neat. It gave him a sense of indescribable dignity.

He put on a golden mask to cover his entire face.

For a moment, Liam transformed into a young man from the upper class, mysterious and noble.

A Rolls-Royce Phantom had already been parked outside the manor, waiting for him.

Liam got in the back seat while Jaxtyn was in the driver's seat.

Since Liam would be dealing with the Seymour family, he specially arranged for Jaxtyn to be here.

After all, his identity tonight was King of the Dark Night Organization.

Liam looked at himself in the rearview mirror and asked indifferently, "Are the gifts ready?"

Jaxtyn grinned hideously and said, "Mr. Hoffman, don't worry. I have prepared enough gifts for each animal of the Seymour family."

Chapter 305 Three Coffins

Tonight, the Royal Hotel was unusually grand and lively. Different kinds of luxury cars were parked outside.

Everyone in the hotel now was invited guests because the Seymour family booked the entire Royal Hotel for Michael Seymour's birthday party.

At this moment, everyone was in the biggest banquet hall of the hotel. Michael sat on the central seat with a calm expression.

His children and grandchildren surrounded him, flattering and complimenting him. They also offered generous gifts to him.

"Grandpa, I know you like antiques the most. This beaded bracelet is worth three million dollars. It's my birthday gift for you."

"Grandpa, this is the pearl bracelet I've worked hard to get. It can prolong one's life, so if you wear it, you can have a longer life. It's worth six million dollars."

"Dad, this eaglewood ornament is worth thirty million dollars. It preserves health, and it's a collectible item."

Michael looked at all kinds of expensive gifts in front of him. His expression didn't change much.

Being the head of the Seymour family for many years, he had already seen too many good things.

At this moment, Rowan walked up to Michael and opened the long box in his hand. Then he said proudly, "Grandpa, this is Salvator Mundi, one of Leonardo da Vinci's paintings. This is worth one hundred million dollars."

As soon as he said this, everyone's eyes widened in shock.

The painting must be an authentic work of Leonardo da Vinci. After all, Rowan wouldn't embarrass Michael on his birthday by giving a fake gift. On the surface, this piece of artwork was worth one hundred million dollars. But in reality, it was not something that could be obtained with money.

Suddenly, Michael's calm expression changed, and he burst into laughter.

He took the box like a greedy lecher and stroked it carefully with eyes full of greed. He said, "Good, good, good!" He looked at Rowan and said, "Rowan, you really deserve to be my grandson."

By this time, it was obvious that Michael's attitude towards Rowan was different from his attitude towards others.

Except for the jealousy in the eyes of the children and grandchildren of the Seymour family, the rest of the people complimented Rowan.

"No wonder he is Mr. Seymour's grandson. Sure enough, he is capable."

"It's not only because he is capable. It's what we call filial piety."

"If my grandson can give me a painting like this, I will immediately give all my properties to him."

Rowan played with the green Rolex Submariner watch around his wrist while listening to the people's flattery. He felt extremely proud.

At this moment, the butler at the side approached Michael and whispered in his ear with a smile, "Mr. Seymour, your children and grandchildren have finished giving their gifts. It's time for the guests to give their presents."

Michael nodded. He stared at the painting for a while before he reluctantly put it away.

He turned to Rowan and ordered, "My dear grandson, sit next to me and keep this painting well. I will appreciate it more tonight."

Rowan smiled complacently. He sat next to Michael, almost sure in his heart that he would be the heir.

However, he still politely said, "Grandpa, as much as I want to accompany you, I have invited a big shot from the army to attend your birthday party. I have to greet him in person."

"Oh, really?" Michael's eyes lit up at once. He smiled and said, "That's good. Indeed, you deserve to be my grandson. You can even invite someone from the army to my birthday. You are really capable. Go ahead."

After getting Michael's permission, Rowan held his head high and

glanced at the other members of the Seymour family. He smiled playfully, turned around, and left.

The children and grandchildren of the Seymour family looked at him. They were angry in their hearts, but they didn't dare to say anything.

Immediately afterward, the guests in the hall presented their generous gifts to Michael.

The Seymour family was one of the richest families in Salem, and they ran a chain of bars.

But this business was only their front. Secretly, they were involved in casinos and organ trading. They also had businesses with the police, the army, and the underworld. Therefore, the Seymour family had a high status in Salem.

So it was not surprising that the guests at this birthday party were either gang leaders or company CEOs.

Each of them had assets worth at least several billions of dollars.

After all, Salem was very big. If even the businessmen with assets only worth hundreds of millions were allowed to attend this party, the banquet hall might not be enough to accommodate all the guests.

Rowan deliberately arranged for the Evans family and Riley family to be the last to present their gifts. At this time, it was finally their turn.

"On behalf of the Riley family of Salem, we are giving you this antique knife worth ten million dollars. We are willing to get along well with the Seymour family and Mr. Rowan Seymour forever."

"On behalf of the Evans family of Salem, we are giving you a set of Egyptian turquoise jewelry worth ten million dollars too. And we are also willing to get along well with the Seymour family and Mr. Rowan Seymour forever."

For a moment, the two gifts worth ten million dollars showed the strength of the two noble families. Naturally, they won the praise of the present guests.

"Oh, my God! They really deserve to be one of the top ten families in Salem. They even provided a generous gift worth ten million dollars."

"Didn't you hear them? They are friends with Rowan. Rowan is really

"Among Mr. Seymour's three grandsons, only Rowan is the real man."

At this moment, someone suddenly cried from the door, "Mr. Seymour, King of the Dark Night Organization is here to present these three coffins as gifts to the Seymour family on behalf of the organization."

In an instant, there was dead silence in the hall.

These inappropriate words resounded through the entire banquet hall and rang out in everyone's ears.

And under everyone's scared eyes, the three spruce coffins broke the door open.

It created a loud noise.

These three coffins inexplicably appeared in the banquet hall. They fell from the air, smashing and overturning the tables and chairs. Everything was a mess.

The butler at the side was the first to react.

He stepped forward and shouted angrily, "Whoever dares to make trouble at the birthday party of our Seymour family must be courting death."

Outside the door, another loud voice sounded, "Make trouble? Who is courting death? I didn't expect that even a stooge of the Seymour family would be so arrogant."

As soon as he said this, the masked Liam slowly stepped into the hall.

Chapter 306 Cassian Bernard

The guests in attendance were a bit spooked.

Considering that it was Michael's birthday, anyone who dared to stir up trouble in the Seymour family and even sent three coffins must be some sort of powerful person.

However, their fear dissipated when they realized that only Liam had shown up, accompanied by Jaxtyn!

In an instant, the fear in everyone's hearts gave way to unbridled anger! "You scoundrel! How dare you cause trouble for the Seymour family! You're asking for death!" one guest exclaimed.

"And who do you think you are, sending those coffins to the Seymour family?! I'll make sure your whole family pays!" another threatened.

No one had anticipated such a golden opportunity to please the Seymour family would arise this way!

Every single guest present seized the chance with fervor, shouting out their own names and brandishing their influence to intimidate Liam.

Observing Liam standing at the door, the middle-aged butler assumed he was scared. ①

He lifted his head, casting a scornful and fierce gaze upon Liam and Jaxtyn, obviously filled with contempt.

The butler curled his lips in a sneer and spoke with utmost disdain. "A couple of mutts like you dare to disrupt my master's birthday? Rot in hell!"

With those words, he shifted his cold gaze away from Liam and Jaxtyn to address another man. "Crocodile, someone's causing trouble in your territory. What do you think we should do?"

Ever since Axe Security's guards were kicked out of the Royal Hotel, the Crocodile Gang, the second largest gang in Salem, took charge of security here.

Today, it was Michael's birthday party, and the gang's leader, Cassian Bernard, was among the attendees.

A towering figure, easily reaching two meters in height, emerged slowly from the crowd.

Clad in a dark green suit, Cassian possessed an air of a primordial alligator with his icy gaze.

Crocodile was a moniker bestowed upon him due to his many years of battle in the society.

Just like his nickname, he would set his sights on prey and never let go until it met its demise.

Cassian puffed on his cigar, exuding the demeanor befitting a gang leader. He said respectfully, "Fear not, Mr. Seymour. Leave this trifling matter to me. I guarantee your satisfaction."

With a wave of his hand, a swarm of burly men in black suits, who had been stationed at the hall's corners, surged forward.

The crew assembled by the Crocodile Gang were a bunch of ruthless thugs, far more ferocious and violent than the members of the Axe Gang. Unlike the Axe Gang, who had managed to reform and change their ways, the Crocodile Gang still reveled in their bloodthirsty brawls.

Before Cassian even gave the command, these men disregarded the presence of the high-profile guests and swiftly shed their formal attire. From their belts, they brandished menacing machetes.

The middle-aged butler scowled, his discontent evident. "This is supposed to be a birthday party! It's completely inappropriate to start a brawl here! Drag them out, strip their skin, drain them of every last drop of blood, and rip their hearts out. Chop the rest of their bodies into pieces and feed them to the dogs!"

Cassian glared at Liam and unleashed a string of curses. "You damn bastard, who gave you the audacity to provoke the Seymour family? Today, I, Crocodile, will personally peel the skin off your body!"

Onlookers glanced at the foolish-looking Liam standing by the door, paying little heed to Cassian. They sneered without hesitation.

"I recall that Mr. Bernard used to be a chef, and he possesses an impressive knife skills."

"You're right. I've heard that Mr. Bernard once flayed his enemy alive,

causing them excruciating pain until their eventual demise!"

"If these two fools end up in Mr. Bernard's clutches, they'll suffer a fate far worse than a swift death!"

Cassian's satisfaction grew as he basked in the admiration of others.

His smile twisted into a more sinister expression, and with a snap, he declared, "Once I remove that mask of yours, I'll pluck out your eyes and toss them to the hungry crocodiles in the swimming pool of my villa!"

Having spoken those chilling words, Cassian snatched a deboning knife from one of his subordinates and strode purposefully toward Liam.

Lifting the gleaming blade, he aimed for one of Liam's eyes, intending to strike it mercilessly.

Fear washed over the guests, causing many of them to shield their eyes with trembling hands.

Vivid images of Liam meeting a gruesome demise flooded their minds.

Yet, in the next instant, a deafening explosion reverberated through the air.

As they cautiously opened their eyes, they found themselves gaping in disbelief, utterly at a loss for words.

Chapter 307 Michael Seymour

The sight before them was nothing short of shocking, leaving everyone dumbfounded.

Cassian, the fierce fighter, spun around like a whirlwind.

As he spun, dizziness overcame him, causing him to lose his balance and crash heavily onto the floor.

Concerned, the men of the Crocodile Gang rushed forward, attempting to assist their boss.

However, Cassian's immense strength combined with his feeble legs resulted in him toppling directly onto his subordinates.

Suddenly, chaos ensued as tables and chairs were overturned, and people were sent sprawling.

The overwhelming dizziness persisted with Cassian. It was accompanied by a sticky sensation in his mouth and a queasy stomach that stirred intense disgust within him.

Unable to contain it any longer, he vomited forcefully.

The vomit contained a horrifying mixture of blood and several dislodged teeth, all of which fell to the floor.

In this moment, the right side of Cassian's face sagged, his cheekbone was swollen, and blood continued to trickle from the corner of his mouth, a stark contrast to his formerly arrogant and domineering demeanor.

Liam's forceful slap had instantly shattered half of Cassian's teeth, leaving him in excruciating pain.

He grimaced and bellowed, "What the hell are you waiting for? Kill this bastard!"

Finally, his subordinates snapped back to their senses.

Despite Liam's ruthless attack, they remained unfazed, bolstered by their higher numbers.

"Kill him!"

Everyone brandished their weapons and directed their fury towards Liam.

Standing beside him, Jaxtyn sneered, looking down on their opponents. They were far from worthy adversaries for the likes of King.

Taking a step forward, Jaxtyn retrieved three steel rods connected with iron chains from his waist.

With a swift motion, the three steel rods assembled seamlessly, transforming into a long, menacing black stick.

"Come on!" Jaxtyn bellowed, charging fearlessly toward the Crocodile Gang's men, prepared to face them single-handedly.

He swung the sleek black stick, wielding it like a tempest. No one dare approach him!

Within a mere moment, the rowdy ruffians from the Crocodile Gang, accustomed to brawling and bloodshed, found themselves sprawled on the floor, defeated!

They lay writhing on the floor like a swarm of maggots and their agonized screams reverberated through the grand hall!

In that instant, the entire hall fell into a hushed silence. Their prior arrogance dissipated into thin air.

Witnessing all his men felled by just one man, and with his teeth shattered, Cassian couldn't help but feel a profound sense of shame.

If they departed from this humiliation today, who would ever consider joining forces with the despondent Crocodile Gang?

Salem would no longer be a place for Cassian to stay.

Cassian glared resentfully at Liam, then turned his gaze towards the middle-aged butler and snapped, "Today, the blame lies with me. Regrettably, you all have to bear witness to bloodshed on this auspicious occasion. Please accept my sincerest apologies!"

Though Cassian's voice sounded muffled due to his swollen face, every person in proximity heard his words loud and clear.

Were they about to resort to firearms!?

The middle-aged butler hesitated, reluctant to make a weighty decision. His gaze shifted towards Michael.

In that moment, Michael remained stoic, his expression unchanged, akin to an all-powerful emperor, exuding an air of superiority as he

disdainfully observed the world around him.

His icy eyes burned with intensity as he fixed his gaze upon Cassian and nodded coldly.

With the confirmation he desired, Cassian's grin twisted into a grotesque look. He took the phone, dialed a number, and bellowed into it, "Round up all the gunmen and bring them to the banquet hall! It's time to take out these kids!"

"Yes, sir!" echoed a thunderous response from the other end of the line.

Cassian locked eyes with Liam, a contemptuous sneer etched across his face. "So, you consider yourself a skilled fighter? Well, guess what? Times have changed, my friend. The gun is the ultimate weapon now!"

His words only solidified what everyone had been thinking.

The guests turned towards Liam with cold, disdainful stares.

It was as if they were already envisioning his lifeless body lying before them.

In no time, a swarm of suited men inundated the scene, their holstered pistols glistening coldly in the ambient light.

Under the mask, Liam's eyes absorbed every detail.

He scanned the area and immediately discerned the presence of at least fifteen gunmen!

But he was far from being intimidated. Instead, a smug grin emerged at the corners of his lips.

By going into the banquet hall today with just one man, he had already braced himself for this very moment!

No longer would he fall victim to an ambush like the one on the beach of Hoiwa Island!

Before Liam could utter a word, the gunmen closed in on him and his man. Each of them deftly raised the hems of their suits and brought out their pistols from their holsters.

In an instant, more than a dozen black muzzles, radiating an icy and merciless killing intent, were trained directly at Liam!

Cassian's sense of humiliation immediately vanished from his heart!

Although his expression remained stern, the smug satisfaction on his

face couldn't be concealed.

Cassian locked eyes with Liam and let out a fierce laugh, "You scoundrel, go meet your end outside. I won't allow your blood to stain the floor here!"

Hearing this, Jaxtyn sneered and fired back, "Ha ha, what makes you think a puny shrimp like you can give us orders?"

Cassian's face contorted instantly. He waved his hand in preparation to command his men to open fire!

But then, a sudden interruption came from the middle-aged butler behind him.

"Hold on! My master has something to say!"

Chapter 308 Be Slaves Forever

The shout reverberated through the hall, leaving everyone in a state of shock. All eyes turned towards Michael, curious about what was unfolding before them.

Anticipation filled the air as they braced themselves for the possibility of witnessing Liam's immediate demise. What was happening now? The tension was palpable.

At the central seat in the hall, the old man, who had been looking like a sleeping emperor suddenly snapped his eyes open.

In that moment, a regal aura emanated from him. He exuded a sense of superiority.

A hushed silence fell upon the guests as they instinctively ceased their conversations.

Michael's gaze turned cold and dignified as he said, "Young man, so you claim to be from the Dark Night Organization and call yourself King? But what do these names signify? In my seventy years of life, I've never come across them. Furthermore, why have you chosen my birthday celebration as the stage for your disruptive act? Care to shed some light on these mysteries?"

Cassian, who had been wanting an opportunity to impress the prestigious Seymour family, seized the moment and chimed in, "Answer him now!"

Liam responded with a faint smile, evading a direct answer. Instead, he shifted his gaze to Jaxtyn and said, "Why don't you enlighten him?"

Jaxtyn, standing beside Liam, swiftly pulled out his phone and smirked. "Well, you old bastard, if you really want to know why we crashed your precious birthday party, I'll read it loud and clear!"

With a voice that echoed throughout the extravagant hall, he bellowed into his phone, "The Seymour family has been involved in the despicable trade of human organs. They are responsible for the deaths of over a thousand innocent souls..."

All the damning information had been acquired from Chet, back on Hoiwa Island.

In one fell swoop, Jaxtyn publicly unveiled all the evidence exposing the heinous crimes committed by the Seymour family!

The people in the banquet hall held their breath, their eyes widening in disbelief, as they listened intently to Jaxtyn's revelations.

During this tense moment, Liam's gaze turned icy as he meticulously observed the reactions of the crowd.

Then, his eyes locked onto Michael.

A sneer played upon Liam's lips as he taunted, "The Seymour family is so heartless that they deserve to be hunted down by anyone with a shred of decency! We're not here for anything else but to wipe out you filth!"

Instantly, the audience erupted into an uproar, and the guests whispered amongst themselves, "What? The Seymour family was involved in human trafficking?"

"Did you hear that? Their establishments are also engaged in illegal prostitution, forcing women into such demeaning acts!"

"Little wonder those folks are swimming in riches. Seems like none of those top ten clans are clean!"

With their family's dark secrets laid bare for all to see, Michael could no longer maintain his composure.

His forehead pulsated with visible veins, and a seething rage burned in his eyes. He bellowed in anger, "How dare you, you insolent brat! Spewing nonsense and slandering the esteemed Seymour family?!"

Meanwhile, the middle-aged butler was filled with panic as their family's secrets were gradually exposed.

After all, he was the one who managed most of the family's clandestine affairs.

Michael's furious outburst jolted the butler back to reality.

His panic transformed into a fierce resolve as he let out a thunderous roar, "Causing chaos at the birthday celebration and spreading baseless rumors! Tell me, which rival clan do you bastards represent? You're

aiming to tarnish the impeccable reputation of the Seymour family?"

At the mention of this, an immediate silence fell upon the gathering.

After all, they were attending the grand birthday party hosted by the prestigious Seymour family. Regardless of the truth behind the accusations, it was a topic too sensitive to be discussed openly.

In an instant, driven by a desperate urge to rectify their recent missteps, everyone swiftly rallied behind the Seymour family, unleashing a torrent of curses.

"Who the hell does this bastard think he is? He is just twisting the truth and spreading baseless rumors!"

"Yes. Can you believe he actually calls himself 'King of the Dark Night Organization'? How childish can one get?"

"Apologize to Mr. Michael Seymour on your knees, or you'll regret it!"

Liam helplessly shook his head at the crowd's insults as a sardonic smile played on his lips. "A bunch of hypocritical imbeciles. The truth is staring you in the face, yet you choose to conveniently turn a blind eye. It's utterly ludicrous!"

Enraged, these individuals, accustomed to being adored by others, widened their eyes and retorted in a hostile tone.

"You little brat, tell us who's pulling the strings behind all this!"

"Do you honestly think we'll let you get away with it? Remove that mask, and we'll ensure you're completely ostracized!"

"Your descendants will forever be slaves! Reduced to a life of prostitution and begging, just to survive!"

"Enough!" The outburst came from the middle-aged butler, who silenced them all.

Only then did the guests realize the inappropriateness of their actions and instantly fell silent.

After all, it was the birthday celebration of a notable person in the Seymour family. How could they allow such chaos to unfold?

The middle-aged butler fought to suppress his rage. He bowed his head as he addressed Michael with deference. "Master, what shall be our next course of action?"

A surge of icy, murderous intent flared in Michael's eyes, only to be swiftly quelled.

Regardless of the outcome, the Seymour family had already suffered a great humiliation!

Weariness etched across his face, Michael rose to his feet, resting on his crutch, and let out a weary sigh. "Don't let them die just yet."

Understanding his intention instantly, the middle-aged butler nodded.

His master intended to extract information from them, to uncover how the secrets of the Seymour family had been leaked!

Taking confident strides forward, he held Michael's arm and commanded Cassian, "Render those two men limbless and drag them away. Make them tell you who is orchestrating this smear campaign against the Seymour family!"

"Yes, sir!" Cassian, a shrewd and cunning man, flashed a sinister grin at his subordinates. "Aim for their limbs. Let not a single shot miss its mark!"

After he said that, his gaze shifted towards Liam with a disdainful sneer.

"Don't even think about making any sudden moves out of fear. If I kill you, I'll be the one to bear Mr. Michael Seymour's wrath!"

Yet, as soon as those words left his lips, instead of succumbing to fear, Liam burst into laughter!

His laughter boomed through the grand hall, echoing like a mighty bell.

Just when everyone believed Liam had lost his mind, he suddenly said, "Michael, you scum! Do you honestly believe that every person is a pawn at your disposal, serving the whims of the illustrious Seymour family?"

The utterance of the word 'scum' sent shockwaves across the faces of everyone present!

Chapter 309 A New Son

Michael shook off the butler's hand with a cold face. He was angry now. He shouted, "Good!"

Liam smiled faintly and said in a brave tone, "Thank you for the compliment."

When Michael heard this, he was so angry that he trembled all over. He stared at Liam viciously and shouted, "Young man, don't be too arrogant! A person like you will die the fastest."

Liam shook his head and said disdainfully, "Do you think I am like you, dirty old scum? As you said, I'm a young man. So can I be called a young man if I'm not arrogant?"

Instantly, Michael's anger intensified. He ignored Liam this time and turned to the guests present. He said solemnly, "No one can challenge the dignity of the Seymour family. Everyone, you can stay here and watch a bloody show alive. What do you think?"

After he said this, his eyes swept across the crowd.

The faces of all the guests looked sour. Now that things had come to this point, they would not dare to offend the Seymour family, no matter what.

So, of course, they wouldn't dare to disobey Michael's request.

They could only smile stiffly and express their support for the Seymour family.

"Of course, we are willing to stay. We should let the mastermind behind this know the consequences of offending the Seymour family."

"Ha-ha! This young man is an idiot. Since he let someone use him, he must know what will happen to him in the end."

"That's right! The Seymour family is a powerhouse while this idiot is just a small fry."

Their compliments made Michael smile again. He returned to his seat with satisfaction.

The butler who had been waiting at the side had grown impatient. At

this moment, the killing intent hidden in him was finally revealed. He ordered coldly, "Crocodile, if you complete this task, you will be the emperor of the underworld in Salem and the top leader of the gangs."

Cassian was stunned for a moment.

Then joy filled his heart. His dream was finally about to come true.

He turned to Michael, knelt on the floor heavily, and kowtowed. Then he said aloud, "Mr. Seymour, you are my benefactor. If you don't mind, I want to take you as my father." ①

As soon as he said this, the onlookers all wore mocking and sneering expressions on their faces.

They thought Cassian was really shameless.

But much to their surprise, Michael's eyes were full of admiration.

He even laughed and said happily, "Okay. From now on, Cassian will be my son."

Since the Seymour family had lost contact with Chet, they urgently needed an obedient stooge to take care of some shady things for them.

Cassian was very smart.

Michael was a sophisticated man. Naturally, he agreed to take him as his son. He did not only save his face but also got a capable subordinate effortlessly.

When everyone heard Michael agree, they all looked at Cassian differently. The mockery in their eyes just now turned into confusion and respect.

Since Salem was large, it was not surprising that many people wanted to be the top leader in the underworld here.

Because of Aikin's and Tyson's presences, Cassian's Crocodile Gang could only be regarded as a third-rate gang in Salem.

But now, Cassian only knelt in front of Michael, and he already reached the pinnacle of the underworld through the Seymour family.

With the help of the Seymour family and the absence of Aikin and Tyson, there was no doubt that Cassian would become the emperor of the underworld in Salem.

For Cassian to climb to the top, he forgot about his dignity.

No wonder he could be in his current status now despite being just a cook from an underprivileged family.

For a moment, the same single word popped up in everyone's mind. And that was "hero."

At the thought of this, everyone immediately congratulated Cassian.

"Mr. Bernard, congratulations on becoming the top leader of the underworld."

"In the future, our company will rely on Crocodile Gang when it comes to security."

Before, Cassian was just an idiot in everyone's eyes. But now, he instantly became the object of everyone's flattery.

While watching this scene, Liam smiled even more playfully.

Everyone in this banquet hall was arrogant.

Did they really think Liam was just a small fry? And since he offended the Seymour family, he would be dead meat?

But the more arrogant they were now, the more desperate and embarrassed they would be when they found out later that they were the real small fries.

Jaxtyn, on the other hand, was not calm anymore. When he heard everyone mocking Liam, he only felt that the faith in his heart had been insulted.

He couldn't help but sneer, "Cassian, I thought you were a crocodile. I didn't expect you to be a doggy instead. You are a dog that likes to wag its tail hard to please its master."

The happy Cassian was stunned upon hearing this.

Despite everyone's compliments, Jaxtyn's rude words still completely exposed the fact that Cassian was just a slave who sold his self-esteem. Some things looked glamorous and good on the surface. But once they were dissected, there could be a reek inside.

Cassian's eyes turned bloodshot, and his face was ferocious like a monster. He roared, "You bug! I don't know which ditch you've come from. How dare you speak so rudely so many times! Mr. Seymour is my father now. Since you offend him at his birthday party, I will chop your

limbs off and feed them to the crocodiles as punishment."

Then he seemed to have thought of something. He laughed grimly and said, "I'll also rape your mother in front of you. So when you see Mr. Seymour again in the future, remember to call him Grandpa. Ha-ha!"

At this moment, someone sighed, "You are already dying, so stop talking so much nonsense. You are so noisy."

Everyone turned and looked in the direction where the voice came from. It turned out it was Liam who spoke.

Since Cassian was interrupted again, he got even angrier. Blue veins kept throbbing around his neck.

He waved his hand and roared, "Shoot him! I want him to see his limbs turn into minced meat."

"Yes, sir!" answered the gunmen in unison respectfully.

Then they pulled the triggers of their guns together.

Chapter 310 Never Leave This Place

The gunmen were lightning fast.

But Liam outpaced them effortlessly.

With a swift motion, he flicked his hand, and the Desert Eagle concealed in his cuff glided into his palm.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The resounding echoes of three gunshots filled the grand hall.

Holding his pistol, Liam waved it to scatter the wisps of white smoke swirling from the muzzle.

Onlookers stood wide-eyed. Their gazes were fixed upon Liam in disbelief.

How had he managed to avoid being shot to death?

What in the world had happened?

Locking his gaze on Liam, Cassian bellowed, "Are you good-for-nothing imbeciles? Where the hell were you aiming? Keep shooting!"

However, as soon as he finished his sentence, a person in the crowd abruptly covered their mouth and exclaimed, "What's that between their eyebrows?!"

In an instant, a chorus of exclamations erupted, filling the air.

Each pair of eyes widened in sheer disbelief.

Out of nowhere, a gust of wind swept through the hall, causing fifteen gunmen to collapse consecutively behind Cassian.

Cassian turned around, finally witnessing the truth before him.

There were red bullet holes between the eyebrows of all his fifteen gunmen!

They collapsed onto the floor, their faces frozen in a fierce expression they had on before they died. ③

"No way! How is that even possible?!" Cassian bellowed, his eyes wide with disbelief.

He turned his head to glance at Liam, but suddenly stumbled backward.

His face was contorted with horror. In a panicked tone, he exclaimed, "How can this be? How did all fifteen of them die? You only fired three shots!"

The surrounding onlookers stood in stunned silence, their eyes fixated on the scene unfolding before them.

They too awaited an explanation.

Composed, Liam spoke nonchalantly. "There were only fifteen of them. Three shots were more than enough to take them out, don't you think?"

His words sent shivers down Cassian's spine, intensifying his terror.

He trembled as he said, "You... That's not possible! How could just one person do this?! You're just acting mysterious! There must be someone hiding in the shadows, secretly assisting you in this facade of killing them with only three shots!"

However, Liam sneered.

With each deliberate step he took, he uttered a sentence.

"I alone am enough to kill a bunch of lowlifes like them!"

"Didn't you just threaten to turn my limbs into minced meat?"

"Aren't you going to punish me on the behalf of your new father?"

Liam stood defiantly before Cassian, arms outstretched, and bellowed, "Go on, kill me!"

Cassian swallowed hard, his fear momentarily overshadowed by a growing sense of composure.

The masked figure standing before him exceeded his wildest imagination.

He was terrifying beyond measure.

The situation, regardless of the true extent of his adversary's power or the potential presence of hidden gunmen, remained firmly under his control.

For now, it was best not to provoke Liam.

The time for revenge would come later.

With a feigned plea for mercy, Cassian concocted his words. "It's all my fault. Since you possess such remarkable capabilities, why must you be at odds with the Seymour family? We can join forces and make a

fortune together!"

This spectacle left the onlookers utterly dumbfounded.

Why on earth did Cassian suddenly cave in?

Would the Seymour family be ruined today?!

All eyes were fixed on Liam as he continued moving forward. It seemed like they had just seen a demon walking straight out of hell. The shock on their faces was priceless.

Even Jaxtyn was left stunned by what Liam had accomplished just now! While others remained clueless, he was fully aware that only he and Liam had come here today!

Could it be possible that King had just taken down all fifteen gunmen on his own?

Was this the power of the legendary King, armed with nothing but a pistol?

Jaxtyn's mind raced, conjuring up a terrifying hypothesis.

Did King actually fire fifteen shots just now?

He had only heard three, but King must have been lightning fast. How could he have missed it? How was that possible?

The thought sent shivers down Jaxtyn's spine. He couldn't help but feel an overwhelming sense of admiration for Liam in that moment.

That had to be the only explanation that made sense!

Liam's shooting skills were downright terrifying.

It wasn't just the fact that he fired off fifteen bullets in a split second, but each one of those shots found its mark right between the eyebrows of those fifteen people.

No wonder!

Only someone with such immense strength could be called King in the Dark Night Organization.

"Beg for mercy?" Liam scoffed and took aim at Cassian's head.

Bang!

The loud noise shocked everyone!

In an instant, a putrid stench filled the air, catching everyone's attention.

All eyes turned to Cassian, only to discover that he was the source of the foul odor.

There he was, kneeling on the floor, fear etched across his face, and unable to control his bodily functions. He actually peed and pooped.

It was hard to believe that this was the same man who, as the leader of a large gang, had engaged in countless battles wielding his machete in Salem, leaving a trail of bodies in his wake.

And now, he cowered in fear, reduced to such a pitiful state.

The reason for Cassian's sudden terror became clear. The masked man had intentionally aimed his shot next to Cassian's head.

The realization sent a shiver down everyone's spine.

After all, that gun could have been pointed at any one of them.

In that moment, fear gripped them all, silencing any thoughts of insulting or challenging Liam.

But of all those present, Cassian, on the floor, felt the weight of fear pressing down on him the most.

His position as the top leader in the underworld meant nothing now.

All that mattered was survival.

If he were to die here, everything he had built would crumble to dust.

For all the lives he had taken, Cassian valued his own above all else.

Ignoring the mess in his pants, Cassian knelt before Liam, slapping himself repeatedly while pleading, "I messed up. I'm a worthless wretch. I failed to see the truth. Please, spare my life!"

Liam responded with a nonchalant grin, his voice dripping with mischief. "You want to live? Fine. If you kill that despicable old scum, you'll live."

"How dare you!" A fierce cry erupted, shaking the air.

In an instant, Michael leaped to his feet, clutching his crutch, and retorted, "Young man, I'll admit you've got some nerve! But the Seymour family doesn't cower in fear! If you retreat now, I'll turn a blind eye to what happened today. But if you persist, even if you're part of some Dark Night Organization, the Seymour family will ensure you never leave this place!"

Chapter 311 The Military Officer

"The Seymour family, a top-notch clan in Salem, is worth a staggering ten billion dollars in property. We are a force not to be reckoned with by just anyone,"

Michael proudly proclaimed, his voice resonating through the grand hall. His anger served to fuel the guests' confidence.

Yes, this was Royal Hotel. It was the chosen venue for the extravagant birthday party thrown in honor of a renowned member of Seymour family.

The mere presence of Michael, the fearsome patriarch would instill terror in those around him, leaving them feeling as though their very lives hung in the balance.

However, it would be a mistake to assume that the Seymour family lacked the means to handle any challenge that came their way.

Even if Michael were to confront this young man directly, would the latter have the audacity to take action?

Just then, a cold voice reverberated from outside, breaking the tension. "Who the hell do you think you are, kid? How dare you cause a scene at Mr. Seymour's birthday party?!"

A tall, middle-aged military officer in military uniform marched into the banquet hall with two soldiers.

The middle-aged officer's shoulders were adorned with numerous silver epaulets, while his chest badge was emblazoned with a star.

The man who came in was actually a major!

With a disdainful glint in this middle-aged officer's eyes, he sneered down at Liam and said with contempt, "I heard the commotion from outside just now. You're part of the Dark Night Organization, aren't you? How dare someone from an unknown group like yours come here to cause trouble for the mighty Seymour family? The Seymour family has deep roots in Salem, spanning over a century, steeped in history. They have encountered countless formidable foes over the years. No matter

Relieved to see his grandson and the army personnel arrive just in the nick of time, Michael smiled and replied, "No need for apologies. You've arrived right on cue! Are you tired now?"

Rowan couldn't help but feel flattered by his grandfather's sweet treatment.

It filled him with a natural sense of pride.

Greeting the senior military officer in person seemed to be the right decision after all.

It became clear that he was on his way to becoming the designated successor.

In that moment, Rowan's eyes displayed complacency and a hint of mockery as he glanced at Liam.

If it weren't for that meddling King causing trouble, Michael wouldn't have praised Rowan's timely arrival and wouldn't be aware of his importance to the Seymour family.

"It's an honor for you to be my stepping stone, you brat!" Rowan told Liam.

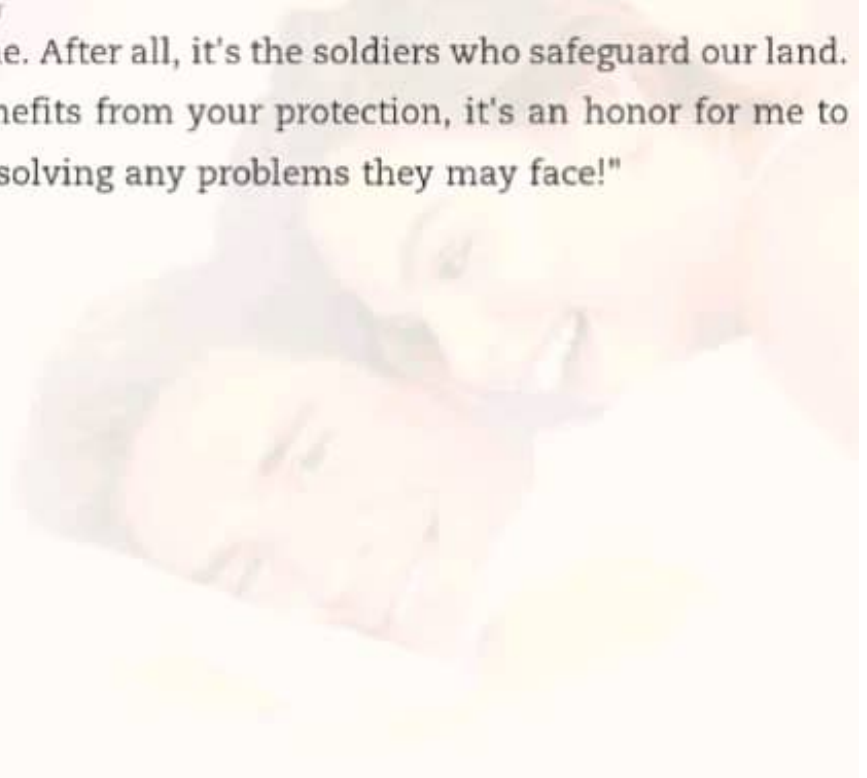
He then turned to the middle-aged officer and apologized, "I had only intended to invite you for dinner today, but I didn't expect you to witness such a scene. Please forgive me."

The middle-aged officer burst into laughter, thoroughly amused by the level of respect shown to him by Rowan.

"Just a few days ago, you went ahead and donated a staggering five hundred million dollars to the military region of Salem. You even made sure the soldiers received brand new uniforms and helped disabled veterans secure jobs within the Seymour family's enterprise. Your assistance has been truly invaluable. So, handling a minor issue like this is nothing at all! Also, I'm a soldier, and it's my duty to ensure the safety of our people. When trouble comes knocking, I can't just sit back and do nothing. I'll handle it as a way to repay you, Mr. Seymour, for your kind assistance."

Seeing the officer's willingness to lend a hand, Rowan couldn't help but let a smile creep onto his face, even if it was somewhat disingenuous.

"You're most welcome. After all, it's the soldiers who safeguard our land. As someone who benefits from your protection, it's an honor for me to assist the army in resolving any problems they may face!"



Chapter 312 Kings Of Warfare

The middle-aged officer couldn't help but grin ear to ear as he soaked in the pleasing and flattering remarks that were thrown his way.

His laughter burst forth, filling the hall. Then, abruptly changing the topic, he exclaimed, "If the other big shots in Salem are half as kind-hearted as you, our military region's soldiers will undoubtedly defend the land and its people with unwavering resolve!"

In that instant, the officer's eyes took on a chilling glare as he scanned the hall like a predatory wolf, hungering for something more.

The threat in his eyes was bare and unmasked, causing a wave of unease to wash over the guests.

Their eyes darted around, silently communicating their shared discomfort.

These individuals had been entrenched in the cutthroat world of business for years, and they were far from naive. It was crystal clear that the officer was resorting to blackmail.

Just as tension filled the air, Michael suddenly rose to his feet and declared, "Considering the soldiers shed their blood and lay down their lives to safeguard our land, the Seymour family is honored to contribute an additional two hundred million dollars to support the military! I trust all of you, who possess a strong sense of justice, will generously follow suit!"

Hearing this, the guests couldn't help but secretly curse Michael, labeling him an 'old bastard' in their minds.

For a family as wealthy as the Seymours, such a donation meant next to nothing.

However, for those businessmen who couldn't match their vast fortune, parting with such a substantial sum of money was an arduous pill to swallow.

What was more, it was Michael who boldly took the lead, positioning the Seymour family as the ones to whom the army owed a great debt of

gratitude.

In a clever twist, the Seymour family was utilizing the guests' own funds to perform a noble service for the military.

However, who would dare to refuse under the pressure of the military region's major, the influential might of the Seymour family, and the lurking threat of powerful enemies?

"I'll donate five million dollars on behalf of our company!"

"On behalf of our family, I will donate a generous sum of twenty million..."

In a sudden turn of events, the initially joyous birthday celebration swiftly transformed into an impromptu fundraising event.

The middle-aged military officer's eyes gleamed with amusement as he witnessed the businessmen pouring out substantial amounts of money. Even the two soldiers behind him couldn't help but wear satisfied expressions.

The funds would be transferred first into their accounts before they went into the military's coffers.

By then, they had the final say on how much money they had received as donations.

When he saw that the donations were almost completed, the middle-aged officer raised his hefty hand and swiftly brought it down, signaling a pause. ①

The hall fell into an eerie silence.

With a wide grin, the middle-aged officer boisterously declared, "I've witnessed the sincerity of each and every one of you. We'll delve into the details once we've dealt with the insignificant pests before us!"

After he finished this statement, the officer's eyes became filled with a cold determination. He sneered, his voice dripping with disdain, "Will you end your own life, or shall I do it for you?"

At the sound of these words, a laughter erupted from beneath Liam's mask.

His laughter echoed throughout the grand banquet hall.

"Ah, what an exceptional major we have here! Such a genius method to make a quick money. However, with your intellect, wouldn't it be more

befitting of the badges on your shoulders to employ it in protecting our land?"

The middle-aged officer's regal bearing gave way to a deep-seated anger. He etched an extremely somber expression on his face.

His countenance grew even colder as he bellowed harshly, "You wretched son of a bitch! Since you dare to slander me, you must be killed!"

He raised his hand, prompting the two soldiers positioned behind him to advance swiftly.

Both individuals exuded a formidable aura. Their muscles were not overly bulky but rippled with tautness. It was evident that they had undergone rigorous training.

Their unblinking gaze fixed upon Liam, as if they were going to devour him in the blink of an eye.

The middle-aged military officer wore a sneer on his face as he scoffed, "You're one wicked scoundrel and a real menace who has killed people without mercy. You are a threat to society, indeed! That's why my two disciples here will make sure you pay with your life!"

Rowan seized the moment to flatter.

"These two are the champions of the battlefield, the true kings of warfare! And let me tell you, they've been through real combat. They're in a league of their own, far beyond your reach!"

"Mr. Seymour speaks the truth. You little bastard, my advice is for you to kneel down and beg for mercy right now. Maybe, just maybe, they'll spare your sorry life."

"You insignificant little bastard, you think relying on the Dark Night Organization will save you from the wrath of the Seymour family? Think again!"

"Not only should you kneel, but you should also grovel and apologize for the foolish act of provoking the Seymour family!"

The guests chimed in in agreement.

Liam locked his gaze onto the officer before him, his eyes hidden behind a mask.

The man remained arrogantly composed, sporting a smug smile as if he had everything under control.

A mischievous grin played at the corners of Liam's mouth as he deliberately drawled each word. "You idiot."

Immediately he said this, silence enveloped the air.

Rowan's eyes widened in disbelief. He was unable to comprehend what he had just heard. "What the hell did you just say?!"

Liam casually tapped his mask and said with a lazy tone, "Are you deaf or something? Fine, I'll repeat myself."

He deliberately drew out each letter. "I-d-i-o-t! That's what all of you are!"

Rowan's face flushed with anger, his veins pulsating with fury.

Those who had previously agreed with him now stared wide-eyed, their indignation flaring up.

Why would this kid dare to insult them like that?

The middle-aged officer's lips curled into a cruel smile and he said coldly, "You little bastard! You're so damn arrogant!"

He loosened the buttons of his military uniform and placed his hat on the table beside him. His voice dripped with ferocity. "Initially, I merely wanted my disciples to kill you. But unfortunately for you, you had to push my buttons. Now, I'm going to rip you apart, piece by piece!"

Hearing this words, the two soldiers who had been ready to engage in combat took a step back.

They exchanged playful glances with each other, as if they were in the presence of a soon-to-be corpse.

It was a rare sight for them to witness their teacher taking action.

To them, their teacher was a martial artist within the military region of Salem. He was a legend among the locals.

In the realm of the army, power and violence were the guiding principles.

Only those truly powerful could rise to higher positions.

Their teacher was not a loser who depended on family connections to secure his position.

He had earned his rank as a major with his skill and distinguished



Chapter 313 Be Overpowered

As the middle-aged officer walked, he casually removed his green shirt, revealing his well-toned muscles.

His bronzed skin and battle scars served as a testament to rugged masculinity as it instantly captured the attention of onlookers. Gasps and murmurs filled the air.

"Oh my God! Look at that knife wound on his chest!" exclaimed one guest.

"Check out those gunshot scars on his spine. Must be a dozen of them!" added another.

"Is this man for real? He is a true warrior from the battlefield! Gives me the shivers!"

Observing the commotion, Michael seized the moment and motioned to his butler. "Go fetch my pricey bottle of wine, the one worth millions. Heat it up. Let's celebrate this officer's victory later!"

"Yes, sir!" The butler swiftly departed to fulfill the request.

Appreciating Michael's gesture, the officer let out a hearty laugh and expressed his gratitude. "Thank you for the fine wine, Mr. Seymour! We'll drink together once I've torn this bastard into pieces!"

"Good!" Michael echoed with enthusiasm as his eyes gleamed with anticipation.

Over the years, the Seymour family had relied on various illicit endeavors, amassing a fortune of over ten billion dollars.

Yet, the shadowy exploits they engaged in could only remain concealed for so long before inevitably being exposed.

If they could manage to befriend a high-ranking official, the whole game would change entirely!

The Seymour family's aspirations of becoming the most influential clan in Salem were within reach if they could establish favorable connections with the military faction of Salem.

It would not only help them gloss over their dubious past but also grant

them access to the realms of politics and power.

Needless to say, Liam was well aware of the head of the Seymour family's intentions. He playfully quipped, "Are you sure you can take me down?"

Seeing that Liam still refused to back down, Michael sneered at his arrogance.

"You little brat, this guy right here is a war god, battle-hardened and fearless. What chance do you, a small-time punk, have against him? And you call yourself King of the Dark Night Organization? How dare some unknown group challenge the might of the military faction? Pah!" Disregarding his reputation as the head of the Seymour family, he spat disdainfully onto the floor.

Wearing a cold smile, Liam retorted, "I'm afraid you'll end up defeated and humiliated, making fools of yourselves."

"Enough with the talk!" bellowed the middle-aged officer as he brought his foot crashing down onto the floor.

The granite floor instantly cracked beneath his strong step.

He charged toward Liam like a speeding car, launching a swift right punch aimed at his opponent's temple.

"I'll kill you in just one move!"

But with a cold smile, Liam swiftly raised his right hand lightning-quick, and seized the fist, halting it in its tracks.

The middle-aged officer who was well-versed in combat was unfazed by the situation. His left fist shot out like a bolt of lightning, aiming straight for Liam's neck.

With the strength of this fist, if it hit, Liam's neck would surely snap, and his artery might even burst!

However, as if blessed with foresight, Liam swiftly dropped into a squat, evading the punch.

With his legs bent and his right foot twisted, he began to spin and rose in a spiraling motion.

Maintaining his grip on the officer's wrist, Liam exerted tremendous force.

He then hurled the much stronger opponent away!

The impact of the heavy officer sent the two soldiers tumbling to the floor!

Those two soldiers, who had been looking down on Liam, now had their sternums forcefully broken!

Coughing up blood, they collapsed to the floor and fixed their eyes on Liam in utter disbelief.

Their faces contorted with shock, as if they were looking at a supernatural being!

Not only were these two individuals stunned, but even the onlookers who had been clamoring for Liam's death fell into a stunned silence.

Wasn't the officer a formidable figure in the military?

Wasn't he hailed as the god of war?

Damn it! This so-called 'god of war' had been quickly overpowered by Liam!

Chapter 314 A Sneak Attack

The hall fell into a heavy silence, as if the air itself had been sucked out. The guests, taken aback, instinctively swallowed and found themselves at a loss for words.

They had all generously donated to support the army, but this was not the outcome they had anticipated.

The man who called himself the god of war seemed more like a bumbling fool in uniform.

Liam adjusted his suit with a contemptuous smirk and boldly strode toward the middle-aged officer.

The officer moved back a little and suddenly sprang up from the floor.

His eyes burned with a murderous intensity and his face twisted into a ferocious mask. He bellowed, "You scoundrel! I've spent over a decade on the battlefield, facing all kinds of enemies. And you dared to launch a sneak attack when my guard was down!"

Sneak attack?

The words hung in the air, leaving everyone bewildered, though a nagging sense of unease gnawed at their hearts.

Was that actually a sneak attack?

After all, the officer had been flung across the hall by Liam.

Despite the skepticism of the others, Rowan, who stood on the sidelines, believed it without a doubt.

He knew all too well the true power that resided within the middle-aged officer.

Even if he couldn't overpower his opponent, it was inconceivable for him to be defeated in a single strike.

Hope surged within him as the officer's words resonated in his ears, replacing his initial fear.

With a finger pointed accusingly at Liam's face, Rowan yelled, "You despicable bastard! How dare you launch a sneak attack?!"

Humans, at their core, were nothing more than sheep, easily swayed and eager to follow. The guests present, mostly businessmen, had only witnessed fighting in movies, possessing little knowledge of true combat skills.

All they had perceived was a lightning-fast collision between the two figures. The specifics were obscured from their sight.

Hearing Rowan's and the officer's words, everyone swiftly embraced the accusation as truth.

Their voices blended in a hasty chorus, berating Liam.

"You vile little bastard lack any martial ethics! How dare you launch a sneak attack on the army's god of war?!"

"If they were to engage in a head-on clash, that brat would be destroyed by the officer in an instant!"

"You are nothing but a coward! Shame on you!"

Martial ethics?

Sneak attack?

Liam couldn't help but find amusement in their reactions.

These people had grown accustomed to lives of comfort and leisure. Did they truly believe that the spectacle unfolding before them was merely a game to be watched?

In the midst of a life-and-death battle, even if he launched a sneak attack, so what?!

Liam couldn't be bothered to engage in verbal exchange. The mocking laughter concealed beneath his mask grew louder, drowning out the discussions of the people.

Confusion gripped the onlookers as they stared at Liam in a dazed state. Why was he so jubilant about winning through a sneak attack?

Rowan, filled with a seething rage, found the laughter grating on his nerves. He bellowed angrily, "You bastard, why are you laughing? Is my revelation forcing you to mask it with this foolish laughter?"

Liam managed to stifle his laughter. His gaze swept disdainfully across the bewildered faces surrounding him. "I laugh because you're as dim-witted as a bunch of pigs. The truth is staring you in the face, yet you

refuse to acknowledge it! Well, since you insisted that I launched a sneak attack, I'll oblige you once more!"

Rowan paid no heed to Liam's cryptic words. With a grotesque grin, he pointed directly at Liam and taunted, "Ha ha, little bastard, you've just admitted it, haven't you?"

He quickly turned his head and addressed the middle-aged officer with utmost deference. "Please, I implore you, launch another attack and put an end to this treacherous lunatic!"

The middle-aged officer flexed his fists, relishing in the bone-cracking symphony it produced.

A sinister grin spread across his face. "This time, that pesky puppy won't catch me off guard so easily. It's time to get serious," he muttered. In truth, the attack wasn't a sneak attack.

However, in order to uphold his reputation, he had to make it seem that way.

To the middle-aged officer, he had underestimated his opponent and hadn't unleashed his full strength.

But now, he was determined to give it his all.

The middle-aged officer took a long steady breath, his gaze narrowed and his entire body tensed.

Muscles bulged like gnarled roots of an ancient tree, protruded from his body.

In that moment, he transformed into a strong and fearsome creature.

He possessed the strength of a mighty bear.

His presence commanded the attention of the wide-eyed onlookers.

Among them were plump, well-fed businessmen who had never witnessed such a spectacle.

He was indeed a god of war!

The officer towered over the young man like a giant bear intimidating a helpless rabbit.

It seemed as if the young man would be torn to shreds in an instant.

The officer's formidable stature, combined with his height advantage, completely overshadowed Liam.

At this moment, nobody had any faith in Liam's ability to pull off another successful sneak attack.

The guests were no longer regretful. Instead, they breathed a sigh of relief.

Although this young man had some skill, they believed that he would ultimately be beaten to a pulp.

It was the consequence of daring to challenge the upper class and pushing beyond his limits.

The generous donations they had made to the military were evidently paying off.

Undeterred by the mocking and disdainful gazes of the crowd, Liam brushed off their presence.

Arguing with a group of ignorant fools would only be a waste of his energy.

With an air of indifference, he extended his index finger and provocatively curled it in the direction of the military officer.

"Are you ready for another sneak attack?!"

Chapter 315 Slaps

Liam's attitude was full of provocation. Obviously, he was trampling on the dignity of his enemy.

The middle-aged military officer felt very much humiliated. And now, he felt the rage in his chest bubble and was about to explode.

"You go to hell!" he shouted fiercely. Then he rushed over again, moving like a chariot.

But this time, Liam had also become serious.

His eyes flickered with excitement, and the aura around his body suddenly changed. He was like a demon that emerged into the world, making people tremble in fear.

Then the big and small figures instantly collided.

Their fists and feet constantly collided.

The loud bangs echoed in the entire hall.

It was as if endless bullets were being fired.

But the longer their fight continued, the more frightened the middle-aged military officer became.

He had used up all his strength and exhausted all the fighting skills he knew.

However, this young masked man in front of him was like a bottomless abyss. He couldn't fathom how strong this young man was.

After another round of fierce confrontation between them, they both backed away quickly. It was as if they had a tacit understanding.

The middle-aged military officer gasped for air. He was panting heavily, and his chest heaved violently. He was drenched in sweat.

On the other hand, Liam's breathing was still steady. Even his chest just heaved up and down slightly more than before.

From the look of it, the middle-aged military officer seemed to have run a long distance while Liam just took a stroll.

There was a clear gap between them in terms of strength and stamina.

The middle-aged military officer's face flushed, and he had difficulty breathing. He roared hysterically, "Who the hell are you? How can you be so strong?"

Everyone in the hall heard this, and they all felt their scalps go numb in fear.

No matter how stupid and unwilling they were to believe, they fully understood the situation at this moment.

The military officer was no match for the masked man.

Liam looked at the military officer and sneered, "To be honest, I haven't met an opponent who can make me get some exercise for a long time. You are barely qualified. But unfortunately, I'm in a hurry. I don't want to play anymore."

For a moment, his magnetic voice and the noble golden mask covering his face made everyone feel he was very mysterious.

Did he say he was just playing with the military officer?

The middle-aged military officer roared, "Fuck you!" The rage in his eyes was completely aroused.

He looked very ferocious as he rushed over again, regardless of everything. He seemed desperate now.

But this time, although his face was full of madness, he smiled sinisterly. It was as if he had succeeded in his trick.

At this moment, two military soldiers rushed behind Liam.

The middle-aged military officer didn't need to give an order. They each held a sharp dagger and stabbed Liam's vital points on both sides.

If they hit Liam accurately, he would definitely die.

However, what happened next made everyone's eyes widen in shock.

Liam sneered. Although the two military soldiers were behind, he seemed to see them. As soon as they attacked him, he raised his right hand and slapped it out fiercely.

In less than a second, he had slapped three times.

Suddenly, everyone heard only a slap sound.

Then the middle-aged military officer and the two soldiers fell backward at the same time.

And there was an apparent bright red palm print on each of their faces. After knocking over many tables and chairs, the two soldiers in green uniforms lay on the floor and fainted.

The middle-aged military officer covered his swollen and sore right cheek. His eyes widened. He felt extremely humiliated.

He wished he could swallow Liam alive at this moment.

The military officer gritted his teeth and roared, "You bastard! Even if I can't defeat you today, so what? I'm backed by the military faction. I'll definitely bring the troops with me and destroy your fucking Dark Night Organization. And you, a small fry, are good at fighting, right? Why are you hiding behind that mask? If you have the guts, take it off."

Liam didn't say anything. He just rushed toward the military officer and slapped him once again.

A crisp slap sound echoed.

This loud sound seemed to directly ring out in everyone's heart.

The middle-aged military officer stumbled. His two front teeth were knocked down to the floor.

Liam continued in a cold voice, "Just now, you said I launched a sneak attack. But didn't I defeat you aboveboard?"

After saying this, he gave the middle-aged military officer another slap.

The military officer was unprepared.

So he staggered again.

This time, his molar teeth were also chipped.

Liam continued coldly, "You are calling me a despicable bastard. But who asked those two to attack me behind my back?"

He raised his hand again.

The military officer was given another slap, and a few more teeth were chipped.

The middle-aged military officer got a tight feeling in his brain. This time, he spat out a mouthful of blood.

But Liam slapped him again. "Who the hell is the despicable bastard?"

Much to everyone's astonishment, the aggressive and arrogant "god of

war" just now was like a young child slapped by Liam multiple times.

All of the military officer's teeth were chipped, and his face was red and swollen.



Chapter 316 The Seymour Family Was Doomed

There was pin-drop silence inside the banquet hall, so the continuous crisp slap sound rang out very clearly in everyone's ears.

In this extremely quiet and a little weird atmosphere, a man suddenly ran out from backstage.

It was the butler. He held a bottle of wine in his hand and walked towards Michael cautiously.

Since he had warmed up the wine, he hurried over, fearing it would soon cool down. But he was also afraid that the wine would spill, so he walked carefully with his head down. Because of this, he did not notice the changes in the hall.

With his head down, the butler said excitedly, "Mr. Seymour, the wine is ready. It's time to celebrate the major's victory."

Michael's face turned livid with rage. He clenched his teeth, and his eyes narrowed.

The butler's words humiliated him.

His eyes turned bloodshot. He raised his hand, slapped the butler hard on the face, and roared, "Celebrate the victory? You idiot! Look at the scene now. Do you still want to celebrate for this little bastard?"

Michael's slap was so hard that it knocked down the butler's teeth, and he bit his tongue. ①

He used too much force, so half of his tongue was bitten off.

Bright red blood immediately oozed out from the corners of his mouth, making him tremble in pain.

"Ahhh!"

The butler's scream reverberated around the hall. He was in so much pain.

And the pain weakened all his limbs.

For the guests, his scream was like cold water poured into boiling oil. It immediately caused a din of discussions.

"I thought the young man would die. I didn't expect the Seymour family

would be defeated."

"It's indeed unbelievable."

"Since the people of the Seymour family have offended such a horrible person, they are really doomed this time."

At this moment, everyone looked at Liam with only fear in their eyes.

After all, his strength was amazing.

The middle-aged military officer's power was so overwhelming when he fought just now. Anyone who was not a fool could see how awesome he was.

But who would have thought that such a powerhouse was as weak as a worm under this young man's attack?

They wondered where Liam had come from.

Without the support of the people from the military, everyone was like a wild dog who had been beaten up. They would only dare to bark in a low voice.

And the middle-aged military officer was like mud, paralyzed on the floor and unconscious.

Rowan, standing and watching at the side, trembled all over.

He was so flustered that he wanted to run away. But his legs went weak, and he couldn't move.

At this moment, Liam slowly walked to Rowan's side. He patted Rowan's face gently and said jokingly, "You just said I made a sneak attack, right? Let me ask you again. Did I launch a sneak attack?"

His cold voice directly pierced Rowan's heart.

Rowan felt numb all over. He was no longer as arrogant as before. He only realized he had already wetted his pants when he felt something hot in his crotch.

When the stinky smell reached Liam's nose, he frowned. He quickly went behind Rowan and kicked Rowan disgustedly.

At the door, Jaxtyn immediately opened one coffin.

Rowan was thrown in the air and accurately fell into the coffin.

Liam's cold eyes swept across the crowd. He roared, "Now, let me ask you again. Did I launch a sneak attack?"

Did Liam launch a sneak attack?

How could it be?

The people around them trembled in fear. They all lowered their heads, not daring to meet Liam's eyes under the mask.

Suddenly, the atmosphere in the hall became extremely depressing.

Michael heaved a deep sigh. In just a few minutes, he looked like he had aged twenty years more. He asked in a low voice, "What can I do to make you willingly let go of the Seymour family?"

"Oh, you want me to let go of the Seymour family?"

Liam's eyes narrowed, and he said coldly, "Today, I have prepared three coffins. One for you old scum, one for Rowan, and the last one for your eldest grandson Ajax. So as long as the three of you obediently go into the coffins, I can let go of the rest of the Seymour family."

Everyone was shocked upon hearing this.

There was only one thought in their minds.

The Seymour family was definitely doomed today.

Chapter 317 The Seymour Family's Money Is Dirty

Liam's cruel request made Michael stagger, and he almost fell down.

But he struggled to hold his crutch, glared at Liam, and questioned, "Why? Why do you have to be this ruthless?"

Liam shook his head, smiled faintly, and said, "Is this already ruthless to you? I'm afraid that what I do is much less violent than what the Seymour family have done. In fact, what I'm doing today is only to uphold justice."

Michael snorted coldly and snapped, "Don't talk nonsense about upholding justice. Tell me, who from my family has provoked you, King of Dark Night Organization?"

The words "King of Dark Night Organization" had sent the guests into despair.

Michael's words were direct admission that the Seymour family had lost today. They had given in.

Liam narrowed his eyes and continued, "One grandson of yours is now lying in a coffin. Raul, another grandson of yours in charge of the casino, has been crippled. But Ajax, your eldest grandson in charge of the chain of bars, is still missing."

Michael was utterly shocked.

He stared at Liam with cold eyes and said in a deep voice, "It's Ajax? Ajax has offended you?"

Liam didn't say a word. But his eyes were as cold and sharp as blades, cutting Michael's body, making him shiver all over.

In the current situation, Liam was the hunter, while the Seymour family was the prey.

Michael had long lost his domineering aura.

Even if he was the head of an upper-class family with assets worth more than ten billion dollars, so what?

After all, apart from his background, he was just an old man in the

twilight of his life.

What was more, he was born into a luxurious and comfortable life. He was more afraid of death than ordinary people.

Michael sighed heavily again, suddenly put on a flattering smile, and said, "Today, I just want to save the lives of the people of my family. So please name your price, King of Night Dark Organization. As long as my family can afford it, we will give it to you."

His words caused an uproar in the crowd.

Everyone looked at each other in disbelief. Then they looked at Liam with respect and fear.

They almost couldn't believe that someone had forced a family with assets worth more than ten billion dollars to give in.

If this was in the past, it would not happen even in their dreams.

Michael had been in the business world for decades. He was a big shot from a first-class family in Salem. But at this moment, he had no way of dealing with such a person like Liam.

So it was very clear to these guests that they couldn't hold a candle to Liam.

However, what they heard the next moment was something they didn't expect.

Liam suddenly said in a cold and ruthless voice, "I don't want your money. The money of your Seymour family is dirty."

After saying this, he picked up the military dagger left by the soldier with his foot, held it, and shot it towards Michael like lightning.

The sharp blade brushed past Michael's ear and disappeared behind his back.

When Liam spoke again, his voice seemed to come from the abyss. "I'll give you two choices. Tell me where Ajax is, walk into the coffin, and kill yourself with this dagger. Or... All the members of the Seymour family present will die together with you."

At this moment, the butler spat out a mouthful of blood and shouted angrily, "Don't push us too far."

Liam looked at him with eyes full of mockery and retorted, "So what?"

You have already killed many people, right?"

Jaxtyn, on the side, made a move without waiting for Liam's order. He took out his phone and read all the butler's crimes out loud. "The butler of the Seymour family raped thousands of women, and he loves sleeping with young newly married women the most. He has caused many families to be destroyed. And he even directly exterminated the families of those women who sued him."

The butler's eyes widened in disbelief. He didn't expect that Jaxtyn would reveal all his secrets.

He handled all those things very well. How could someone know about them?

The more he listened, the more scared he was. He broke out in a cold sweat.

He pointed at Jaxtyn, who was still talking and hurriedly denied, "I didn't do it. Don't sling mud at me!"

Liam didn't want to waste his time on him anymore. So he ordered coldly, "Kill him!"

Jaxtyn sneered. He hooked up a dagger on the floor with his black stick and threw it hard.

In front of everyone's eyes, the sharp dagger hit the butler's throat.

The butler's hand pointed at Liam and he stared at Liam angrily. But his body slowly fell, and he died with eyes wide open.

The bottle of wine he had warmed just now was crushed by his head.

The strong smell of wine immediately filled the entire banquet hall.

But no one was in the mood to pay attention to it.

Everyone fell silent, and no one dared to make a sound.

Chapter 318 Forcing Michael To Die

At this moment, Michael's cold and ruthless heart ached.

He and the butler had been friends for a long time. But the butler was killed right in front of him now. How could he not feel heartbroken?

If it was someone else, he wouldn't care. But the butler was already considered a family. And he couldn't allow the members of the Seymour family to die.

Michael's eyes turned red, and his face was covered with ferocity. He roared through clenched teeth, "You little bastard! You deserve to die! Do you really think you are powerful? Our Seymour family is a century-old family. And I, as the head of the Seymour family, have made this family into a clan with more than ten billion dollars in assets in Salem. You can't imagine how much effort and price I have made and paid. You are just a young man with some fighting skills. How dare you be so arrogant and threaten our Seymour family! I... I..."

He wanted to say many threatening words, but he couldn't speak them out loud.

If he was given time to prepare, he was confident that he could deal with ten or even one hundred enemies like Liam.

But it was different now. No matter how glorious his career had been, at present, he was just a weak and old man.

When Liam noticed that Michael was struggling to finish his words, he sneered, "Cut the crap!"

Then his eyes fell on the younger generation of the Seymour family.

He shouted, "All of you! If you still want to live, you can only ask your leader Michael to die."

After saying this, Liam turned to Jaxtyn and said coldly, "If Michael still doesn't enter the coffin in ten seconds, kill one member of the Seymour family."

As soon as all the members of the Seymour family heard this, they were so scared that they trembled.

The endless fear seemed to turn into rolling waves, devouring them all.

They came to celebrate Michael's birthday because they were hoping to attract his attention and get a chance to gain benefits.

But now, it was jolly hard luck on them, and they all felt regretful.

Suddenly, everyone turned their eyes to Michael.

Then a young man in the crowd said, "Sir, I have just become an adult. I don't want to die yet."

He was the nephew of Michael's daughter-in-law. So it could be said that he was not related to Michael.

After he spoke, the others all stopped being hypocritical and began to speak up.

"Grandpa, you are already old. You should have lived enough, right?"

"Yes, that's right. Our Seymour family is a commercial clan. Isn't it a good deal to exchange your life for the lives of so many of us?"

"Uncle, please enter the coffin now. I really don't want to die."

For a moment, everyone persuaded Michael to die.

"You... You..." Michael yelled with his eyes wide open, and he pointed at his family members. He opened his mouth for a long time, but he couldn't even complete a sentence.

Liam sneered disdainfully, "It looks like all the members of the Seymour family want you to die. Do you want to kill yourself, or do you want me to do it for you?"

Michael's gaze swept across the people of the Seymour family in front of him. They used to try their best to please him. But now, they were forcing him to die. He couldn't help laughing angrily.

"Ha-ha!"

His laughter, filled with infinite sadness and bitterness, resounded through the banquet hall.

After he stopped laughing, he smiled. But tears streamed down his face. At this moment, he looked more than ten years older. It was as if his spine had been pulled out.

Michael looked at the members of the Seymour family again and said in a mournful voice, "I have reached this age, and I didn't die in the hands

of my enemies. But now my own family is forcing me to commit suicide. How ridiculous!"

After saying this, he threw the clutch in his hand away, staggered to the front of the table, and pulled out the military dagger on it.

However, he was already weak because of his age. So when he pulled out the dagger, he fell heavily to the floor.

And he fell directly into the pool of the butler's blood mixed with the turbid wine, making him look more embarrassed.

Michael lay on the floor with a face drained of color and animation. There was also endless sadness and regret in his eyes.

He didn't understand why his three grandsons had offended such terrifying people like the Dark Night Organization.

For him, it was totally unacceptable.

He didn't want to die for unknown reason today.

A tide of rage surged in him, and his eyes blazed with anger.

Michael struggled to stand up from the floor, glared at Liam, and said in a low and hoarse voice, "You little bastard! Since you are so eager to know where Ajax is, I won't tell you. Don't worry. He is hiding in a very secret place. And you will never find him, no matter what. I don't know your real identity, but Ajax must. As long as he is still alive, he will avenge my death one day. Sooner or later, your family, friends, and all the members of the Dark Night Organization will be placed on the auction of our Seymour family. Ha-ha!"

A trace of annoyance flashed through Liam's eyes. He turned to Jaxtyn and said impatiently, "If this old man dares to talk nonsense again, kill a member of the Seymour family."

"Yes, sir!" Jaxtyn nodded in agreement. His eyes were full of killing intent.

He was in charge of collecting information about the Seymour family, so he knew that none of them was good.

In fact, the Seymour family had only become a first-class clan in Salem because of human and organ trafficking.

These people were not humans at all. They were just poisonous scum

worse than animals.

What was more, he had personally experienced what had happened on the cruise ship.

So the Seymour family must be destroyed.

Otherwise, more and more people would be sold as commodities.

At this moment, the young man in the crowd who first forced Michael to die roared with a fierce look in his eyes, "Old man, go to hell!"

Then he grabbed the sharp knife on the table, rushed to Michael, and directly stabbed Michael's neck.

Chapter 319 It's All Your Fault!

Suddenly, blood gushed out like a fountain and splattered across the young man's face in a gruesome display.

The young man's ferocity had been stirred to its fullest extent. He had taken the life of Michael, yet the fire in his eyes still burned with violence.

He muttered under his breath, "You old man, it's all because of you. If you hadn't committed so many wrongs, we wouldn't be facing this revenge today. It's all your damn fault!"

In that moment, his roars echoed relentlessly and he acted somewhat mentally deranged.

Seeing this, Liam muttered, "Is there something in the Seymour family's bloodline? Are they all lunatics?"

The rest of the Seymour family stood there, stunned and speechless.

Moments ago, they had persuaded Michael to die, but they didn't dare to take any actions.

They hadn't expected someone to kill Michael with such ruthless efficiency.

Nevertheless, a sense of relief washed over them as a cunning idea sparked within their minds.

After all, if Michael died, their own lives would be spared!

But they dared not voice their thoughts, even if they believed so deep down.

After all, Michael was dead, and the three heirs of the Seymour family were all incapacitated. It was now open season for all the relatives to claim their share of the inheritance!

In a sudden twist, those who had wished for Michael's demise now glared at the young man with resentment, hurling blame at him relentlessly.

"He's our senior. How could you actually kill him? Are you even human?"

"How can we have a traitor like you in our Seymour family? Get out of

here!"

"Michael, Michael, wake up. How can I go on living without you?"

Observing the spectacle unfolding before him, Liam couldn't help but find it all incredibly absurd.

These people put on a show of profound filial devotion. If he hadn't witnessed the entire thing himself, he might have been moved!

"Ha ha ha!"

Liam burst into boisterous laughter!

In an instant, their tears ceased. It was replaced by fear as they stared at Liam.

When they heard the laughter, a chill ran down their spines, filling them with dread!

Liam shook his head as a smirk played on his lips. "The Seymour family sure knows how to put on a show. Too bad the main character isn't around, or it would've been more entertaining," he remarked.

Of course, by 'main character,' he meant Ajax.

With his deadly icy gaze, Liam turned his attention back to the remaining members of the Seymour family.

In an instant, fear gripped the hearts of the Seymour family members, causing them to tremble uncontrollably.

Summoning his courage, one of them stammered, "What... What do you want to do? The old man is dead. Do you want to go back on your word?"

Liam sneered, "I'm not like you Seymour folks. I'll let you live for now, but as long as Ajax is part of this family, I'll be back!"

His gaze then settled on the young man who had just killed Michael. With a mischievous smile, he inquired, "You're quite intriguing. What's your name?"

Clutching the bloodied knife, the young man swallowed hard and answered with ruthless determination, "I'm Sutton Seymour!"

Liam nodded approvingly and remarked, "That's a good name. I must admit, I admire your brutality a little! From this point on, you're the head of the Seymour family! No matter which way you choose, you must find Ajax and deliver me the message. Remember, if he stays alive,

your life will be on the line!"

With those words spoken, Liam turned around and walked out of the banquet hall alongside Jaxtyn.

The duo were out of sight as they reached the corridor's end. The wealthy businessmen in the banquet hall let out a collective sigh of relief!

However, just as they pondered their next move, a middle-aged woman from the Seymour family unexpectedly dropped to her knees in front of Michael's coffin and wailed loudly.

Her cries echoed throughout the hall, but oddly, not a single tear streamed down her cheeks.

Soon enough, others began to follow suit, mimicking her grief-stricken display.

The members of the Seymour family knelt down. Their wails and sobs filled the air.

The young man who had just been praised by Liam stood bewildered and terror-stricken.

He gazed at the group of people before him and muttered, "I'm the head of the Seymour family... I'm the head of the Seymour family, right?"

Deep down, he felt no remorse or sorrow for killing someone.

In that moment of silence, an overwhelming sense of elation and excitement consumed him.

Sutton forcefully kicked away the butler's lifeless body. Settling himself in Michael's former seat, he bellowed, "Shut it! From now on, I am the head of the Seymour family! I call the shots. Every one of you better do as I say, or you'll meet your maker!"

At Sutton's declaration, all the Seymour family members ceased their weeping.

They turned their gaze toward the young man on the central seat. Their eyes were filled with a mix of strange expressions like coldness, disdain, but no trace of respect.

The head of the Seymour family?

That was absurd!!

Just then, a pained groan emanated from a nearby coffin.

Rowan woke up!

As soon as that voice reached their ears, everyone turned to Sutton with mischievous smirks playing on their faces.

After all, Rowan was the direct descendant of the Seymour family. He was the most rightful person to inherit the family legacy!

In that instant, resentment flickered in Sutton's eyes.

"I'm the head of the Seymour family. I'm your leader!" he proclaimed.

He grabbed the broken fragment of the wine bottle on the floor, ignoring the blood flowing from his right hand which he held the fragment with.

He swiftly leaped into the open coffin.

Before Rowan could regain consciousness, Sutton repeatedly thrust the shard into his throat, again and again.

"Ah! Ah! Ah!"

The screams grew increasingly high-pitched and agonized.

It took a full three minutes for the piercing cries to gradually fade away.

Rowan lay lifeless in the coffin.

Immediately, fear coursed through the crowd, shocking them to their core.

Chapter 320 Brothers

At the same time, Liam and Jaxtyn had gotten in the Rolls-Royce Phantom and left the hotel.

After they went into the tunnel, they drove into the trunk of a big truck. The surveillance footage only captured four trucks driving out of the tunnel.

However, the Rolls-Royce that had just driven in seemed to vanish without a trace.

In the car, Jaxtyn looked at Liam who was in the back seat and asked politely, "King, are we being too merciful by sparing the Seymour family? And why did we allow that Sutton to take charge of them?"

Liam smiled subtly and said, "Because he possesses cruelty and has a fierce will to survive. With Ajax's whereabouts unknown, the Seymour family remains our sole thread of information. We can't eliminate them just yet. I need a knife, and that young man is precisely that. People like him are driven by ambition. Having risen from humble beginnings, he would value the chance to serve me and follow my every command."

Hearing this, Jaxtyn nodded, but then said, confused, "But he's so young, and Rowan is still alive. I fear others in the Seymour family won't heed his leadership."

Liam shook his head and went on, "Today, my purpose was to intimidate the Seymour family. If he possesses even a shred of intelligence, he'll utilize my influence to exert control over others. As for the two brothers, Ajax and Rowan, they are both standing in his way and are his enemies. I won't have to lift a finger, for he will kill them himself."

Jaxtyn sat there, dumbfounded, as Liam's explanation reverberated in his mind.

In his opinion, King not only possessed extraordinary skills but also an uncanny ability to decipher people's thoughts in an instant.

The mere thought of being a member of the Seymour family sent

shivers down Jaxtyn's spine, causing cold sweat to break out across his brow.

It was truly a terrifying fate to become this man's adversary.

But in that moment, a wave of relief washed over Jaxtyn.

Thankfully, he was on the side of friendship, not enmity.

Glimpsing Liam's reflection in the rearview mirror, Jaxtyn smiled sheepishly. "Your methods are truly commendable. Though, I must admit, you remind me of a friend I had when I was on Hoiwa Island."

"Oh? What's his name?" Liam asked with a mischievous smirk.

A surge of excitement coursed through Jaxtyn.

Brushing aside his feelings of inferiority, he turned towards Liam with unabashed excitement. "This man is incredibly strong. He no doubt is in the third-rank! If you ever cross paths with him, I'm sure you two would quickly become friends!"

"Oh? Really? But how can I be friends with myself?"

With deliberate slowness, Liam removed the golden mask from his face, revealing his strikingly handsome features.

The sight of the familiar face in the backseat caused Jaxtyn's eyes to widen, as if he had just seen a ghost. "You, you, you..."

Yet, in that moment, the once cold and commanding King transformed, his smile radiating warmth akin to a spring breeze and gentle sunshine. He smiled and said, "What? It took you only three days to forget how I look?"

After choking on his words for what felt like an eternity, Jaxtyn finally let out a relieved breath.

He slapped his thigh with excitement and exclaimed, "No wonder I sensed a familiarity! No wonder you displayed such incredible power on Hoiwa Island!

You're King of the Dark Night Organization! This is amazing! King and I are brothers!"

With a shy gaze, Jaxtyn cautiously asked, "Are we still brothers?"

Liam flashed a mischievous grin and quipped, "Oh, do you seriously think that I am a liar?"

Jaxtyn, sensing Liam's playful tone, realized he was just kidding.

A smile stretched across his face as he proudly declared, "Hahaha, King is my brother. I could brag about it till the end of time!"

As he spoke, his excitement reached its peak, causing tears to stream down his cheeks.

Liam patted his shoulder and asked, "Why are you so excited? By the way, you and Annie are the only ones on Hoiwa Island who know I'm King. Let's keep it a secret, alright?"

Jaxtyn thumped his chest with determination and vowed, "You can count on me. I'll take this secret to my grave!"

Meanwhile, news of what happened at the banquet hall had swiftly spread throughout Salem.

The Evans family, the Riley family, as well as the military and the police, all flocked to the scene.

It seemed like Liam and Jaxtyn had been creating chaos for quite a while, but the truth was, they had only been there for less than thirty minutes! However, when the authorities attempted to investigate further, they discovered that the hotel's surveillance footage had been destroyed, and there was no hope of retrieving it.

A policeman exclaimed, "Track the car!"

Everyone nodded and went to inspect the surveillance footage along the road.

However, after meticulously reviewing all the recordings, they found nothing but the car entering the tunnel.

The two men from the Dark Night Organization had seemingly vanished into thin air, leaving no trace behind. Tracking them down proved to be an arduous task.

Chapter 321 Soothing Balm

They didn't arrive at the manor on the outskirts of Salem until ten o'clock in the evening.

Liam stepped out of the Rolls-Royce, while Jaxtyn drove off alone.

Jaxtyn had been transferred to Salem and had discreetly sent out the Dark Night Organization members in the city to track down Ajax's whereabouts.

As soon as Liam stepped foot into the manor, he caught sight of Julie wheeling herself around in the living room as she brewed some tea.

It was almost like she had a sixth sense that Liam would show up around this time. Coincidentally, she lifted her gaze and met his at the doorway.

In that brief moment, they exchanged a tender gaze and their eyes reflected affection.

Julie's lips curved into a gentle smile as she said, "I knew you'd be back late. Are you feeling hungry? I have some desserts ready for you."

Liam felt a rush of warmth flood his heart.

Back when he worked as a driver in Ninverton, he often stayed up late at night.

But what awaited him at home was nothing but a desolate, cold room. It was a first for Liam to experience someone waiting for him in such a thoughtful manner, turning on the lights and preparing him a late-night snack.

Liam hurriedly approached Julie. He reached out to affectionately rub her head for a brief moment.

With a playful smile, Julie feigned annoyance and quipped, "Why do you pet me like I'm a puppy?"

With a gentle grin, Liam settled down beside Julie. He took a sip of the steaming tea, then picked up a pancake and took a big bite.

The pancake had a perfect balance of softness and crunch, with just the right amount of sweetness. It looked and tasted absolutely delicious.

In the past, as a sophisticated urban beauty and a successful female CEO, Julie would have never found the time to create such delectable treats. It was evident that she had put considerable effort into making the midnight snack.

Observing Liam's obvious satisfaction with the food, Julie gazed at him intently before asking, "Why did you bring me here alone and cut me off from the Internet? Can't my parents come to visit me?"

Liam let out a sigh, set down the half-eaten pancake, and responded, "I've arranged for someone to ensure your parents' safety. Having them come here would only increase the risk of revealing your whereabouts."

Worry creased Julie's brow as she asked, "What happened?"

Realizing he couldn't keep the truth concealed any longer, Liam pulled out his phone, tapped on a message, and handed it over to Julie.

It was a notification of a one-hundred-million reward for capturing her! Liam's gaze lingered on Julie's face, his heart heavy with concern.

After all, she was just an ordinary woman, not accustomed to the dangerous world he was entangled in.

If it were up to him, he would rather shield Julie from such knowledge and let her lead a carefree life.

The woman before him had already claimed his entire heart.

"Aren't you scared?" Liam finally asked. His eyes were fixed on her as she remained calm after reading the message.

Julie lifted her head, determination and stubbornness gleaming in her eyes. She pouted and retorted, "Why should I be scared when I have you by my side?! I'm sure you will protect me, won't you?"

Liam felt a surge of warmth envelop him and tried to conceal his worries.

Despite her efforts to conceal it, Liam could see fear linger in her eyes.

A staggering bounty of a hundred million was placed on her. This was enough to make any woman tremble with apprehension.

"Don't worry. Everything will be alright. No matter what, I'll be your protector until you're tired of having me around," Liam reassured, leaning in and embracing Julie firmly.

Hearing this, Julie immediately scolded, "How could I ever grow tired of you?! Let me make one thing clear, you're not allowed to find an excuse to abandon me!"

"No, never," Liam replied in a serious tone.

As he held her in his arms, he could feel the warmth of her body. It was a soothing balm to his soul.

In that moment, all the exhaustion accumulated over the past few days vanished, replaced by an indescribable sense of calmness.

Chapter 322 Removing The Gauze

After what felt like an eternity, Liam reluctantly let go of Julie's body.

As the warmth in his arms began to fade, a sudden urge to hold Julie like this for eternity washed over him.

He entertained the thought of spending the rest of his life with her in this tender embrace.

Taking a deep breath, Liam mustered the strength to compose himself and his eyes returned to their usual state.

He knew deep down that now wasn't the right time to act on his impulses.

Liam reached out and lightly grazed the gauze that still covered Julie's face. A small smile played on his lips. "Your wounds will heal soon," he said in a gentle voice. "In a few days, I'll remove the gauze for you."

Julie obediently nodded, and Liam wheeled her into the bedroom.

Immediately he entered the bedroom, a faint fragrance of the woman tickled Liam's senses.

He carefully lifted Julie and tenderly placed her on the bed.

"So I'm taking my leave now, okay?"

But just as Liam was about to turn away, a soft, petite hand grasped his, naughtily tickling his palm.

Snuggled beneath the cozy quilt, Julie playfully pleaded, "Sing me a lullaby before you go. You once sang for another woman at the Hollywood Pub, but you've never sung for me!"

There was a hint of jealousy in her voice.

Liam shrugged and comforted, "Really? I was singing for my fans. And, well, there were quite a lot of women among them."

Julie just looked at him, choosing not to push it further.

Worried that she might delve into further questions, Liam hastily returned to the bed and began singing a lullaby for her.

Despite the somewhat childish lyrics, the melody sounded enchanting in

Liam's captivating voice.

Julie pouted. "Do you see me as a baby?"

With a gentle smile, Liam nodded and responded, "Yes, you're my baby. Is anything wrong with that?"

The two exchanged affectionate smiles, and the room was filled with a warm and romantic ambiance.

And so, Liam remained in the manor for a week.

One day, Liam was engaged in a video call with the female doctor responsible for Julie's facial reconstruction.

After receiving a thorough explanation of the gauze removal process and the do's and don'ts for the follow-up treatment, he bid farewell to the doctor.

Having talked for a solid two hours, the female doctor felt her mouth and tongue parched.

She let out a sigh and exclaimed with admiration, "Julie is truly fortunate to have someone as formidable as you, Mr. Hoffman, to love and protect her."

Liam replied with a faint smile, "You'll be paid by someone later. It's best for you to leave Salem as soon as possible. I can't conveniently escort you personally right now."

Then he promptly ended the call.

After ensuring all necessary preparations were in order, Liam made his way to Julie's bedroom and approached Julie with gentle words. "Julie, it's time to take off the gauze. Are you ready?"

Julie lay on the bed. Her eyes were filled with a mix of fear and anticipation and her palms were sweaty.

She heaved a deep breath and firmly declared, "Let's do it!"

Liam held her hand and teased, "Don't be scared. No matter how ugly you look, I like you regardless!"

Julie playfully jabbed Liam's chest when she heard his comment and mockingly exclaimed, "Who are you calling ugly? Can't you say something nice?!"

With that little scene, the tense atmosphere lightened.

Standing in front of the mirror, Liam held his breath. His hand, usually steady even during surgical procedures, trembled ever so slightly.

Carefully, he peeled back a corner of the gauze, unveiling the hidden layers bit by bit. Each movement was delicate and cautious.

It felt as though any extra force would shatter the delicate beauty before him.

Summoning her courage, Julie locked eyes with her reflection in the mirror.

Ten minutes passed, and only half of the gauze had been removed.

As Liam prepared to catch a glimpse of the scar, his nerves got the best of him, causing him to pause anxiously.

Inhaling deeply, Liam continued to peel away the remaining gauze.

His gaze was fixed intently on Julie like he was fearful of any impending disaster.

As the gauze was finally removed, he found her face was free from any trace of the scar and her skin was flawless, soft, and delicate!

In an instant, a surge of joy swept through their hearts, rippling through their bodies and saturating every cell within them!

Julie not only regained her previous beauty but appeared even more stunning than ever before!

Liam burst into laughter, experiencing a happiness that surpassed all previous bounds.

Yet, as he lowered his gaze, intending to share this moment of joy, he noticed tears welling up in the eyes of the woman. She looked astonished and overwhelmed with emotions.

Chapter 323 Sleep With Me

Suddenly, a wave of sympathy washed over Liam. Without wasting a moment, he hurriedly reassured her, "Are you dissatisfied with the result? It doesn't matter. We can always fix it!"

Julie shook her head and a smile played on her lips as she wiped her teary eyes. Her voice trembled with excitement as she exclaimed, "No, I'm beyond satisfied. These tears are tears of joy."

Julie had always been stunningly beautiful, but in that moment, with her eyes brimming with tears, she could get pity from any man.

Looking at her pitiful face, Liam couldn't resist the impulse to press his lips against hers.

Their tongues intertwined passionately, not parting until they were both gasping for air.

At that moment, Julie's cheeks flushed. A hint of glistening saliva lingered at the corner of her mouth. She gazed at Liam as if invisible threads were weaving between their eyes, binding them together tightly. For Liam, the air seemed thick with anticipation. It was as if a single spark could ignite an intense blaze which would consume everything.

Julie, who was in his arms, exuded an irresistible allure.

A surge of sexual desire coursed through them and their restlessness bubbled up uncontrollably.

A voice echoed in Liam's mind. It was a persistent whisper telling him to have sex with the woman before him.

His hand trembled slightly as it caressed Julie's flawless face. It gradually descended along her slender neck.

"Hmm..." Julie closed her eyes, savoring his movements with pleasure. Her soft moans sent shivers down Liam's spine, heightening his senses. In a sudden moment of clarity, Liam snapped back to reality and struggled to suppress the burning desire within him.

The woman before him had just recovered, and he feared causing her any harm.

"I'm going to step out for a bit. Get some rest," Liam hastily announced as he rose to his feet.

However, before he could even turn around, her hand reached out and grabbed his again.

Liam felt the warmth and tenderness in her palm, as if it could melt him away.

Their nerves danced between ignited passion and restrained longing.

"What... What's the matter?" Liam's breath was ragged. His words stumbled out and he was too afraid to face her.

"Sleep with me please." Julie's voice was frail, yet it hit Liam like a thunderclap, leaving him stunned.

Liam's entire body stiffened. He had grown accustomed to the blood-soaked battles on the battlefield, but now he felt somewhat lost.

He hesitated. "Isn't it too early to sleep? I mean, it's still daytime!"

Julie burst into a giggle and teased, "Oh, you silly thing! Turn around and take a good look at me. Where's that assertive CEO demeanor you used to have? It doesn't matter if it's still daytime. As long as we're happy, that's all that counts."

When he heard this, the rims of Liam's eyes turned red and his breath grew faster and more erratic.

His body ignited with an intense surge of sexual desire.

Liam turned to face the captivating woman before him.

Her exquisite face resembled the juiciest spring peach, causing him to involuntarily swallow and crave having sex with her.

He tried to suppress his urges so as not to use too much strength under the surging passion. He then gently lifted her and placed her on the pristine white bed.

As Julie lay on the bed, her fair skin gleamed under Liam's gaze. Her chest rose and fell with each quick breath.

Particularly, her beautiful cleavage stirred an overwhelming mixture of love and desire within Liam.

He could no longer suppress the all-consuming urge within him.

Bit by bit, he unbuttoned Julie's clothes...

Chapter 324 The First Time

Liam slowly removed Julie's skirt.

Immediately, her skin which was as pure as freshly fallen snow, lay exposed before Liam's eager eyes.

Julie's skin had an irresistible softness, akin to the smoothness of cream, so velvety and tender.

Liam swallowed hard. His hands quivered as he unclasped Julie's bra. Her supple bosom popped out like jiggling gelatin, generously round and flawlessly proportioned.

Her nipples were like ripe cherries, tempting one to taste and savor their sweetness. ①

Liam's primal instincts overwhelmed his senses.

He held one of the breasts with one hand and immediately brought it to his lips.

Liam could feel the softness in his mouth. His tongue caressed it alternating between gentle swirls and hard sucks.

"Mmm... Ah..." Julie's eyelids fluttered shut. Her brow furrowed as pleasure escaped her lips in a series of fervent moans.

Liam granted no respite to Julie's desire. Driven by instinct, his hand ventured downward, traversing the path to her most intimate haven.

As Liam's fingers delved deeper, Julie's arousal heightened, her senses electrified by the growing anticipation.

She pressed her lips together tightly, her vision growing hazy as his unrestrained advances intensified.

Clutching Liam's wrists firmly, she gasped for breath, but did not stop him.

Releasing his hold on her tender breasts, Liam held her lips with a passionate bite and his tongue slipped into her mouth.

Their tongues entwined tightly like two snakes in a mating dance.

Sensuous and scorching!

After an intense period of physical intimacy, Liam finally entered her.

The white sheet was instantly stained with a touch of red, like a plum blossom, clean and pure.

She was still a virgin!

"Did I push you too hard? Are you in pain?" Liam's voice dripped with concern.

Tears glistened in Julie's eyes as she shook her head and whispered, "Take it slow. Don't rush."

The tenderness reflected in Liam's eyes seemed to possess an enchanting power, capable of melting hearts.

He caressed Julie's hair tenderly and muttered, "Okay."

Both of them clung to each other tightly. Their bodies trembled as if they were going to meld into one another.

They continued with passion and were sweating all over. Suddenly, an orgasmic scream pierced the air.

"Ahhh!!! Ah!"

Julie quivered from head to toe. Her hands gripped Liam's back with such intensity that her nails left marks upon his flesh.

It took some seconds for the tremors in her abdomen to subside and her hands weakly dropped onto the bed.

Liam's stamina seemed boundless.

They had been at it for more than two hours.

Julie's hair was now drenched in sweat. It emitted a fruity fragrance which was from her shampoo. This even further accentuated her allure.

Liam delicately wiped away the tears at the corners of her eyes and said, "Next time, I'll be more gentle."

Julie snorted playfully. She pinched his chest and retorted, "There won't be a next time!"

Liam's face twisted into a bitter expression.

A sly grin played across Julie's lips as she quipped, "Next time, I'll be on top!"

This time, a mischievous smile spread across Liam's face, and a warmth

bloomed in his heart as he replied, "Sure thing, fierce lady!"

Both of them embraced tightly, refusing to let go for what felt like an eternity.

Resting her head against Liam's chest, Julie playfully traced circles on his body with her fingers and casually asked, "Is this your first time?"

Liam nodded heavily and replied, "Of course."

Julie raised her head, disbelief evident in her eyes. "You're pulling my leg. You were so skilled. You awakened all my desires. You must be a playboy!"

Liam shook his head and said anxiously, "I simply have a sharp memory and have watched similar situations before."

"Similar situations?"

She raised an eyebrow and flashed a mischievous smile. Leaning in close to Liam's ear, she teasingly licked it with her tender tongue. Her breath smelt like fragrance. "Next time...Let's watch it together."

Chapter 325 Liam Was King

After Liam and Julie had sex, their relationship got better.

In the days that followed, they became even more inseparable.

Liam was constantly in this secluded paradise, enjoying the serenity of the place. Salem, on the other hand, was now in chaos.

At this time, Tyler had already been discharged from the hospital. He was recuperating at home.

Today, Yolanda was with him. She pushed his wheelchair into the garden, and they took a walk.

She was in a trance. Sometimes she frowned, and sometimes she looked relaxed. Excitement and fear appeared alternately on her face. But she was quiet, and no one knew what she was thinking.

On the other hand, Tyler, sitting in his wheelchair, looked glum. His heart felt heavy at this moment. He was so lost in thoughts that he didn't notice Yolanda's strangeness at all.

At this moment, Cartwright, the head of the Riley family, walked to them with a straight face. He waved at Yolanda and said irritably, "Give us some privacy."

Yolanda had long been used to his attitude towards her, so she didn't make a fuss over it. She immediately walked away.

Only the father and son were left in the garden now.

Cartwright looked at Tyler solemnly and asked in a low voice, "How much do you know about Liam Hoffman?"

Tyler was stunned by his father's question. And instead of answering, he asked back, "Dad, why are you asking this?"

"Don't ask. Just tell me!" Cartwright shouted harshly.

Tyler was so frightened that he trembled all over. He quickly said, "He is a member of the Hoffman family. He was married to Yolanda to train his disposition in the Lambert family for three years. But later, Yolanda cheated on him, and he was kicked out of the Lambert family. That's all I know."

"The Hoffman family..." Cartwright murmured.

He frowned and guessed, "Is this Liam related to the Dark Night Organization? Is it possible that he is the man they call King?"

Tyler hurriedly shook his head and denied, "Dad, how can that be possible? Such a powerful man like King can crush us like crushing ants. If Liam were King, we would have been dead long ago."

Cartwright nodded. He felt Tyler made sense.

King was a big shot. How could he let them bully him just like that?

He breathed a sigh of relief. "You're right. There is no freaking way that little bastard is King of the Dark Night Organization."

"Dad, what happened at the birthday party of the Seymour family? And where did that King come from?" Tyler asked, looking a little confused.

When Tyler mentioned King and the Dark Night Organization, fear crept across Cartwright's face. He said in a deep voice, "I don't know the details. I only know that the head of the Seymour family and his third grandson Rowan were killed. That Rowan is your friend, right?"

Tyler's eyes widened, and his mouth gaped open. But he couldn't speak. He knew how capable Rowan was. Rowan had deep connections with the direct descendants of the top ten families. Rowan was in charge of the core industry of the Seymour family and was the designated successor of their family.

When he came back to his senses, he hurriedly asked, "Does that mean the Seymour family has no heir now? Dad, this is a good chance for us."

Cartwright snorted coldly, shook his head, and said, "That King of the Dark Night Organization has personally appointed a nobody from the Seymour family as the head. His name is Sutton, and he said he must find Ajax. At this time, no one dares to cause trouble for the Seymour family."

All these things were like an inconceivable farce that shocked everyone in Salem.

Tyler remained silent, so Cartwright snorted and continued, "Do you think things are just as simple as the Seymour family being destroyed? Don't you notice that public opinion and news in Salem are very calm?"

It's as if this is just a trivial matter. Even the police and the military didn't investigate."

Tyler's mind went blank. He was completely stunned at the moment.

Indeed, it was terribly quiet. And it felt very scary. Even people with high status like them only heard a little about it.

A gleam shone in Cartwright's eyes. He looked into the distance and said slowly, "Right now, Salem is like a quiet and dark lake. It looks calm on the surface, but there are undercurrents deep down. The members of the top ten families both openly and secretly got some news from those who attended the birthday party. But they tacitly keep silent."

Tyler swallowed his saliva hard. The top ten families shut their mouths. This only proved how terrifying the Dark Night Organization and King were.

Cartwright shook his head and said disdainfully, "I've been too sensitive recently. I even thought that Liam was King. But the more I think about it, the more impossible it seems. All right. I'll find someone to continue investigating the Dark Night Organization. But don't cause any trouble for me these days."

After saying this, he turned around and left the garden.

King's horrifying power shocked all the families in Salem, making them incomparably afraid.

Because they knew that this mysterious organization that suddenly appeared in Salem could crush their families at any time.

The powerful Seymour family had assets worth tens of billions of dollars. But in front of the organization, they were vulnerable.

The Riley family was at the bottom of the top ten families. At this moment, they had to play cautious.

Since Cartwright had left, only Tyler was left in the garden.

At this time, a wave of agitation suddenly surged in his heart. It was as if thousands of ants crawled all over his body.

Blue veins stood out on his forehead. He subconsciously grabbed the roses beside him, feeling extremely uncomfortable.

He only suppressed the irritability in his heart when he felt a sharp pain

in his palm. He returned to his senses.

Since he was beaten up by Liam, he had developed this bad habit. He always wanted to take revenge, but he could only make it possible in his dreams.

The long-term anger and unwillingness that had accumulated in his heart became a sickness.

And without a way to vent them, they would explode anytime without warning.

Therefore, he believed that only Liam's death could bring him back to his true health.

Tyler's eyes turned red, and his face became ferocious. He gritted his teeth, restraining the impulse to destroy everything around him.

He murmured in a hoarse and deep voice, "Ajax's whereabouts have become the biggest mystery. Where on earth has this loser gone? How did he provoke a terrifying group like the Dark Night Organization?"

Then he seemed to have remembered something. He suddenly became excited.

"It's a pity that the sky-high bounty for Julie has been withdrawn. Otherwise, I will find her, then I'll have a taste of her. It will even be more wonderful if I can savage her in front of Liam."

As he said this, Tyler's eyes were full of lust, and his body trembled uncontrollably.

The scene where he was riding on Julie appeared in his mind. This spiritual climax made him very happy.

But before the pleasure in his heart dissipated, the scene where he was humiliated by Liam came to his mind again.

This feeling of humiliation and grievance was like a knife, piercing into his self-esteem.

"Liam, just wait and see. One day, I will torture your woman to death in front of you," Tyler roared. The waves of anger were like tsunamis inside his heart.

He felt a dull pain in his limbs, making him extremely uncomfortable.

"King, wherever you are, I will find you. I will become as powerful as

you, then I will kill Liam with my own hands. I have money. I can use it to be your disciple. Oh, no... I can't use money on you. After all, how can someone like you be short of money? But I can use my money to ask you to kill Liam. As long as you can help me get rid of him, I will give you as much money as you want."

Tyler kept talking to himself, subconsciously biting his fingernails. He didn't even realize they were already bleeding.

His expression changed several times. Nervousness, fear, worship, and admiration alternately appeared on his face. He looked like an extremely terrifying schizophrenic.

He only stopped murmuring when the agitation in his heart finally dissipated.

Then his mouth gradually curved into an evil grin.

Chapter 326 Uniting The Two Gangs

In the manor, Liam sat in a teahouse, drinking tea leisurely.

Klaus and Tyson stood at the side, reporting the recent events and developments in Salem in a low voice.

Tyson said, "Mr. Hoffman, all the powerful families in Salem are secretly investigating the Dark Night Organization. After Michael's birthday party, Sutton offered a one-hundred-million-dollar bounty in the black market for Ajax's head. In addition, Tyler of the Riley family told the people in the black market that as long as King of the Dark Night Organization is willing to accept him as a disciple, he is willing to give King three hundred million dollars as payment."

Upon hearing this, Liam put down the teacup, raised his eyebrows, and said, "Ha-ha! Such a payment is quite generous."

Klaus, standing beside them, said worriedly, "The Dark Night Organization has a very mysterious background. No one knows anything about it. But judging from King's strength, it's not to be sniffed at. After all, he could ruin the Seymour family alone. It is said that with his strength, he seems not like a human."

His eyes exuded respect and longing for the strong.

People in the underworld had always been the ones not accepted by others.

Even people like Tyson earned their reputation by asking for mercy from the upper-class and powerful people in Salem.

But Klaus didn't expect that there was such a terrifying person like King who could use force to overwhelm a family with assets worth more than ten billion dollars.

Someone like him was a legend in their underworld.

Liam took a sip of his tea and smiled. He didn't say anything.

So far, Klaus and Tyson still didn't know that Liam was King.

And Liam didn't intend to tell them. After all, he and they belonged to two different worlds. Sometimes, the more they knew, the more

dangerous it would be for them.

When Klaus saw that Liam looked so calm, he subconsciously asked, "Mr. Hoffman, do you know King?"

Liam shook his head, smiled faintly, and said, "What does the Dark Night Organization have to do with us? I guess the Seymour family has provoked them. Now that the bounty has been withdrawn, you can release Julie's parents. You can't always protect them, after all. The Beauty Cosmetics Company also needs someone to run it. But you still have to send some people to secretly protect them."

"I understand, Mr. Hoffman," Klaus replied respectfully.

Although Ajax was the core of their investigation, they didn't see him as a threat to Liam.

After all, he was just a toothless tiger for Liam. He was no different from a cat.

In the past, Ajax only relied on the power of the Seymour family to bully others.

But now, the ones who wanted to kill him the most were the members of the Seymour family.

Liam drank up the tea in his cup and sneered, "To please the head of Seymour family, Rowan once offered a reward of one hundred million dollars to someone who could capture Julie.

But now, the Seymour family offered a reward of one hundred million dollars for Ajax's head. How ironic!"

He put the teacup back on the plate, stood up, and looked at the sky outside the window. The massing clouds were being scattered by the wind.

Suddenly, a cold light shot through Liam's eyes. He clenched his fists and said in a deep voice, "The world is unpredictable. If one wants to live a stable life and not be bullied, they must have enough strength."

After saying this, he gave off a breathtaking aura.

This majestic aura actually made Klaus and Tyson extremely scared.

Liam denied his relation to the Dark Night Organization. But Klaus was not a fool.

As soon as Liam returned to Salem, the head of the Seymour family was immediately killed.

This couldn't be a coincidence.

At the thought of this, Klaus lowered his head even deeper.

Tyson, standing behind Klaus, said awkwardly after hesitating for a while, "Mr. Hoffman, my Axe Gang has been boycotted by the three major families. We can't do business now. My men are having a hard time making a living because they continue to follow me. If this goes on, I'm afraid they won't be loyal to me anymore."

After saying this, he looked at Liam with pleading eyes, anxiously waiting for Liam's opinion.

Liam sneered. His next step would be to deal with the other two major families.

His eyes were as sharp as the eagle's. He suddenly turned around and said harshly, "I will unite the power of Tyson's Axe Gang and Aikin's Just Gang. Let's see who dares to fight against the combined force of the two gangs."

He looked at Tyson and asked coldly, "Do you mind if I appoint Aikin as the leader of the new gang?"

Suddenly, a murderous aura enveloped Tyson's body.

He felt cold all over. Could he dare to refuse? He said, "No, Mr. Hoffman. I don't mind."

Liam waved his hand, indicating that Tyson and Klaus could leave. Then he turned around and went upstairs to Julie's bedroom.

At this moment, he returned to the sunny man again. He smiled and whispered, "It's time for my Kingland Group to enter Salem. Julie, I will not only restore your previous glory. I will also revive your career and make you the number one female CEO in Salem."

Chapter 327 My House

Julie was on the bed, holding a camera and looking through their recent photos.

In every photo, Liam was very handsome, while she was beautiful. They were a perfect match.

She couldn't help giggling while checking every photo. Her eyes were full of sweetness.

This manor was the most memorable place for her. After all, the time she spent with Liam here was the happiest moment of her life.

"What are you looking at? Why are you giggling?" Liam asked as he walked into the bedroom.

Julie quickly put down the camera, coughed, and said, "It's nothing."

Liam nodded, put his hands on her shins, and said, "It's time for your checkup."

After saying this, he didn't give her any chance to refuse. His hands slowly sank into her calves as if her skin was a soft sponge. Then he gently massaged her two beautiful legs. ①

"Mmm... Mmm..." Liam's strength was so well controlled that Julie couldn't help moaning. She panted uncontrollably.

What happened to her in that illegal clinic not only injured her lungs but also slightly fractured her two legs.

Now, after undergoing dietary therapy, expensive medical treatment, coupled with Liam's regular massage, Julie had recovered a lot.

Liam pressed the muscles on her calves, nodded, and said, "You are recovering well. You can start the rehabilitation now. I will accompany you to exercise. If everything goes well, you should be able to walk by yourself in a few days."

Julie nodded repeatedly. Her eyes were filled with joy.

After all, no one wanted to sit in a wheelchair their entire lives.

Julie held Liam's hand and said shyly, "Since you are so skilled and your massage can make me so comfortable, you can also massage the

other parts of my body, right?"

"Of course. I'll give you a full body massage." After saying this, Liam leaned forward and kissed her lips hard.

His hands quietly wandered and climbed up her round breasts, gently squeezing them.

"Ahhh..." A sweet moan echoed in the room.

As Liam promised, he accompanied Julie for the next few days, trying to help her exercise the muscles of her legs, so she could walk again.

These past few days, a piece of sensational news swept through the entire Salem.

The Kingland Group had officially announced that it would set up its headquarters in Salem. They would finally enter Salem.

They would develop their famous Hollywood Pub and Funbuy here.

Actually, people didn't feel much about Funbuy being developed in Salem. After all, it was an online shopping platform, and they could use it wherever they were.

But Hollywood Pub was different.

Many people flew to Ninverton overnight to watch a concert in Hollywood Pub.

And now that it finally reached Salem, the locals could go there every night.

For a moment, the news about Hollywood Pub flooded the screen of everyone in Salem.

At this moment, in the Seymour family's house, Sutton sat on the central seat, stroking it.

This seat originally belonged to Michael. But now, it belonged to him.

He leaned against the chair leisurely, drinking whisky worth more than ten thousand dollars and smoking a Cohiba Behike cigar worth five hundred dollars. He wanted to enjoy his current life as much as he could.

These things could not be enjoyed by ordinary people all their lives. But in his case, they had become parts of his daily life.

Sutton's heart swelled to the extreme.

He had never dared to think about this kind of life before. But now, he was getting more and more fond of the position as the head of the Seymour family. His possessive desire soared crazily.

However, how long could he be in this position? It all depended on King of the Dark Night Organization.

At this moment, the members of the Seymour family were intimidated by King. But after some time, there must be some people who would not accept Sutton being their leader anymore.

But there were ways how his position could be more stable. First, he had to find Ajax as soon as possible. And second, he must join the Dark Night Organization.

To be the head of a family was a rare opportunity, so he must cherish it.

It was already late at night when the general manager of the Seymour Group's chain of bars entered the room with an uneasy face.

He handed over a pile of documents in his hands and said respectfully, "Mr. Seymour, this is all the information about Hollywood Pub."

But unexpectedly, instead of taking the documents, Sutton kicked the general manager hard and scolded angrily, "Damn it! Why are you wearing a long face? Are you visiting your father's grave?"

The general manager was angry, but he didn't dare to say anything. Instead, he bent his waist even deeper and said apologetically, "Mr. Seymour, Hollywood Pub has now entered Salem. It has not officially opened yet, but it has attracted lots of attention. Seymour Group's Emperor Pub must be affected severely."

Sutton took a drag on his cigarette and blew a smoke ring on the manager's face. He sneered. "Will my family be afraid of a garbage bar from a small city?"

The general manager trembled. He quickly said, "No, Mr. Seymour. No."

Sutton pressed his cigar hard on the manager's clothes until a big hole was formed. Then he sneered again, "Take someone to the owner of Hollywood Pub and tell him to sell it to me. Otherwise, I promise he won't be able to open a single bar here."

The general manager had no choice but to endure the pain and nodded

repeatedly. He didn't dare to cry out in pain.

Sutton watched the general manager leave in a hurry. He cursed, "Damn it! Such a bunch of losers. They can't even handle a little thing well, and they even have to come to bother me."

He then yawned, so he went upstairs to sleep.

But as soon as he entered his bedroom and turned on the lights, a big and thick hand instantly covered his mouth and nose.

Sutton's eyes widened in shock. He wanted to see who the man was.

But unfortunately, he couldn't move, let alone turn his head. His mouth was covered, so he also couldn't speak.

Then another hand stretched out in the dark and instantly twisted Sutton's arm.

"Ahhh! It hurts! You bastard! Who are you, and why are you doing this to me?"

A sharp pain came to Sutton, making him tremble all over.

The door was closed again, and the entire villa fell into darkness.

The big hand slowly loosened, releasing Sutton's mouth and nose. He collapsed to the floor like mud, greedily gasping for air.

"Who are you? How dare you attack me! If I know you, I must kill your entire family."

While cursing, Sutton raised his head with difficulty. Then he saw a man standing in the middle of the bedroom.

His mind went blank all of a sudden. It was as if he was struck by lightning.

The face of the man was like a ghost.

His eyes opened wide, and he stopped being arrogant. Instead, he said nervously, "Who are you? How did you... How did you get here?"

The eyes of the man in the middle of the room were covered with black gauze, and his face was full of terrifying scars.

Then a stiff and synthetic voice sounded. "I came to my house through the front door, of course."

Sutton's eyes widened even more, and his body trembled uncontrollably. He said in horror, "You... Are you Ajax?"

Chapter 328 Scarlett Duncan

Standing in the middle of the room, Ajax sneered.

The synthesized voice was close to the human voice. But it sounded hoarse and harsh, like the sound of rubbing the bark, so it was incomparably strange. It could make anyone's hair stand on end.

Ajax's eyes were full of resentment. He snapped, "You are just a small fry. You didn't even deserve to serve me before. You bastard! How dare you kill my grandfather!"

Sutton lay on the floor. He wanted to kowtow, but his body could not move at all.

So he could only keep begging for mercy. "It's my fault. I was being impulsive. I shouldn't have made such a big mistake. I don't want this position. I don't want to be the head of the Seymour family anymore. I'll give it back to you. But please spare my life. Don't kill me."

"Calm down, you bastard! It's no big deal that you killed that old man." Ajax was calm and indifferent. He continued, "Just tell me what happened at his birthday party. If you miss a single detail, I promise that you will live a life worse than death."

Of course, Sutton didn't dare to hide anything. So he quickly told Ajax the whole story.

"Ha-ha!" After hearing the whole story, Ajax suddenly burst into laughter.

The hoarse and harsh laughter sounded weird. He was like a devil from hell. It was as good as the sound effects in horror movies.

Ajax suddenly lowered his head. The resentment in his eyes seemed to have turned into an entity. He said hoarsely, "So it was Liam and the Dark Night Organization again. Liam, my closest relatives all died because of you. Do you really think you have won? What a pity! You must have expected I'm dead. But I'm sorry to disappoint you. I'm back alive."

At this moment, a cold female voice sounded from the shadows, "Don't

talk so much nonsense. Get down to business!"

Sutton turned and looked in the direction where the voice came from.

Then he saw a gorgeous but cold woman.

She wore a black women's suit that outlined her perfect curves, highlighting her enchanting figure.

Her suit looked ordinary. But judging from the tailoring, one could tell that it was handmade by a master. And it must be worth at least one hundred thousand dollars.

Not only the clothes but also the woman's overall appearance made her look elegant and luxurious.

And under the laced half spider-shaped mask on her face, her cold eyes looked enchanting and luscious.

The expression on Ajax's face changed. Standing next to the woman, he smiled awkwardly and nodded submissively. "Miss Duncan, don't worry. I'll ask right now."

Ajax's attitude towards the woman was totally different. He dared to be cruel to others, but he would never dare to provoke her at all.

After all, she did not only save him. She was also a member of the dark team of the Black Spider.

Scarlett Duncan was the biological sister of Frey, the leader of the dark team of the Black Spider on Hoiwa Island.

Ajax remembered Frey almost killed Liam with a sniper rifle. Then Scarlett saved him. She was not a simple woman either. Actually, the moment he saw her, the first thing that came to his mind was the black widow of Africa with deadly venom all over its body.

Ajax was still not used to being with Scarlett. Every time he was with her, he felt uncomfortable.

Scarlett touched the eye patch on her face and sneered, "If it weren't for the fact that you are still valuable, I wouldn't have saved you. If that Liam you mentioned was really the one who destroyed the cruise ship, I would definitely kill him. But if not, I will kill you."

The murderous intent suddenly appeared in her eyes, making Ajax freeze.

"Damn it, you bitch!" Ajax cursed in a very low voice upon hearing this. But he still answered, "Of course, I don't dare to lie to you."

When he just approached the dock of Salem the other day, he was locked up in a dark and wet dungeon.

It was not until yesterday that the woman suddenly appeared, claiming she was Frey's younger sister. She even interrogated him severely.

At that time, Ajax was so terrified when he learned that Chet and Frey were both killed. And even the cruise ship sank into the sea.

So he said firmly, "I know it was Liam. He is the mastermind. It must be him!"

Scarlett just glanced at him and took him out of the dungeon.

Actually, Ajax was not sure if the murderer was really Liam.

At this moment, Ajax sneered in his heart. He was blind, and his grandfather was dead. So whether Liam was King or not, Liam had to die with him.

He only had one thought in his mind.

The truth didn't matter anymore. All he wanted was for Liam to die.

With a ferocious smile on his wrinkled face, Ajax snapped, "Don't worry. I am very sure about it. Others may not know it, but I am well aware of it. When I was on Hoiwa Island, I personally heard a woman call Liam King."

In Salem, the word "King" had a special meaning.

"Humph!"

Scarlett snorted disgustedly.

At this moment, a stinky smell suddenly reached their noses.

They turned their heads in unison and found it came from Sutton.

He must be so scared when they heard Ajax and Scarlett's conversation that he wetted his pants.

Ajax looked at him, curled his lips disdainfully, and sneered, "You are just a loser. How dare you be the head of the Seymour family! If you still want to live, do one thing for me."

Chapter 329 The Human Skin Mask

That night, a piece of news, accompanied by a photo, was released by the Seymour family and quickly spread among the major families.

Ajax was finally found.

In the photo, Ajax looked like a crazy beggar with bruises all over his face.

This scene undoubtedly shocked everyone in the upper-class circle of Salem. After all, the Seymour family used to be a thriving family among the ten major families in Salem. And as Michael's eldest grandson, Ajax had a very respectable status.

But now, a daunting child had become like this. He was no different from a stray dog beaten to death. At the sight of him, people didn't only sigh but also feel scared.

What kind of a person was King of the unfathomable Dark Night Organization?

The next day in the manor, Liam and Julie woke up early in the morning. Liam performed the last rehabilitation treatment for Julie's legs.

Julie could walk normally now, but her speed was a little slower than a normal person's. And she still needed some time to return to her former self.

After the rehabilitation, they went downstairs hand in hand to have breakfast together.

In the past few days, Liam had been getting up early every day and personally preparing breakfast for Julie.

Then they had intimate meals every time.

At this moment, Klaus rushed in, sweating profusely all over.

When Liam saw Klaus like this, he turned to Julie and said, "Go rest first."

He didn't want Julie to be bothered by anything.

Julie didn't say anything more. She just nodded obediently and went upstairs alone.

Liam then stood up and went to the study with Klaus.

Klaus poured a glass of whiskey for Liam, stood at the side, and said respectfully, "Five days from now, Sutton will hold a celebration party at Royal Hotel. He said he will personally hand over Ajax to King of the Dark Night Organization."

"In five days?" Liam frowned slightly. He felt something was wrong, so he asked, "What else did he say?"

Klaus continued, "Sutton also announced that he wanted to be King's apprentice and slave, and from now on, the Seymour family will be under King's control."

Liam raised his eyebrows upon hearing these words. His eyes were full of mockery.

Klaus handed over a phone to Liam and said, "This is the photo attached to the message."

There was even a photo?

Liam took the phone. And when he looked at it, his eyes instantly widened.

His body emanated an irresistible killing intent.

The originally warm atmosphere in the study suddenly became freezing. Klaus couldn't help trembling. He said excitedly, "Mr. Hoffman, you have a grudge against Ajax. Now that he was finally caught, we have solved a big trouble."

Liam remained silent. He felt something was not right.

Humans were strange creatures. Sometimes, people's instinct was very accurate.

In fact, Liam had relied on his instinct to survive on the battlefield many times.

So he knew that this matter was not as simple as it seemed.

Ajax had already lost all of his support. Even if he returned to the Seymour family, Sutton would never help him.

He thought for a while, and his eyes suddenly lit up.

No matter what the truth was, he had to go and find out in person.

Liam asked Klaus to leave, then walked to the pottery in the west of the

manor alone.

He specially asked Klaus to transform this place.

He and Julie usually made ceramic cups or bowls here, reliving their happy times in Ninverton.

After all, the night of Valentine's Day was a turning point in their relationship.

As Liam's fingers sank into the mud, the cold touch slowly calmed him down.

Time went by, and the ceramic bases were made one by one. Together with this, his thoughts also became much clearer.

Everything about the Seymour family flashed through his mind like a slideshow.

Suddenly, he had an understanding of what was going on.

A cold light flashed through Liam's eyes. He sneered and murmured to himself, "It seems that I have underestimated you."

At this moment, his phone rang.

When he saw it was Jaxtyn, he immediately answered it. Jaxtyn reported something on the other end of the line while he listened quietly. Then he smiled faintly and said, "Don't get rid of it. It's still useful."

In the evening of the next day, Jaxtyn came to the manor to deliver a human skin mask and a document.

Liam went through all the information in the document. He had a photographic memory, so he quickly memorized everything.

Then he put on the mask and clothes and adjusted his posture slightly. Instantly, he became the general manager of Emperor Pub.

Since Sutton ordered him, the general manager of Emperor Pub came to warn the owner of Hollywood Pub. However, he was caught by Jaxtyn.

Liam used this opportunity. With the help of the human skin mask, he took over the general manager's identity and sneaked into the Seymour family's house to find out what was going on.

Chapter 330 I Haven't Fed The Dogs

In the Seymour family's villa, Liam stood at the door and said anxiously, "Get out of the way. I need to see Mr. Sutton Seymour, the head of the Seymour family. Damn it! Those useless idiots in Hollywood Pub didn't show me any respect at all."

But the security guards at the door just stared at him. They didn't step back to let him pass.

Liam frowned and snapped, "What is wrong with you? Don't you know me? Can you bear the consequences of delaying the business of Emperor Pub?"

The security guards looked at each other and smiled sinisterly. They said coldly, "Okay, go in!"

Liam snorted coldly and strode into the villa without saying a word.

While walking along the long corridor, he frowned and muttered to himself, "Every man here is strong and with calluses between their thumbs and the index fingers. They all have murderous look in their eyes. Not only the security guards at the gate but even the servants are all mercenaries. Who in the Seymour family has such great power to do it?"

When Liam arrived in the living room, his eyes widened when he saw Sutton.

Sutton wore a thick dog chain around his neck, tied to a pillar next to him. There was also a dog bowl on the floor.

When he saw Liam coming, he rushed forward regardless of the dog chain around his neck and shouted, "Help me! Help me out!"

Liam immediately collapsed to the floor, pretending to be scared and in a daze. He said in a panic, "Mr. Seymour, what's going on?"

At this moment, a burly Ruwi man strode downstairs, holding leashes of five Dobermans in his hands.

The five dogs had blood-red eyes, and their stinky saliva dripped down the expensive carpet. They looked extremely ferocious.

When Sutton saw the man, he collapsed to the floor in fear and curled up behind the pillar, not daring to make a sound.

The Ruwi man pulled the leashes of the five mad dogs that were about to run away. Then he grinned hideously.

"My name is Wild Wolf, the future head of the Seymour family. But for now, this can't be known by others. So you arrived at an extremely inconvenient time. Unfortunately, you have to die."

Liam pretended to be in a panic. He got up in a hurry, pointed at the man, and stammered, "You... Who are you? Why are you here in the Seymour family's villa? Let me remind you. This family has assets worth more than ten billion dollars. You can be killed by them easily. If you are smart enough, let go of the head of the Seymour family and leave this place right away."

Wild Wolf sneered and said teasingly, "Really? This family has assets worth more than ten billion dollars? Oh, I'm so scared. But unfortunately, you're a dead man. So you don't need to know too much."

He looked at Sutton behind the pillar and shouted angrily, "Come out and tell him that I am the head of the Seymour family, and you are a fucking dog I raise."

As soon as he said this, Sutton ran out, knelt on the floor, and kowtowed continuously. "Yes! Yes! You are my master."

Sutton turned his head, stared at Liam resentfully, and ordered, "Hurry! Get down on your knees and greet our master."

Wild Wolf burst into laughter. Those words full of servility were music to his ears.

He walked to Sutton's side, touched his head, and spat out a mouthful of thick sputum. He grinned hideously and ordered, "Lick it clean!"

Sutton looked at the sputum in a daze, but he couldn't lower his head. "Damn! It seems that I haven't tamed you well." Wild Wolf cursed and was about to loosen his grip on the leashes.

Suddenly, the five mad dogs howled and were about to pounce on Sutton.

Their stinky breath sprayed directly on his face.

"I will lick it! Please don't kill me! Please..." Sutton was so frightened that he trembled all over. He endured the wave of nausea in him, lowered his head, and approached the thick sputum on the floor.

Wild Wolf showed a satisfied and ferocious smile. He turned to Liam and snapped, "Ha-ha! I haven't fed the dogs today. You are just right for them."

After saying this, he pointed the five mad dogs at Liam and released them directly.

The five Dobermans had no resistance at all. They opened their big mouths full of fangs, rushed out ferociously, and bit Liam.

The servants beside them all laughed mockingly, thinking that Liam was already a dead man.

Sutton held his head tightly with his hands, trembling all over. He was on the verge of breaking down.

"Ha-ha! Bite him to death. Bite this son of bitch to death."

For a moment, Wild Wolf's cruel laughter echoed in the living room.

However, what happened the next second stunned everyone.

Then screams resounded through the living room.

But the screams did not come from any person. Instead, they came from the dogs.

Chapter 331 Horrifying Fighting Skills

Everyone in the living room was in disbelief. Right in front of their eyes, all five fierce Dobermans were thrown in the air and fell to the floor upside down.

There was no trace of ferocity in them anymore. They lay on the floor with their heads down, and their ferocious barking turned into moaning. It was as if they were begging for mercy.

Sutton raised his head quietly. And he was so stunned by the scene in front of him that he froze for a long time.

The general manager of Emperor Pub was so skilled in fighting. How could it be?

Wild Wolf, standing at the side, did not show any signs of fear at all. He only felt that his dignity was insulted, so he broke out into curses. "Damn! You stupid dogs! I have fed you so much medicine. How can you be so useless?"

Then he turned to the servants and waved his hand.

"What are you looking at? Kill this motherfucker now!"

Upon hearing this, the maid who led Liam in just now took out a Kukri from the cabinet, swung it in the air, and slashed it at Liam's head.

But Liam dodged it. He stepped back, took out a sharp dagger from his sleeve, and cut the maid's throat open.

The maid's eyes widened. She felt pain in her throat, so she reached out and touched it, only to feel something sticky.

Blood instantly spurted out from her neck like a fountain.

The mercenaries of Black Spider were all equipped with communication devices, and this woman was one of them.

So Wild Wolf's roar was heard from the woman's communication device and immediately alerted the other mercenaries in the villa.

For a moment, all the servants in the villa removed their disguises. They rushed in and surrounded the living room as mercenaries.

Liam just glanced at them from the corner of his eye and immediately

found there were hundreds of them.

Wild Wolf didn't care about the death of his subordinate at all. He looked at Liam cautiously and said, "The general manager of Emperor Pub is just an ordinary person. He can't be so good at fighting. Who the fuck are you?"

Liam shook off the blood on his dagger and sneered, "Dead people don't need to know too much."

Wild Wolf's expression suddenly became ferocious. He cursed loudly, "Fuck you, bastard! You even dare to act arrogant in front of me! Cut off his limbs before I interrogate him."

Immediately afterward, hundreds of people swarmed toward Liam.

Liam used his foot to hook the Kukri and lifted it.

The Kukri on the floor flew high and landed on his left hand accurately. He held the dagger and the Kukri in each hand and fought his opponents head-on. He was like a tiger in a flock of sheep, and each of his attacks was lethal.

He killed ten people in five seconds by cutting their throats.

The rest of the mercenaries felt nothing but great fear. They instinctively retreated, looking at Liam in horror.

They only had one opponent, but he was obviously too much stronger than them.

If they fought with Liam head-on, they were committing suicide.

They were mercenaries, and they were not idiots.

As Wild Wolf watched this scene at the side, blue veins stood out on his forehead.

If they used guns in this villa district, they would easily attract other people's attention. If that happened, they would have to give up such a convenient base.

But at this moment, the cold weapons were apparently not enough to deal with Liam.

So Wild Wolf had no choice but to take out his pistol and aim it at Liam. He said ferociously, "Little bastard! You are indeed good at fighting. But no matter how good you are, you can't defeat a pistol. Fuck you! Get

down on your knees, or I'll blow your head away!"

When the mercenaries saw that their leader had taken out his pistol, they immediately became bold again. They all smiled cruelly and stared at Liam playfully.

No matter how strong a person was, his strength was not enough to defeat a gun.

Liam also smiled playfully, crooked his finger, and said calmly, "Shoot." "Go to hell!" Wild Wolf screamed. He had never been provoked like this, so he instantly pulled the trigger and fired continuously.

The sound of gunshots resounded through the entire villa.

The noise was so loud that it hurt people's ears.

However, at this moment, Liam was already extremely focused.

He dodged the bullets coming towards him while attacking continuously.

The weapons in his hands slashed the necks of the mercenaries. ❄

Once again, he killed a few people in a few seconds.

But suddenly, a violent roar sounded in the living room.

Then there was a loud bang.

A silver bullet from a sniper gun flew toward Liam from the dark.

Wild Wolf recognized the sound, and he smiled sinisterly. He looked at Liam as if he was looking at a dead person.

The shots he made just now were only to attract Liam's attention.

The real killing move was the shot from the sniper rifle in the dark.

But what happened the next second shocked everyone again.

Liam didn't even look. He just raised the Kukri in his hand and slashed in the direction of the sound.

The bullet hit the Kukri.

The external force made the bullet shift its direction, pass by Wild Wolf's scalp, and shoot through the wall behind him.

This scene made Sutton's mouth gape open wide. He was rendered speechless.

He couldn't believe that the man in front of him was the submissive general manager just now.

This man was not an ordinary person. He was superhuman.

However, Wild Wolf was not afraid of the bullet that passed above his head. Instead, he looked surprised and roared angrily, "Ha-ha! Now I know who you are. You are King! How dare you throw yourself into the trap! You are overestimating yourself."

Then he looked at the mercenaries and added, "Guys, a reward of one hundred million dollars for his head. Do every means to keep him here. He can't get away."

Such an enormous amount stimulated everyone. They instantly rushed to Liam, shouting, "Kill him!"

"I'll kill him! The one hundred million dollars is mine!"

"Fuck off! Don't get in my way!"

They all forgot their fears. All they had in mind was money as they rushed towards Liam.

This was not surprising anymore. After all, they became mercenaries just for money.

If they were lucky enough, they could slash Liam's throat once. Then they would no longer have to live such a dangerous life.

Wild Wolf grinned complacently, turned around, and ran out of the villa. As soon as he reached outside, he decisively pressed the button in his hand without looking back.

The huge explosion shook off the villa district.

Then orange flames were like a giant dragon that instantly devoured the entire villa.

Chapter 332 Someone Is Behind You

The red and yellow flames spurted out of the villa and soared into the sky. Everyone in the villa was not even given a chance to scream. They all died on the spot.

Wild Wolf feared that Liam would come out and kill him directly, so he pressed the button before he ran away from the villa.

The impact of the explosion was so strong that even he was thrown away and fell heavily to the ground.

Wild Wolf got up awkwardly, turned around, and watched the flaming villa happily. He ignored the burning pain in his back and laughed wildly.

"Ha-ha! So what if you are King of the Dark Night Organization who destroyed the Seymour family single-handedly? You still can't defeat me. You are dead trash now, bastard!"

He decisively took out his phone and made a video call to Scarlett. "Miss Duncan, King is dead. I blasted the Seymour family's villa."

At this moment, Scarlett and Ajax were in an underground place in Salem.

When Ajax heard that King was dead, he burst into laughter until tears began to well up in his eyes.

"Ha-ha! Liam, you bastard. You are finally dead. But it's a pity that you won't get a chance to see me riding Julie and fucking her to death."

Scarlett, on the other hand, frowned slightly and glanced at Ajax disgustedly. She shook her head and said coldly, "It seems that King is just so-so. He is a good-for-nothing bastard."

Wild Wolf, on the other end of the video call, glanced at Scarlett and licked his lips greedily.

Her peerless face and sexy figure, coupled with her lonely and cold temperament that no one could seem to assault, made him obsessed with her.

He had long wanted to have sex with her.

Wild Wolf swallowed his saliva hard and said obscenely, "Since I have killed King and avenged your brother's death, how should you repay me?"

When Scarlett saw the look on Wild Wolf's face, she felt so disgusted that she wanted to vomit.

Suddenly, she seemed to see something, and her pupils contracted. She shouted, "Watch out! Someone is behind you."

"The bomb blasted everyone into pieces. Even if someone is behind me, it can only be a ghost." Wild Wolf only thought Scarlett said such words because she was too nervous. He turned his head disdainfully and looked back.

However, his disdain turned into shock when he was greeted by a sharp and shiny Kukri.

Wild Wolf's eyes widened in disbelief.

He looked at the Kukri on his neck in disbelief, and his strong body fell back heavily.

He died with his eyes still wide open.

Scarlett and Ajax were also shocked by what they saw. They were about to ask about the situation when the Kukri suddenly chopped down from the other end of the screen.

A loud noise followed.

Then some words appeared on the screen, showing that the call was disconnected.

On the screen, Wild Wolf's head tilted, and his eyes widened. It was as if he was staring at Scarlett and Ajax on the other end of the video call.

Meanwhile, Liam was on the lawn outside the Seymour family's villa.

He dragged Sutton as if he was dragging a dog.

He threw Sutton to the ground casually and breathed a sigh of relief.

Fortunately, his vigilance was trained well on the battlefield. As soon as he found Wild Wolf escaped, he immediately jumped out of the window. If he was a little late, he would have been blasted into pieces.

Liam squatted down, patted Sutton's face hard, and snapped, "Wake up!"

Sutton was immediately awakened and struggled madly. He kept shouting, "Don't kill me! Don't kill me!"

When he clearly saw that it was Liam squatting beside him, he hurriedly wrapped his arms around Liam's thigh and begged, "Sir, I'm sorry. I know I didn't treat you well before. Our Seymour family has money. If you agree to be my bodyguard, I'll give you one million dollars. No, two million dollars a year."

Liam sneered coldly, grabbed Sutton's chin with one hand, and slowly took off his human skin mask, revealing his true face.

Sutton stared at the horrifying scene with his eyes wide open. He said in horror, "You... You are not the general manager. You are Liam! Aren't you that loser abandoned by the Hoffman family? What are you doing here?"

But suddenly, something flashed in his mind. He knelt down in front of Liam and begged for mercy.

"Mr. Hoffman, I'm sorry. No, you're not a loser. I'm the loser. Please don't kill me."

Liam sneered and questioned coldly, "Weren't you very arrogant? According to you, I won't be able to run my Hollywood Pub and open its branches in Salem if I don't sell it to the Seymour family, right?"

These words made Sutton shiver in fear.

All of a sudden, he reached out and slapped himself hard several times. Then he cried and begged, "Mr. Hoffman, I'm wrong. I'm wrong. Please forgive me. I will be your slave from now on."

Liam stood up, wiped his hands on Sutton's clothes, and said, "Tell me Ajax's whereabouts."

Chapter 333 Mechanical Transformation

Sutton shook his head, and he trembled all over. He stared blankly at Liam and said, "I... I don't know..."

Liam's face turned cold at once. He said harshly, "Then how did you get the photo? If you don't want to die, tell me the truth."

When Sutton heard this, he kowtowed a few more times and begged, "Mr. Hoffman, I don't know. I really don't know. All I know is a woman took him away."

Liam frowned upon hearing Sutton's last sentence.

He had no idea who that woman could be. Although he was upset, there was nothing he could do to Sutton.

At present, he needed someone who could control the Seymour family and lure Ajax into coming out for him.

Thinking of this, Liam took out his phone and called Klaus.

"Come to the Seymour family's villa and take Sutton away. Let him sign the contract to sell the chain of bars owned by the Seymour family to Kingland Group openly. And then transform them into Hollywood Pubs."

Sutton heard everything, and he couldn't help shivering on the ground.

There was no doubt that the Seymour family was doomed this time.

Liam said he would sell the bars to Kingland Group. But he knew he wouldn't dare to accept money from Liam.

If this was in the past, Sutton would never do what Liam wanted, even if he would be killed.

But now, after experiencing the torture from Ajax and the Black Spider, and almost being blown up just now, he realized his life was the most important thing to him. All he wanted was to live.

Liam noticed that there was no response from Sutton. He looked at Sutton condescendingly with cold eyes full of killing intent. "I hope you cooperate with us obediently and sign the contract in public to lure Ajax out. Is it okay?"

Sutton felt Liam's cold and piercing gaze. He also felt the killing intent

Liam exuded. His whole body trembled violently. He nodded repeatedly, saying, "Of course! Of course!"

On the day of the signing ceremony, reporters gathered at the entrance of Emperor Pub's headquarters.

Of course, Sutton was there. He looked very calm in his suit and leather shoes.

The reporters aimed the cameras in their hands at Sutton, taking photos and videos of him. And their microphones almost poked him in the face.

"Mr. Seymour, why did you sell the chain of bars of the Seymour family to Kingland Group at a very low price?"

"Mr. Seymour, do you know that what you have done is equivalent to selling most of the Seymour family's assets?"

"I heard that Kingland Group has connections with several gangs. Could it be that Kingland Group coerced you?"

Sutton's eyelids twitched when he heard this question. He slapped the last reporter who asked him.

Then he roared loudly, "Damn it! What does it have to do with you? I can sell my properties as I like. For me, it's only a fair deal. Do you understand?"

For a moment, the reporters retreated a little, afraid of being implicated. They had already heard that all the members of the Seymour family were manic, but they didn't believe it.

Now that they had witnessed what Sutton did, they thought it seemed true.

While everyone was discussing who would be Kingland Group's representative to sign the contract, a Mercedes-Benz pulled over at the door of the pub.

Klaus got out of the driver's seat and opened the back seat door respectfully.

Then a man in a windbreaker, smoking a cigar, got out of the car.

It was none other than Aikin.

Aikin was the leader of the biggest gang in Salem. Now that he appeared again, he immediately attracted the reporters' attention. They took

photos and videos of him crazily.

Many people around started discussing.

"Has Aikin returned to Salem? Does it mean Just Gang is also back?"

"But how did he become Kingland Group's spokesperson?"

"Kingland Group made such a surprising move directly. Isn't it obvious that it is so ambitious?"

What happened next was just going through the formalities.

Sutton and Aikin shook hands and signed the contract at once.

Everything was broadcasted by the major channels in Salem.

In an underground place in Salem, Ajax was listening to the news on TV.

As soon as he heard what the reporter said, he gritted his teeth so hard that his mouth bled.

His ferocious expression, coupled with his devil-like scarred face, was so terrifying that even the mercenaries of Black Spider beside him felt a little scared.

Ajax roared in a hoarse voice, "Liam, how dare you! The entire Seymour family was destroyed by you alone. I swear, I will kill you! I will kill your entire family!"

At this moment, Scarlett came over from the side. She approached Ajax, raised her hand, and slapped him hard on the face. She said coldly, "You're a loser. You can't take revenge."

When Ajax heard this, the suppressed anger in his heart turned into a strong sense of powerlessness.

Just a month ago, he was a loafer from a rich family. But now, he was no different from a stray dog.

Ajax held his head and suddenly burst into tears. "Why? Why am I a loser? Why don't I have the strength? I want to take revenge. I want Liam to die a miserable death."

Looking at Ajax, Scarlett sneered and said expressionlessly, "I can give you a chance to take revenge."

These words made Ajax feel like he had found hope. He hurriedly crawled to Scarlett's feet and begged, "Yes, I want to take revenge. Please, I want to take revenge."

Scarlett looked at him condescendingly and said coldly, "This chance is very dangerous and can be fatal. But if you can survive, you won't only kill Liam, but you will also be joining the Black Spider. However, the Seymour family's properties will become the Black Spider's properties in the future."

"Okay, no problem. I will do what it takes." Ajax didn't think much. He agreed without hesitation.

Now, no amount of money mattered to him anymore.

At this moment, he had become ferocious after being devoured by hatred. And he only had one goal in mind.

This goal was to drag Liam to the bottom of hell.

Seeing the resentment in Ajax's eyes, Scarlett took out her phone and dialed a mysterious number. "Doc, we have a new experimental subject. He definitely meets the requirements."

On the other end of the line, an old voice said, "Scarlett, the mechanical transformation technology is still incomplete. Even if it can be carried out, the person needs the will far stronger than ordinary people's to survive the surgery."

"I know," Scarlett said coldly.

The old man added, "You should know that more than one thousand people died in this experiment. But the success rate is still zero."

Scarlett sneered coldly and said firmly, "Revenge, especially deep hatred, is always the best motivation. Though others didn't make it, this one can."

Chapter 334 The Meeting In The Lambert Family

Kingland Group entered the market of Salem and purchased the chain of bars owned by the Seymour family.

The news quickly spread through the entire city of Salem like wildfire. In the Lambert family's villa, all the members gathered together, discussing the current news about Kingland Group.

Holding a walking stick in her hand, Vera looked at everyone with a stern face. Then she said in a low voice, "Liam had a feud with the Seymour family. Then King appeared and destroyed the Seymour family. The Seymour family was forced to give most of their properties to Kingland Group for little money after Kingland Group entered the market of Salem. So Liam must have something to do with that man they call King."

Yolanda was worried. She was lost in thought for a while. Then she said with a frown, "Maybe, Liam is King."

The members of the Lambert family felt like these words were lightning that struck them. They were extremely depressed.

Vera sighed bitterly, "The Seymour family has been destroyed by King. The Riley family also offended Liam, so the Riley family will likely be the next unlucky one."

"No, that's impossible!" Andrew was filled with resentment when he heard Liam's name. He said disdainfully, "Before, Liam fought against hundreds of people on his own, and his whole body was covered with blood. He couldn't hold a candle to the rumored King at all. What's more, if he can really destroy a family with assets worth more than ten billion dollars on his own, he has no reason to be afraid of the Riley family, right? He should have destroyed the Riley family first. Besides, if Liam were King, would the Hoffman family have expelled him? Someone like King is undoubtedly an asset."

Everyone thought Andrew's words were reasonable. But Yolanda

suddenly sighed and said helplessly, "When did Liam fear the Riley family?"

The people around her had already calmed down a bit. But when they heard this, they felt distressed again.

In the past, no matter what Liam's identity and status were, he always won against Tyler.

Vera said in a melancholic voice, "He didn't destroy the Riley family not because he is afraid of them but because he doesn't take them seriously at all."

Everyone in the Lambert family was so shocked that their eyes widened. Vera might be right.

"Old man, you are so stupid!" Vera thumped her walking stick on the floor several times and cursed angrily. "You didn't tell us that Liam was the successor of the Hoffman family. You also didn't give us a hint that he was King. The Lambert family has fallen to this point because of it."

After saying this, she felt everything around her turn black. She staggered a few times and was about to fall backward. ①

Yolanda hurriedly supported Vera and persuaded her, "Grandma, don't worry. Whether Liam is King or not, we'll try to fix our relationship with him first. At least, we shouldn't let ourselves be at the point of no turning back."

Vera panted heavily and said weakly, "But... But I'm afraid it will offend Tyler."

Everyone frowned again.

After all, the Lambert family still relied on the Riley family to live a good life.

Once they offended Tyler, even if Liam was King, he probably would not help the Lambert family.

Everyone was silent for a while.

Vera thought for a long time before she thumped her walking stick heavily again and said in a deep voice, "The Seymour family will hold a celebration party in three days. I'm telling you, it will certainly not go smoothly. Maybe the truth will come out at that time. Then the Lambert

family will make a decision by then."

This kind of conversation did not only happen in the Lambert family but also in other families in Salem.

Even in the Riley family's villa, everyone was discussing this matter.

Cartwright sat on the central seat with a darkened face. He snapped, "We must find out the relationship between Liam and King. Otherwise, the Riley family will always have sleepless nights worrying."

On the contrary, Tyler didn't care about it at all. He even said disdainfully, "Dad, what are you afraid of?"

I don't believe that Liam is King. And if they really had something to do with each other, how could Liam have let Yolanda, the woman he loved the most, cheat on him?"

But Cartwright wasn't swayed by Tyler's words. Instead, his frown deepened, and he muttered, "Anyway, everything will be clearer at the celebration party three days later."

All the families in Salem waited for the celebration party of the Seymour family, which would be held three days later. And many of them had already taken the initiative to look for Liam.

However, at this moment, Liam, the core of this matter, was driving Julie back to the Fiber family's villa as if nothing had happened.

While in the car, Julie looked at Liam and asked, "Have my parents come back?"

Liam nodded and said, "I arranged for your mother to win a big prize and go on a trip for a while, so she and your father wouldn't worry. They arrived home a few days ago."

Chapter 335 The Big Shot

Julie grabbed the hem of Liam's clothes and asked worriedly, "Do they know about the bounty?"

Liam smiled faintly and patted the back of Julie's hand to comfort her. "In the underground world, news usually spreads very secretly. The bounty won't be posted publicly. Only the people involved know about it, and their men are only responsible for searching. So your parents won't know."

Julie breathed a sigh of relief upon hearing this. Her eyebrows gradually relaxed.

Although the bounty had been removed, her life was still temporarily blighted by it.

But now that she knew her parents were safe, she felt immensely relieved.

At this moment, Liam pulled over in front of the Fiber family's villa. They got out of the car and walked into the house. Then they saw Ulises and Yesenia sitting on the sofa in the living room.

Ulises' and Yesenia's faces had obviously caught the sun, and they had gained a lot of weight. One could tell at a glance that they had just come from a vacation.

"Dad... Mom..." Julie cried out softly with tears of joy in her eyes. She rushed to her parents.

Yesenia immediately stood up and held Julie in her arms. Then she touched her face and said excitedly, "My daughter, your face! Your wounds are healed."

Julie choked with sobs. She couldn't say a word, so she just kept nodding.

As Ulises watched this scene, the rims of his eyes also turned red.

During this period, the Fiber family really had a hard time.

Ulises patted Julie's back and comforted her, "You've just recovered from a serious injury, so don't cry. Our family will get better and better in the

future."

Julie held Ulises' hand and said between sobs, "Dad, please don't get a divorce, okay?"

When Yesenia heard this, she glanced at Ulises and snorted.

Ulises smiled awkwardly. He hurriedly promised, "Okay, I won't."

The trip Liam arranged for Ulises and Yesenia had helped a lot to fix their relationship. Naturally, there would be no divorce anymore.

Ulises then looked at Liam behind Julie, smiled, and said, "Come in. I'll cook for dinner."

Then he walked to the kitchen, still smiling.

When Yesenia saw this, the expression on her face changed. She turned to Julie and said, "Julie, I left in a hurry, and there is still some laundry on the second floor. Please help me with it."

"Okay. But don't make things difficult for Liam," Julie reminded Yesenia before running upstairs.

At this moment, only Yesenia and Liam were left in the living room.

Yesenia pulled Liam over with a gentle look on her face. Then she asked, like a concerned mother-in-law, "How are you feeling?"

Liam didn't expect Yesenia's attitude towards him to change so much. He couldn't help but feel happy. "Did you finally accept me?"

But the next moment, Yesenia changed the topic.

"Many things have happened to our family recently. The Cortez family sent someone to talk with me. My father is finally willing to accept Ulises and let us move back. That is to say, Julie will be a member of the Cortez family from now on."

Liam raised his eyebrows. He smiled faintly and asked, "So?"

Yesenia looked at him, sighed, and said, "You are indeed a good man, but you were abandoned by the Hoffman family. The status gap between you and Julie is too great. Since you are not equal in social status, I believe you are destined to be unhappy if you two are together. I can't let my daughter make the same mistake as I did, so I hope you take the initiative to leave her."

She wanted to separate Liam and Julie again.

Liam felt helpless. This time, he thought he didn't need to hide the truth from her anymore. "Actually, I'm still the heir of the Hoffman family. I was not kicked out by my family."

But as soon as he said this, Yesenia burst into laughter.

"I thought you were a good man. How can you lie like that so casually? The news that you were kicked out has spread all over Salem. Let me tell you, the Cortez family even specially invited us to the celebration party of the Seymour family. The top ten families in Salem will all be there to meet a big shot named King. I wonder if King is married or not and if he will take a fancy to Julie."

Liam was rendered speechless for a moment. If only Yesenia knew that his subordinates were behind this celebration party, and the top ten families would attend the celebration party to see him.

He sneered and said in a deep voice, "I'm King."

"What? You are King?" Yesenia's eyes widened. She sneered, "Liam, don't be ridiculous. If you are King, then I am King's mother. It's time for you to recognize the reality. I'm afraid you won't be able to attend such a big event all your life. This is the gap between you and us."

When Liam saw Yesenia's expression, he knew she wouldn't believe whatever he said. So it was useless to explain.

After a moment of silence, he advised, "Don't go to the celebration party. Haven't you heard that there are many forces involved in this party? It will be very dangerous."

Yesenia cast him a sidelong glance. The previous tenderness on her face disappeared, and it was replaced by mockery.

"Since you have low status, you have no right to attend that party. You are jealous of us, so you want to stop us from going, too, right? Humph! You are really a small fry."

Chapter 336 Big Profits

Liam manipulated the celebration party behind the scenes. Obviously, he wanted to hide his identity as King.

All the major families in Salem were already suspecting that he was King. Even the members of the Black Spider guessed he had something to do with King.

If he didn't hide his identity, it would cause endless trouble in the future. And the Fiber family would also fall into crisis again.

Whether it was for his original intention of training or for Julie, he had to get rid of the identity of King.

Three days later, a fierce battle would be inevitable. That was why Liam tried to persuade Yesenia not to attend the party. But his good intentions were met with her endless ridicule.

So he didn't want to explain anymore. He stood up and said indifferently, "Then I'll take my leave now."

Yesenia was burning with anger when she saw Liam's casual attitude. She shouted at his back, "No wonder you are a nobody. Stop dreaming about marrying my daughter."

But Liam just ignored her. He went out, got in his car, and drove away from the Fiber family's villa.

While driving, he took out his phone and called Theo. "What's with Julie's mother returning to the Cortez family?"

Theo replied respectfully, "Mr. Hoffman, your grandfather is a little dissatisfied with Julie's status, so I spoke for her to Mr. Cortez. I told him he has an excellent granddaughter who used to work in Kingland Group, owned by the Hoffman family. Of course, the Cortez family wants nothing more than to have some connections with the Hoffman family."

Liam agreed inwardly.

Because of her connection to the Hoffman family, the Cortez family wanted Julie back.

After all, doing such a thing would not cause the Cortez family any loss.

At the thought of this, he sneered coldly and thought that Yesenia was too stupid to think that her father cared about her and wanted her to return home.

After hanging up the phone, Liam glanced at the rearview mirror and sneered again.

He noticed that a car had been following him since he left the Fiber family's villa.

However, he didn't pay much attention to it. After all, he knew that in his current situation, it was normal for him to be monitored.

Actually, he could take advantage of this opportunity to deceive others.

Liam drove straight to the headquarters of Hollywood Pub in Salem.

Everyone there had been waiting for him for a long time.

As soon as they saw him, Aikin and others greeted him respectfully, "Hello, Mr. Hoffman."

Liam sat directly on the central seat, poured himself a glass of whiskey, and asked, "How is Hollywood Pub now?"

Aikin quickly stood up straight and replied proudly, "Since Hollywood Pub entered Salem, its profit has exceeded fifty million dollars. And as a bundled business, our Von Merri Hotel naturally attracts a lot of customers. At present, its business is flourishing and its profit has exceeded twenty million dollars."

Aikin deliberately stopped. He didn't talk about Funbuy yet.

Thus, Tyson and Klaus were both itching to cut in. They wished they could speak.

After all, Funbuy had already become popular not only in Salem but even in the whole world.

The profit was much more than the first two.

Liam glanced at Aikin, knowing that he still had something to say. He continued to ask, "What about Funbuy?"

Aikin smiled and said proudly, "Mr. Hoffman, Funbuy's scale now has completely surpassed Rileymart. Its profit is at least one hundred million dollars per month."

One hundred million dollars?

And it was every month?

Klaus' and Tyson's eyes widened when they heard this astonishing amount.

They knew that Funbuy had generated a large profit. But they didn't expect it would be this much.

Liam, on the other hand, remained calm despite hearing such a shocking amount.

He drank up the whiskey in his hand, abruptly stood up, and said, "It's time to restore my status."

Chapter 337 Did Liam Rely On Aikin

Everyone turned their heads and looked at Liam excitedly.

They had been building their strength secretly for so long, and they had to keep a low profile all the time.

Finally, the day they could come out had arrived.

Liam looked at Aikin, smiled brightly, and said, "A month from now, the headquarters of Kingland Group will be completed. By then, I will reveal my identity and propose to Julie. You are responsible for the arrangement."

"Yes, Mr. Hoffman." Everyone was so happy to hear the good news that they wanted to celebrate.

After everyone left, Liam stood in front of the floor-to-ceiling window and quickly sorted out all the information in his mind.

The two gangs, Axe Gang and Just Gang were united and the new gang became the number one gang in Salem. It was definitely stronger than when they were still individual gangs.

Under his instruction, this new gang was named Kingland Security, which boosted Kingland Group's morale. This was also the first step for Kingland Group to enter Salem.

Liam murmured to himself, "At present, the other families do not dare to have anything to do with Kingland Security because of the presence of the Evans family and the Riley family and the uncertainty of the situation. But once my identity is revealed and I separate myself from King, the business of Kingland Security will definitely prosper. By that time, all the security guards of the top ten families in Salem will be my people. I will be invincible."

The news that Liam went to see Aikin spread throughout Salem like wildfire.

Those who made their own investigation immediately found out that Aikin had once said Liam had saved his life in Ninverton.

Aikin had done business with all the powerful families in Salem, so they

knew he was a loyal and grateful man.

Everyone immediately understood the situation.

No wonder Liam was able to order Tyson before. It turned out the person behind him was Aikin.

Now it also made sense to them why the two gangs had combined.

Aikin might have some connections with Kingland Group.

So the real boss had always been Aikin and not Liam.

With this realization, all the rich and powerful people in Salem became less afraid of Liam.

Even the statement that Liam was King was losing its footing.

In the Riley family's villa, Tyler also saw the news on the phone. He was in a good mood. The things he learned from the news made him almost burst into laughter.

When he saw Cartwright hung up the phone, he said excitedly, "Dad, I told you. Liam is not King."

Cartwright nodded. Then he sent a photo to Tyler.

Tyler clicked it open. When he saw it, he licked his lips and said, "Why does Julie look more beautiful after being disfigured?"

After saying this, he zoomed in on the photo and touched every detail with his fingers. The lust in his eyes was undisguised.

Cartwright sneered. "Do you like her?"

Tyler grinned and nodded heavily. Then he said excitedly, "Of course! I even want to fuck her in my dreams."

"Julie has returned to the Cortez family, so you two are a good match now. Our family's power has been greatly reduced. It's best if we can form a marriage alliance with the Cortez family," Cartwright said in a low voice.

Tyler's eyes lit up in excitement. "Okay, that's great! Ha-ha! I'll marry the two women together."

At this moment, everything about Liam had been found out.

And someone could prove that everything he had was because of Aikin's support.

The Riley family was not afraid of Aikin at all. In their eyes, he was just a nobody.

At this moment, sleeping with Julie and cuckolding Liam were the only things Tyler had in mind.

He must admit that he always dreamed of having sex with Julie. He had wet dreams every night.

Tyler immediately called Andrew over and said excitedly, "Prepare a betrothal gift for me and send it to the Fiber family. I want to marry two women at the same time."

Andrew, standing at the side, was dumbfounded for a while. Then he stammered, "You... Do you mean Julie and Yolanda?"

Tyler licked his lips. His mind was full of the scenes where he was having sex with two women at the same time.

He looked at Andrew and nodded. "Remember to comfort Yolanda and make her obedient."

Chapter 338 Marrying Two Women At The Same Time

Andrew's eyes widened in shock. "But is... Isn't it illegal?"

Tyler smiled disdainfully, looked him up and down, and said impatiently, "I will only get one of my marriages registered."

A bad feeling rose in Andrew's heart. He asked cautiously, "Then who will you marry legally?"

Tyler smacked his lips and said disdainfully, "Julie is now a member of a family with assets worth ten billion dollars. If I don't give her a proper identity, will the Cortez family allow it to happen? That's why I want you to comfort Yolanda. Don't worry. After this matter is done, I will arrange a position with a million-dollar annual salary for you. After all, you are my wife's cousin."

Annual salary of one million dollars?

As soon as Andrew heard this, he became ecstatic. He immediately forgot everything about etiquette, righteousness, and shame.

The next moment, he seemed to think of something. He restrained his smile and said worriedly, "But Julie is Liam's woman, and everyone says he is King. I'm afraid..."

But Tyler only sneered and said disdainfully, "The Just Gang and Axe Gang have already combined. I don't know what method Aikin used to take over Axe Gang. But apparently, his retreat out of Salem was just a pretense. And Tyson is only obedient to Liam because Aikin is the person behind Liam. These things have nothing to do with King or the Hoffman family." ①

Andrew suddenly had an understanding of things. "Oh, I see."

At this moment, he didn't care anymore if Yolanda and Tyler would get married legally or not.

After all, what mattered the most was his own interests.

After his conversation with Tyler, Andrew rushed back to the Lambert family's villa and told them the news about Aikin backing up Liam.

As soon as the members of the Lambert family heard this, they looked at each other, all dumbfounded.

Andrew gritted his teeth and said indignantly, "Damn that bastard Liam! He deceived all of us. I knew it! How can he be King? He is just a dog with a different master."

For a moment, everyone in the Lambert family began to curse Liam.

"That bastard! He can only be someone's dog for the rest of his life."

"That loser."

"Fortunately, I didn't beg Liam for mercy. Otherwise, I will feel disgusted and regret it for the rest of my life."

Andrew looked at everyone. He hesitated for a moment before he said, "There is one more thing..."

Vera frowned, thumped her walking stick, and said, "If you have anything to say, just say it. Be a man!"

Andrew coughed twice to ease his embarrassment. He looked at Yolanda and said slowly, "Tyler wants to marry two women at the same time."

Everyone's eyes opened wide in shock.

They all turned their heads and fixed their gazes on Yolanda.

Yolanda slumped in her seat and held the chair tightly. Her face turned pale.

Suddenly, she felt a giant boulder pressing her chest. She almost fainted.

When Vera saw Yolanda like this, she immediately held Yolanda's arm and comforted her, "Don't be so shocked. In ancient times, all emperors had many concubines. But there was always only one empress. So you only need to work hard to be the legal wife. Then others will respect you. Yolanda, our Lambert family depends entirely on you now. You are our only hope."

Vera didn't say anything negative about Tyler. Instead, she kept persuading Yolanda.

Yolanda leaned against the chair, stared at Andrew, and questioned, "Who's the other woman he wants to marry?"

Andrew grinned. "Julie..."

As soon as this name rang out in Yolanda's ears, she totally passed out.

At this moment, Liam was relaxing at home when he suddenly received a phone call.

He frowned when he saw it was an unfamiliar number. But he still answered it.

Then Tyler's arrogant voice came through from the other end of the line. "Liam, I really want to thank you. Without you, how can I discover these two peerless beauties? And how can I cuckold you twice? Ha-ha!"

Liam was stunned at first. But then, he snapped, "Are you crazy?"

Tyler said proudly, "Ha-ha! You'll know what I mean when you see the news on the Internet later."

After saying this, he hung up the phone without giving Liam a chance to retort.

A bad feeling surged in Liam's heart. He browsed the Internet.

Then he saw the trending news that had surely attracted the attention of all the people in Salem.

Chapter 339 The Wedding Hasn't Been Held Yet

It was on all the social media handles, and on all tongues. The Riley and the Cortez families would be united by marriage.

Tyler was going to marry both Julie and Yolanda at the same time.

While this news was going wild, another soon popped up.

Everyone was talking about bigamy.

Liam clicked on the link and saw an interview of Tyler.

Tyler was standing smugly in front of reporters with a smile on his face.

"Believe me, I have no choice. I have too much love to give, and I happen to love two different women with the same intensity. I can't bear to be married to one without the other."

Liam scrolled down and read the comments. They were all cursing Tyler and asking him to stop this madness. Most of them however, were discussing Liam.

That much was expected. Both ladies once had something to do with Liam.

One of the women was his ex-wife, and the other was his current girlfriend.

Liam soon became a topic of derision too. He had been cheated on two times by the two women he had in his life.

Liam held his phone so tightly in his grip that his knuckles turned white. If he had Tyler in front of him right now, he would kill the hateful man with his bare hands.

As if on cue, his phone rang. "Hahaha!" Tyler's voice came through the phone as soon as he picked. "How do you feel now that I've had two of your ladies?"

Liam clenched his jaws and said through gritted teeth, "Don't be so smug, you bastard! The wedding hasn't been held yet."

Tyler chuckled casually and continued, "What's wrong, Liam? I hope

you're not planning to show up and create a mess at the wedding. Don't think I'll be scared just because you are good at fighting. I've spent three hundred million just to be taken under King's wing. Maybe you don't know him, but King is a hundred times stronger than you. So, if you dare to pull any stunts, you won't survive like the last times."

Liam frowned for a second, then almost laughed. He couldn't remember taking Tyler on as a disciple.

He scoffed, then hung up. Talking to Tyler wouldn't help him in any way.

"Julie is going to marry Tyler?" he muttered to himself. "What the hell is going on?"

Liam was always very calm in such situations. But now that Julie was involved in it, he just couldn't stay calm. It was above him.

He got into his car and headed straight for the Fiber family's house.

He kept ringing Julie's phone on the way, but she never picked up.

The ominous feeling in Liam's heart became stronger.

He hit the steering wheel and grunted out, "Yesenia Cortez, being Julie's mother doesn't give you the right to do whatever you want with her. Trust me, you're going to regret this!"

Not long after, Liam stopped in front of the Fiber family's villa and got out.

Julie's mother, Yesenia was directing a group of people who were moving furniture and luggage out.

She turned to look at the car and sneered when she saw Liam. She crossed her arms across her chest and said mockingly, "My daughter is going to get married. You have no right to be here. Do you want to ruin her reputation? Get out of here!"

Liam's eyes were bloodshot with rage as he fought to keep his voice down and not explode. "You're lying. Let me see her."

Yesenia gulped nervously and flicked her hand at him. "Julie doesn't want to see you. It's rude to insist. Just leave, will you?"

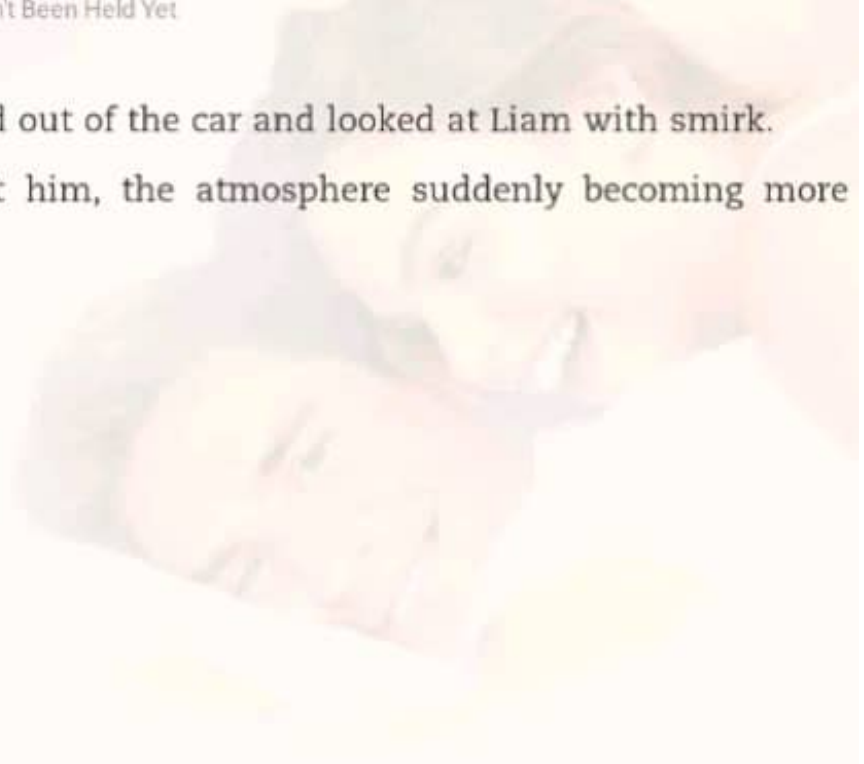
A luxury car suddenly stopped at the gate, just by Liam's car.

Andrew, the driver, got out and opened the door for the person in the

backseat of the car.

Slowly, Tyler stepped out of the car and looked at Liam with smirk.

Liam stared back at him, the atmosphere suddenly becoming more intense.



Chapter 340 Don't You Ever Call Her That Way Again

Yesenia rushed to Tyler with admiration in her eyes.

"Mr. Riley, it's so nice seeing you here. I was just saying that you and Julie are a perfect match."

Then, she glanced at Liam and said with disdain, "Thankfully, you are not like some people who think they have made it in this life and want to place their hands where they obviously can't reach."

Andrew, who would never let go of the opportunity to belittle Liam joined in.

"You'd better kneel down and beg Mr. Riley for mercy. You should even slap yourself. If not, at the marriage celebration in three days, you will regret not doing it. Mr. Riley is now a disciple of King of the Dark Night Organization."

Liam just looked at the three people mocking him with cold eyes.

As the silence dragged on, things seemed to become more tense.

Yesenia sighed, suddenly feeling sorry for Liam. "Liam," she called softly. "You should just let go instead of offending the Riley family. It won't bode well for you. Forget about Julie. Just kneel down and beg for mercy."

Tyler smiled mockingly and added, "No, you don't have to do that. If we're being fair, I have to thank you for taking care of Julie. But I'm here now, and I will take care of her for the rest of my life."

The men that were moving things couldn't help but overhear the four people talking not far away from them.

"Is that the man that was cheated on by his two women?"

"Look at him. He is a handsome man. It's obvious that he is a toy boy. He must surely depend on his women to take care of him even."

"If I were him, I wouldn't be able to show my face anywhere in Salem."

After all these, Liam just couldn't keep his anger in anymore.

He slowly walked and stood in front of Tyler. "Looks like you're looking

"Liam, don't be stupid! Do you really want to hit him right now?" Yesenia scolded in a hushed tone. "If you hurt my son-in-law, you won't get away with it. Mark my words."

Andrew huffed and added, "Get down on your knees or you won't like the hell we'll make for you."

Liam couldn't believe it. Did Yesenia just call Tyler son-in-law?

"Shut up!" he finally lost his cool and shouted.

A chill ran through the other three, and shut them up.

Tyler wasn't immune to this. He also seemed to be scared. So he played the victim card and said, "Listen, I know you love Julie, but between the both of us, I am more worthy of her than you are. Don't be angry and just let me do this."

Liam squinted his eyes. It was obvious that Tyler was trying to force Liam to make a move by throwing nasty words at him.

On instinct, he swept his gaze around and saw light reflected by a camera in the distance. Of course! Tyler wanted the paparazzi to film whatever Liam was going to do, and use it to destroy him.

Liam shook his head, deciding not to address it. Instead, he looked at Yesenia and asked again, "I want to see Julie. Now, where is she?"

Yesenia frowned. She wasn't happy that he was insisting. Luckily, she had a back-up plan for if this happened.

With a sad sigh, she took out a letter from her pocket and said, "Julie wrote this letter for you. I didn't want to hurt you, so I kept it. But... I have no right holding on to something that belongs to you. Here, take it." She wiped the fake tears at the corner of her eyes and sniffed.

With sharp eyes, Liam opened the letter and read it quickly.

The letter was filled with ruthless words saying that she wanted to break up with him and that he was a good-for-nothing man. Every word in the letter was designed to hurt Liam.

Unfortunately for Yesenia, Liam had a very visual memory.

He had once seen Julie's handwriting in Kingland Group, and he could still remember what it looked like.

This letter was definitely not written by his beloved.

In front of Yesenia and the other two men, Liam tore the letter.

Then he glared at the woman and said more angrily, "I want to see Julie with my own eyes and hear her say these to me up front."

Tyler's fake timid look immediately changed. He cleared his throat and stepped in front of Liam.

"I'm sorry, but my fiancée doesn't want to see you. Leave with the little dignity you have left. Isn't it humiliating to keep coming after her like this?"

Fiancée? Liam gave Tyler a scary heated look.

The next second, he slapped Tyler in the face and sent the weak man flying back.

Before Tyler could get up, Liam stepped on his palm and pressed on it. "Don't you ever call her that way again. The thought of it alone makes me want to throw up."

Chapter 341 Show Off His Wealth

Yesenia pushed Liam away in horror and helped Tyler up. "Tyler, my son-in-law, are you okay? Are you hurt?"

Tyler shook his head and said as if in pain, "I'm fine, but I can't stand the thought of Julie being with a man like Liam. He might beat and abuse her."

Yesenia turned sharply to Liam and scolded, "I had no idea you were prone to violence. Now I know you will abuse my daughter if you get married to her. I can't let that happen. Besides, the Riley family is a rich and powerful family with assets worth over ten billion dollars. Even your life won't be enough to pay back for hitting Mr. Riley. You are a poor beggar, and you think I'll give my daughter off to you in marriage? Never! Now, leave!"

Liam looked at the selfish and greedy woman blinded by money incredulously.

So she would call him a beggar just to curry favour with a clan that she believed was very rich.

This was probably one of the most ridiculous situations Liam had been in.

He looked straight at her and said, "The Riley family will soon go bankrupt. Julie can't marry him."

There was complete silence for a moment, then Yesenia suddenly broke into laughter.

"Bankrupt? Who do you take yourself for? Even if my daughter doesn't marry Mr. Riley, she will never marry a man that will be prone to hurting her at any given turn. I mean, the only thing you're good at, is fighting. What else can you do?"

Tyler held Yesenia's arm and said comfortingly, "Don't get so worked up. Since he is insisting on seeing Julie and hearing this from her, just let him see her. That way, he will get the message."

Tyler looked over at Liam, provocation and mockery obvious in his eyes.

However, Yesenia gulped, beginning to feel panic rising.

She coughed uncomfortably and said in a rough voice, "You're really a generous and kind man, Mr. Riley. You are nothing like this heartless bastard.

I'm going to have to stand on my ground with this one. Letting Julie meet with this lowlife won't be good for her reputation."

Liam hated this woman more each time they had an encounter.

She had already made up her mind about him. It was useless to say he was the heir of the Hoffman family with assets worth thousands of billions.

She would surely not believe him. Even if she did, she would begin grovelling to Liam, and that would only make him sick.

With this in mind, Liam decided against spilling the beans. After all, this wedding wouldn't take place once the Riley family fell to ruins.

Without another word, he got into his car and drove away.

Yesenia looked at the back of the car and scoffed in disbelief. "Such a good-for nothing, driving a second-hand Toyota, and he dares to be arrogant. He must think his car is a Maserati."

Tyler, on the other hand, almost burst from the joy he was feeling.

It felt like pure bliss.

For the first time, he had defeated Liam.

This was to be celebrated.

Tyler's mind started moving immediately.

He thought it was better to take advantage of the situation. He could have sex with Julie, record it and send the video to Liam.

Liam would surely go crazy. Tyler smiled to himself. Yes! He had to do it!

He looked at Yesenia with a smile and started walking inside. "I want to see Julie."

Startled, Yesenia ran to Tyler and smiled awkwardly.

"Actually, Mr. Riley... I haven't been completely honest. You see, Julie still has that poor guy in mind. I need some more time to persuade her. I promise that the wedding will be held in time."

Tyler frowned, obviously unhappy.

What the hell did Liam have that made so many women want him?

It was unfortunate that he couldn't force Julie's hand. She was after all, a member of the Cortez family.

So, he held in his anger and said gently, "I love Julie. I can wait. But don't worry. When she sees the difference between me and Liam, there's no way she will refuse."

Tyler then took out a key from his pocket and gave it to Yesenia.

"Julie needs a car, and as my fiancée, she deserves no less than this Porsche 911 GT2 RS."

Yesenia's eyes went wide from surprise.

That car was worth millions of dollars, and he wasn't even married to Julie yet.

This only confirmed what Yesenia already knew. Tyler was damn rich! He was far ahead of Liam, the poor arrogant bastard.

Yesenia took the key and said gushingly, "Don't you worry, Mr. Riley. Even if I have to die convincing Julie, she will choose you."

Chapter 342 Under House Arrest

A thunderous roar broke the silence of the place. Then a silver Porsche stopped at the door of the Cortez family's mansion.

Yesenia got out of the car with a proud face, immediately making many juniors in the Cortez family envious.

"Mrs. Fiber, hello," one servant greeted. Those servants who looked down on Yesenia before now all had respectful smiles on their faces. They bowed their heads to her.

Yesenia laughed happily, accepting all this with pleasure.

For her, this was the life she deserved to live. So now, she would take everything back.

At this moment, a woman in a mink fur coat and full of ladylike temperament came down the stairs.

The servants at the side hastily bowed down and greeted her respectfully.

But Beatrice Cortez just ignored the servants. She glanced at the Porsche outside the door, stared at Yesenia, and said sarcastically, "Where did you steal that car? Don't embarrass our Cortez family."

Yesenia looked at Beatrice, her younger sister. Then she sneered coldly and spat at Beatrice's feet.

Beatrice didn't expect Yesenia to do such a rude action. She was so frightened that she stepped back a few steps. Her face was full of disgust.

Yesenia smiled smugly and sneered sarcastically, "That's a gift from my son-in-law. What? Are you envious of me? Beatrice, let me just remind you. If I didn't leave by myself, you wouldn't have held so much power in the Cortez family. Now that I'm back, you have to step down."

Since Yesenia was the first child of the head of the Cortez family, she used to be the apple of his eye. She was cared for and protected by him. And although Beatrice was her younger sister, Beatrice didn't have any status at all. Compared to her, Beatrice was far behind.

Beatrice immediately flew into a rage. She stomped her feet and snorted coldly, "I don't reason with a bumpkin who came back from the countryside. It's a waste of my time."

"Humph!" Yesenia snorted coldly. She held her head high and shook the car keys in front of Beatrice. Then she knocked Beatrice away and strode to the third floor.

The Cortez family's mansion had a classical European style. It looked as magnificent and extravagant as the real ancient palace.

Yesenia walked to the door of the room at the end of the corridor, ignoring the two bodyguards. She knocked lightly and said with a smile, "Julie, Mom is here. I have something for you."

"Fuck off!" Julie shouted from the inside. Her voice was extremely cold, containing a strong sense of anger.

Two days ago, the Cortez family told Julie about the marriage agreement between the Cortez family and the Riley family. She was about to marry Tyler.

Of course, Julie disagreed. But in return, she was put under house arrest by the Cortez family.

She had been locked up in the Cortez family's mansion for several days. Her phone was confiscated, so she had no way to contact anyone outside. Worse was she must be accompanied by a maid when she ate or went to the bathroom.

Because of this, she had been on a hunger strike for a day and a night. But Yesenia didn't feel bad at all. She just pushed the door open and walked into the room.

When she saw Julie's pale face, she felt sorry for Julie. But she still said, "How can you marry Mr. Riley in a few days if you look like this?"

Julie didn't expect that her mother didn't care about her condition at all. Yesenia only cared about whether she could marry Tyler or not. She couldn't help wondering what kind of a mother Yesenia was.

She glared at Yesenia and snapped, "You want me to marry Tyler, right? Then kill me first. I want to see Liam, so let me out."

When Yesenia heard Liam's name, she felt upset. She said, "Liam is just

a loser. What's so good about him? Julie, Tyler is their family's first heir. If you marry into the Riley family, you can live a rich life. And no one will dare to bully us in the future. And things like when you were kidnapped back then will never happen again."



Chapter 343 Promise

Julie's eyes turned red, and tears welled up in them. She said stubbornly, "No matter what, I will never marry anyone except Liam."

Then she knelt heavily in front of Yesenia and begged, "Mom, please. I'm your daughter. Please let me go."

When Yesenia saw Julie like this, she felt tremendous pressure in her heart. It was as if a giant boulder was pressing her chest. She felt very sorry for Julie.

She hurriedly helped Julie up, took out the car keys, and said, "Tyler just came over and sent you a Porsche worth millions of dollars. Can that poor Liam do the same? I'm afraid he won't even make so much money his whole life."

Julie shook off Yesenia's hand and shouted, "Is money the only thing that matters to you? What kind of a mother are you?"

As soon as she said this, a crisp slap sound echoed in the room.

Yesenia suddenly slapped Julie hard on the face. Her face flushed with anger, and she scolded, "Wake up, Julie! Like you, I also thought I would be happy because I married someone I loved back then. But what happened? I was bullied and looked down upon by other people every day. If you choose a man like your father, it's fine. But what about Liam? He can only rent a house and own a second-hand car. He works in the underworld, so he is only good at fighting. People like him may be killed on the street one day. If you choose him, you will only live a life worse than mine."

At this moment, the door was slowly pushed open.

Then a man with silver hair in a suit walked in.

It was Kohen, the head of the Cortez family.

Although he was already in his seventies, his face was still ruddy. It was as if he was only in his fifties. What was more, the gleam in his eyes made people feel intimidated, even if he was not angry.

Kohen strode into the room with the help of his walking stick. He looked

at Julie's and Yesenia's embarrassed faces and shouted, "The marriage between the Riley family and the Cortez family is imperative. You are not allowed to disobey us. And if you do this for that bastard Liam, then our Cortez family will join hands with the Riley family to deal with him. I want to see how you can still love a dead person. You have a close friend named Vivian in Ninverton, right? Believe it or not, just one word from me can destroy her family."

Julie panicked at once. She propped her hands on the floor, lowered her head, and sobbed, "How can you do this?"

She had read the previous trending news and found that Liam had been relying on Aikin only.

But no matter how excellent Liam's fighting skills were, how could he escape if he was hunted day and night, especially by the families with billions of dollars of assets?

The previous bounty had scared Julie. What if the bounty was increased to two or three hundred million dollars this time?

Moreover, Vivian had nothing to do with all this.

If Vivian was implicated because of her, she would feel guilty for the rest of her life.

For a moment, Julie lost all hope in her heart. She felt like her life was as dark as the starless sky.

She lowered her head, feeling a sudden pain in her heart. Even her breathing was incomparably difficult.

"It seems I have always been a burden and an encumbrance on Liam. Maybe he will live a better life without me," Julie muttered to herself. She burst into tears as if she had already accepted her fate. She lay on the floor and choked with sobs.

When Kohen saw this, he turned around and walked out of the room with Yesenia.

He thought that if they pushed Julie too hard, it would break her.

Having lived to a ripe old age, he was already proficient in coercion and temptation.

Suddenly, a loud bang sounded.

Outside the room, Kohen thumped his walking stick heavily on the floor. He looked at Yesenia and said in a deep voice, "Persuade your daughter to get things done. Then the family inheritance right and the shares that belonged to you are still yours."

Upon hearing this, Yesenia covered her mouth with her hand and burst into tears.

Only at this age did she realize this was what she longed for.

She nodded heavily and said, "Dad, don't worry. Julie will definitely marry into the Riley family."

The word "dad" and the promise she made totally removed the barrier that lasted for many years between Kohen and Yesenia.

Kohen nodded with satisfaction and left with his walking stick.

Meanwhile, Liam was relaxing at home.

His phone suddenly rang. When he found it was Klaus, he answered it at once. "Mr. Hoffman, the Cortez family put Miss Fiber under house arrest now. And I also found that she has been on hunger strike for a day and a night."

While listening to Klaus, Liam clenched his fists, and the rims of his eyes turned red.

Julie had just recovered a little, but she was suffering like this.

Liam gritted his teeth, stared out of the window, and said angrily, "Tyler, I promise to make you live a life like hell."

Chapter 344 Suicide

Time flew. In the blink of an eye, three days had already passed.

The Royal Hotel was full of people, inside and outside.

They were all from rich and powerful families. So it was not surprising that the parking lot of the hotel was full of luxurious cars from different brands.

In the middle of the Emperor Banquet Hall, Sutton was like a star surrounded by the crowd.

Many well-known CEOs in Salem kept flattering him.

"Mr. Seymour, you are so young yet already successful."

"Mr. Seymour, your relationship with King is wonderful. It can be said that you have a strong alliance. It's really amazing!"

"Mr. Seymour, will we finally see King's face today?"

At this time, a waiter suddenly shouted, "The representative of the Riley family has arrived."

As soon as they heard this, everyone turned their heads and looked at the entrance.

Then they saw Tyler limping in alone.

He walked up to Sutton, totally ignoring the strange gazes of the people around. He gave Sutton an apologetic smile and said, "Hey, Sutton! Can I have a word with you in private?"

Sutton raised his eyebrows, stood up, and walked to the corner of the hall. Tyler followed behind him.

Tyler immediately stretched out his hand and held Sutton's shoulder. From afar, they looked like two brothers with a very good relationship.

"Sutton, didn't you catch Ajax? I hope this time, I can also take the credit for it. Don't worry. When I successfully become King's disciple, I won't forget to give you benefits."

"Okay, no problem with that." But Sutton's eyes were full of mockery, and he kept sneering inwardly.

He thought Tyler was doomed anyway. So why not seize the opportunity to ask for some benefits?

Sutton grinned and said slowly, "Tyler, you also know that King is an unreachable big shot. Countless people want to establish a relationship with him."

After saying this, he stared straight at Tyler. The meaning in his words was self-evident.

Tyler gritted his teeth and nodded. "Sutton, let's be honest with each other. What do you need at this time?"

Now that he had obviously achieved his goal, Sutton didn't beat around the bush. He directly demanded an exorbitant price. "One million dollars. That's all!"

"What?"

Tyler's eyes widened in shock. He was at a loss for words for a moment. Sutton shook off Tyler's hand away and said disdainfully, "You don't like this deal? Well, someone else will like it."

After saying this, he turned around and was about to leave. But Tyler quickly pulled him back, smiled apologetically, and said, "Okay, one million it is. But I hope you can put in a good word for me in front of King."

Tyler then called the accountant of the Riley family and asked to transfer the money to Sutton on the spot.

They both looked at their phones and secretly cursed each other in their hearts.

If only they could, they both wanted to shout, "Son of a bitch!"

But unfortunately, they could only do it inwardly.

Tyler put away his phone, smiled at Sutton, and walked to his seat with satisfaction.

While watching his back, Sutton sneered in a very low voice, "You want to flatter King? Don't you know who you have offended?"

Although Liam did not reveal his identity, Sutton could vaguely guess something from Wild Wolf's last roar.

Even if Liam was not King, his terrible skills must have a lot to do with

King.

Maybe they belonged to the same organization.

At this moment, the waiter suddenly shouted, "The representatives of the Cortez family are here!"

Kohen entered the Emperor Banquet Hall with Beatrice and the other members of the Cortez family. He slowly walked with the help of his walking stick.

Julie silently followed behind the members of the Cortez family. Her face was deathly pale.

After three days of mental torture, she couldn't resist them anymore.

As soon as Tyler saw her, he immediately ran up and greeted her warmly, "Julie, you're here."

But Julie just kept her head down, ignoring him.

When Kohen saw this, he turned his head and snapped, "Is this how you should treat your fiance? It seems that Yesenia has spoiled you too much in the past years."

He paused, then threatened in a low voice that only Julie could hear, "Don't forget that your mother is still in the hospital."

When Julie heard hearing this, the worry and fear in her heart surged again. She slowly raised her head and glanced at Tyler like a marionette.

But her current state of despair made Tyler feel extremely relieved.

His only goal was to separate Julie and Liam and make them suffer.

The more pain Liam and Julie felt, the happier he would be.

Tyler waved his hand and pretended to smooth things over. "Maybe Julie hasn't had a good rest. It's okay. Don't worry about it."

Kohen nodded with satisfaction. He complimented, "No wonder you are the heir of the Riley family. You have a big heart."

Tyler smiled and nodded. But his eyes, full of greed, were fixed on Julie. It was as if they had become an invisible tongue, licking every inch of her naked skin.

Julie felt his gaze, and she felt very disgusted. She quickly pulled her dress and shrank behind the crowd.

"The representative of Kingland Group, Mr. Aikin Frazier, is here!" At

this time, a voice interrupted the discussions of the crowd.

Aikin strode into the hall, wearing a black windbreaker and with a cigar in his mouth.

Tyson, Klaus, and Liam followed behind him.

Seeing this scene, the crowd immediately looked at each other.

Since Liam was only behind Aikin, they thought the rumors a few days ago seemed right. He was just a lackey.

Today, although the Axe Gang and Just Gang had merged, they were still jointly boycotted by several families with tens of billions of assets. As long as the members of this new gang were rejected by the various powerful families, their identities would be looked down upon by everyone.

For a moment, everyone looked at Tyler and started to discuss again.

"Today's party is not only the Seymour family's celebration but also Tyler's apprenticeship party, right?"

"That's right! Tyler spent three hundred million dollars to pay tribute to King. He wants to be King's disciple and kill Liam."

"Liam is such a fool! How dare he show up here!"

Chapter 345 Making It Clear

Liam ignored everyone's voices around him. He just fixed his eyes on Julie with apparent joy on his face.

He stepped forward, wanting to approach her. But she turned her head away and stepped back, not looking at him anymore.

This small gesture was like a giant hammer that smashed Liam's heart, almost breaking it.

He stared at Julie in a daze and muttered to himself in confusion, "Does Julie really want to marry Tyler? Is she like Yolanda, who thinks money is more important?"

The sweet experiences Liam had with Julie now turned into sharp knives that pierced through his body deeply, hurting his internal organs. If it was someone else, he would have thought rationally. But he was an in-love man, and love made people stupid.

Perhaps it was just a small possibility or a simple guess, but it made him feel extremely sad.

Liam took a deep breath, trying his best to suppress the anger in his heart. Then he strode towards Julie regardless of anything else.

At this moment, all he wanted was to ask Julie. He wanted her to make it clear to him personally.

At this moment, Kohen stepped forward, put his walking stick in front of Liam, and scolded angrily, "Hey, boy! With your current identity, you are not even worthy of Julie's gaze. Get out of here!"

Beatrice held her head up and also said sarcastically, "You are just a poor man who knows nothing but fighting. And the moment you came in, you smelled like a poor guy. Your body stinks. So get out. Don't make a fool of yourself here."

To please the members of the Cortez family and the Riley family, the others also began to belittle Liam without hesitation.

"Even Aikin is not qualified to stand in front of the Cortez family. Who do you think you are?"

"He's so immersed in his wishful thinking. Maybe he wants to be a toy boy."

"You've overestimated your ability. You are nothing compared to Mr. Riley. He is a noble child in Salem, while you are just a loser."

Liam looked at the people around him, thinking he had no extra time to deal with them.

Even if these people were worth billions of dollars and held powerful positions, they could not hold a candle to the explanation of the woman in his heart.

Liam's face darkened. He grabbed Kohen's walking stick and pulled it hard.

When Kohen felt a strange force coming from his hand, he suddenly staggered forward and fell heavily to the floor.

"Dad!" Beatrice exclaimed in shock. Her eyes burned with anger when she saw this scene. She raised her hand and threw it at Liam's face.

Liam didn't show any mercy this time. He also swung his right hand. And mixed with the sound of breaking the wind, it landed heavily on Beatrice's face.

After being slapped, Beatrice was like a spinning top. She spun half a circle and was thrown away.

Kohen held his walking stick tightly and struggled to get up from the floor. He cursed angrily, "You little bastard! You must be courting death!"

Tyler hurried forward, held Kohen's arm, and glared at Liam. He scolded, "Liam, behave yourself. Julie is my fiancée. I won't allow you to tarnish her reputation."

He was full of righteous indignation as he spoke. It was as if he was on the side of justice.

Liam looked at Tyler's expression, shook his hands, and sneered, "Do you want to get a good thrashing again?"

As soon as these words came out of Liam's mouth, Tyler was reminded of those bad experiences he had in Liam's hands. They flashed in his mind like a slideshow.

He trembled and stepped back in horror, not daring to say anything

more.

Then, Liam fixed his eyes on Julie again.

Right now, he only cared about her.

Liam forced a smile and said cautiously, "Julie, come with me. If you have any problems, you can tell me. I will solve them all for you."

Upon hearing this, the other rich people around began to scold Liam.

"Miss Fiber is Mr. Riley's fiancée. What the hell do you want to do?"

"He really is a punk. He can set an evil example to others."

But to everyone's surprise, Julie suddenly shouted, "Enough!"

The hall fell into dead silence at once.

Julie raised her head with difficulty and looked at Liam. Her eyes were full of sadness and despair.

Tears welled up in her eyes. She opened her mouth and said between sobs, "Liam, don't do this. Maybe we are really not meant for each other. Please leave now."

Chapter 346 Buying Out His Indebtedness

As soon as Liam heard this, he was shocked, and his mind went blank. He stood there motionlessly and stared at Julie in disbelief.

"Why... Why?" Liam asked in a very low voice. It was as if he was not asking Julie but himself.

Julie shook her head, pursed her lips, and said in a low voice, "There's no reason. It's just that we are not fit for each other. You'd better leave now."

Liam stepped forward and said aloud, "I don't believe it! Julie, what is going on? If you have any difficulties, just tell me. I can solve anything. Trust me."

Julie raised her head slightly, trying her best to hold back her tears. Then she said coldly, "I'm already engaged to Tyler. Please don't harass me again."

As soon as Tyler heard this, he felt ecstatic.

As he looked at Liam's miserable state, the pleasure of revenge swept over him.

At this moment, he felt like he was soaked in a hot spring, and every pore in his body felt so comfortable.

The feeling was great.

Tyler strode to Julie, wrapped his arm around her waist, and scolded, "You're such a loser! Didn't you hear what my fiancée said? Get out of here!"

As soon as he said this, all the rich people present spoke up.

"Fuck off!"

"You bastard! Get out of here!"

At this moment, Kohen also gained confidence. He held his walking stick tightly and shouted angrily, "You little rascal! I know you are good at fighting. But so what? You are nothing without Aikin."

Then he turned to Aikin and said coldly, "Since you were blacklisted by several major families, I guess life has not been easy for you. I know

that Liam saved your life, and you have been repaying his kindness. But today, the Cortez family and I will buy out his indebtedness to you. As long as you agree, I can make sure that no one in Salem will blacklist you again."

Tyler grinned hideously and also said, "Yes, that's right. I'm also willing to pay. Give me a number."

As soon as Kohen and Tyler stopped talking, a posh young man suddenly came in and shouted, "I'll pay too."

He was Kevin, the heir of the Evans family.

Back then, he was knocked unconscious by Liam's slap. And it made him a laughingstock in the entire Salem.

Because of this, he held a deep grudge against Liam.

His eyes narrowed as he stared at Liam. He sneered inwardly. At first, he planned to unite with Rowan to destroy Liam. But he didn't expect Rowan would be dealt with first. Fortunately, he got this chance now.

This was almost equivalent to the three major families joining hands to go against Liam.

For a moment, all the CEOs present swallowed their saliva hard. They looked at Liam as if he was a dead man.

After all, the three major families in Salem had united. How could a loser like him resist them?

Tyler turned his head, looked at Sutton, and sneered, "It seems that this bastard Liam has a deep grudge against the Seymour family. How about we take his life together?"

Everyone also looked at Sutton.

Sutton trembled with fear, cursing in his heart. Tyler was such a fool. If Tyler wanted to die, he wouldn't go with Tyler.

Besides, if Ajax came back, he would surely die without Liam.

Liam had been helping him to keep his life. How could he dare to take Liam's life?

Tyler's idea was bullshit.

Besides, he had seen with his own eyes how Aikin bowed to Liam at the gate of the villa.

Sutton smiled coldly. He disdained these people in his heart. For him, they were all bunch of idiots. They thought Liam was only relying on Aikin? If only they knew that Aikin was the one relying on Liam.

Although Liam disdained being entangled with this group of people, he also looked at Sutton playfully.

Liam's cold eyes made Sutton tremble. He was so scared that she almost wetted his pants.

Chapter 347 King Showed Up

Sutton thumped the table heavily with his hand and roared, "Stop barking like dogs! This is the celebration party of our Seymour family, not a debate between your families. Whoever dares to make trouble again will be an enemy of the Seymour family and will die with me when I die."

Everyone was shocked to hear this.

Disbelief was written all over their faces as they started whispering to each other.

"Has Sutton gone crazy?"

"We only blacklisted that punk. Why would we die?"

"He is still too young. Since he dared to say such cruel words, he will offend several big families directly."

Tyler thought it would be a piece of cake to blacklist Liam.

But he didn't expect that Sutton would threaten the big families who joined hands.

He stared at Sutton with a glum face, trying hard to suppress his anger. After all, they couldn't fall out before he became King's apprentice.

So Tyler smiled hypocritically and said, "That's right. This is not only the Seymour family's celebration party but also the celebration of my apprenticeship. This is a very important occasion, so it is indeed inappropriate to make trouble. Let's just do Mr. Seymour a favor, and get even with that bastard Liam later."

Sutton glanced at Tyler and said disdainfully, "You sure are sensible."

Sutton's contemptuous attitude made Tyler so angry that he gritted his teeth and cursed inwardly, thinking Sutton was just a fool who had gotten the position by relying on King's words but already started putting on airs.

Everything could wait until he succeeded in becoming King's apprentice.

Kohen was, of course, not afraid of Sutton. But he was afraid of King.

After all, King was the kind of person who could destroy an entire clan

alone.

Kohen took a deep breath to calm himself down. Then he waved his hand and said, "Okay, let this little bastard live a few more hours then." The rich men in the crowd could only shake their heads. It seemed that Liam wouldn't be able to escape his miserable end.

For a moment, no one of the many people present paid attention to anyone from Kingland Group.

Aikin, sitting in his seat, glanced at everyone coldly. But he didn't say a word.

In his eyes, these people were nothing but a group of good-for-nothing rubbish. They were not even qualified to serve Liam.

Even if Liam was not the heir of a family with assets worth trillions of dollars, his strength, intelligence, and talent were far from what those ordinary people could hold a candle to. He was superior to the people in front of him.

It could also be said that even if Liam was rags-to-riches, it was still a piece of cake for him to make the achievement of the group of people in front of him.

Klaus and Tyson stood at the side. Their faces were full of disdain, not caring about the people's reaction.

None of the guests noticed that Aikin, Klaus, and Tyson looked at Liam with awe.

Julie, on the other hand, felt extremely complicated as she sat beside the members of the Cortez family.

She quietly raised her head and glanced at Liam. Then she took out her phone and sent him a message.

Liam felt his phone vibrate. He took it out and saw Julie's message persuading him.

"Liam, they definitely won't let you go. Please quickly leave. I really don't want you to be in trouble."

He felt the anxiety and concern in her message. It sent warmth to his heart. She still cared for him. It was very likely that she only treated him that way just now because she was threatened by the Cortez family in

some ways he didn't know.

At the thought of this, Liam quickly calmed down. The sadness in his heart was swept away.

It turned out that things were not as bad as he thought.

Liam raised his head and looked at Sutton with sharp eyes.

Sutton had been waiting for Liam's instructions. So when he saw the look in Liam's eyes, he immediately understood what Liam meant.

He suddenly stood up and thumped the table hard with his hand.

This made the crowd quiet down in an instant.

Sutton's gaze swept across the crowd. Then he announced loudly, "Today, the purpose of this celebration party is to catch that loser Ajax and give him to King of the Dark Night Organization."

As soon as the people heard King's name, they held their breaths and looked forward to his arrival with all sorts of thoughts.

At this moment, there was a sudden sound of footsteps approaching the door.

Everyone turned their heads and looked at the door.

Then they all saw a cold figure slowly walking into the banquet hall.

Still wearing the golden mask, King's tall and straight body strode into the Emperor Banquet Hall.

King's appearance now had scotched the rumors that Liam was King.

Many of the guests finally felt relieved.

Before everyone could react, Tyler immediately walked up to King.

He bowed respectfully and handed over a bank card. "Mr. King, I'm willing to pay three hundred million dollars to be your apprentice. Please accept it."

Chapter 348 Becoming King's Apprentices Together

King took the bank card. With a playful look in his eyes, he said coldly, "You're good."

Tyler lowered his head, and he couldn't help feeling ecstatic.

Since King took his card, did it mean King was willing to accept him as an apprentice?

Tyler didn't think more. He directly knelt in front of King and kowtowed three times in public.

"Master!" he shouted. Then he stood up and looked at Liam mockingly. The rich people around them also showed gloating expressions, waiting to see how Liam would deal with the current situation.

At the same time, many people from big families were surprised and envious of Tyler. Some even hated him.

How could the Riley family get in touch with King that easily?

Didn't it mean no one in Salem would dare to challenge the Riley family in the future?

For a moment, everyone in the banquet hall felt regretful.

Why didn't they make a move first?

At this moment, one rich man hiding in the crowd suddenly said, "Mr. King, I also want to be your apprentice. This is my payment."

His words were like a thunderbolt that enlightened everyone.

If Tyler could pay to be King's apprentice, so could they.

Immediately afterwards, many big shots gave their money generously and shouted.

"Mr. King, I'll give you fifty million dollars. Just please accept my son as your apprentice."

"I will give you seventy million dollars. I only want to be your nominal disciple."

"Mr. King, I will give you one hundred million dollars. Although I'm

already sixty years old, it's still a good time for me to practice martial arts."

Jaxtyn, who was standing behind King, quickly walked to everyone and accepted all their bank cards.

In an instant, the celebration party held by the Seymour family had completely turned into a venue for those rich people to apply as King's apprentices.

And Tyler, the first applicant, was already pushed aside by the crowd. He just stood there and watched the scene, dumbfounded.

How could King of the Dark Night Organization accept all those bank cards?

And if King had so many disciples, wouldn't it make Tyler's status in his heart parlous?

This thought made Tyler feel anxious. He had to ask King to help him take revenge on Liam. Otherwise, wouldn't the three hundred million dollars he had spent be in vain?

He hurriedly pushed the fanatical crowd away and walked to King. Instantly, tears welled up in his eyes, and he said aggrievedly, "Master, I have been beaten by an evil man many times. I even have to rely on a wheelchair to move now. That evil man once said that he didn't take you seriously. Please help me."

King glanced and pointed at Liam. Then he asked, "Are you referring to this person?"

Tyler was stunned for a moment. Then his expression became ecstatic. He nodded repeatedly and said, "Master, how do you know it's him? Has he also offended you?"

Suddenly, Beatrice laughed viciously and said, "Ha-ha! Liam, look at what your arrogance has done to you. You have even offended King. Who else can protect you today? You are doomed this time."

Kohen also sneered and slandered Liam. "Liam is a bastard who keeps badgering my granddaughter and discrediting her. He is really an animal. King, please help us teach him a good lesson."

The rest of the people in the crowd started slandering Liam to please the

Riley family and the Cortez family.

"Liam is simply a barbarian. As soon as he came, he hit a seventy-year-old man."

"Liam is a horny scumbag. He wants to possess Julie because she is beautiful."

"I saw with my own eyes how Mr. Riley gave in again and again. It was Liam who bullied him, so he could take Julie away."

However, King just ignored these people directly.

He slowly walked to Julie, looked at her condescendingly with his cold eyes, and asked coldly, "Are they telling the truth?"

Julie raised her head and looked at King.

Although the man's eyes were extremely cold, she actually felt a trace of jealousy from his gaze.

Julie immediately lowered her head, thinking she was only imagining things.

Kohen, standing beside them, got anxious. He thumped his walking stick on the floor and said, "Julie, hurry up and tell King if what they said is true or not."

Upon hearing this, everyone fixed their eyes on Julie.

Everyone knew the answer. After all, if she said no, wouldn't it mean she was going against the two major families with assets worth tens of billions of dollars?

What was more, these two families were her Cortez family and her fiancée's Riley family.

Julie sat on her seat. She felt like countless mountains were pressing on her body, making her difficult to breathe.

She really wanted to say everything was not true. But when she thought of her mother, she could not say it out.

When Beatrice noticed that Julie didn't speak for a long time, she became anxious. She feared King would vent his anger on the Cortez family.

So she strode forward, stood in front of King, winked at him, and said flatteringly, "Mr. King, I'm Julie's aunt. I assure you that what they said

Chapter 348 Becoming King's Apprentices Together
is true."

Suddenly, a crisp slap sound echoed in the hall.

It turned out that King slapped Beatrice, making her fall to the floor.

Everyone's eyes widened in shock and confusion.



Chapter 349 When King Asks Questions

Sitting on the floor, Beatrice covered her face and said in bewilderment, "You... Why did you hit me?"

King looked at her condescendingly from a high position. Then he said in a voice as cold as ice, "I didn't ask you."

A cold killing intent enveloped Beatrice in an instant.

The hatred in her eyes completely disappeared. It was replaced by endless fear.

At his age, Kohen was already used to seeing big scenes. But King's astonishing murderous aura made him a little afraid.

He held his walking stick tightly with his trembling hand, quickly pulled Beatrice up, and said sharply, "Apologize to King now."

Beatrice gritted her teeth hard and forced herself to say, "I'm sorry."

King sneered, turned to Julie, and fixed his eyes on her.

At this moment, everyone felt something was wrong.

Why did King pay so much attention to Julie?

They all had the same thought in mind.

Did King take a fancy to Julie?

Everyone's eyes moved back and forth between King and Julie for a while. Then they finally fixed their gazes on Julie.

Julie had an extremely hot body and a stunning appearance. No man wouldn't be tempted by her.

Everyone looked at each other and smiled secretly.

Tyler, standing at the side, became furious when he saw this scene.

He gritted his teeth, and he clenched his fists so tightly that his nails deeply dug into his palms. His heart was full of resentment. In his eyes, King was lustful and greedy. He thought that even if King had a mighty status, he wouldn't let King go if King dared to take his woman.

Kohen slowly walked to Julie and said in a low voice, "Don't forget that your mother is still in the hospital."

Then Kohen looked at Liam in the distance with eyes full of resentment. Liam did not only make him lose face in the upper-class circle of Salem but also blocked the way of his Cortez family's further development. He wanted to curse Liam.

In the distance, Liam also looked at Kohen indifferently. He crooked his finger and mouthed, "Old scum!"

Kohen was shocked and angry at the same time. His face darkened at once.

He raised his hand and pointed at Liam with his trembling finger. He was so angry that he trembled all over.

The crowd was suddenly shocked by a loud bang.

Then Kohen suddenly felt a great force coming from his abdomen. And he was thrown three meters away, upside-down.

As he landed, he was like a ball, rolling on the floor and knocking over many tables and chairs. He was in a mess.

"Ahem!" Kohen lay on the floor, coughing nonstop. The kick made him feel like he almost died.

He raised his head with difficulty and scanned the audience, trying to find the culprit.

Everyone looked at King with weird expressions on their faces.

Suddenly, a bad feeling surged in Kohen's heart.

Was it King?

But before he could think it over, Beatrice stood up and scolded, "Enough! Why did you hit my father? How dare you!"

King stood with his hands clasped behind his back and said coldly, "That old scumbag barks like a dog."

Jaxtyn, standing at the side, immediately followed suit and said, "Hey, do you think King is blind? Do you think he didn't see that you were instigating this woman just now? And I want to see who dares to interfere when King asks questions. They must be courting death."

King turned to Beatrice and glared at her with eyes as cold as knife blades.

The murderous aura in his body surged again.

Beatrice was so startled by his eyes that she subconsciously stepped back a few steps, not daring to say anything more.

King sneered, stepped forward, and stood in front of Julie. He pinched her chin and asked coldly, "Hey, are they telling the truth?"

Julie trembled all over. The man's action was full of provocation, and he had completely crossed the line.

But to her surprise, she didn't feel disgusted at all.

Julie looked down at his fingers. They were not as rough as men's fingers. Instead, they were soft like women's.

But she was in a moment of desperation now. She didn't have time to think too much.

She couldn't possibly frame Liam up.

Julie bit her lower lip. She suddenly raised her head and said firmly, "No."

Chapter 350 Four Hundred Million Dollars For Liam's Life

The entire banquet hall fell into a dead silence. It was so quiet that one could hear a pin drop.

Everyone's eyes widened in shock. Julie's one-word answer echoed in their ears.

Was Julie out of her mind?

At this moment, Beatrice could no longer bear the resentments in her heart. She vented them all on Julie.

"You bastard country bumpkin! You don't care about the interests of the Cortez family at all. You are as lowly as your mother."

Kohen was also furious. He glared at Julie with his eyes wide open, and his chest heaved up and down. He felt like he was about to die from anger.

Tyler, on the other hand, was hurt. Julie was his fiancée. And for him, seeing her speak for Liam was more painful than when King was flirting with her just now. ①

He hated Liam to the core.

Tyler's face turned grim. He stared at Julie and said word by word, "Julie was only deceived by Liam's sweet words. Please don't take her answer seriously. Everyone here can testify to what Liam has done."

Kohen echoed, "Yes! My granddaughter is timid. She lied because she was afraid of Liam, who threatened her. King, please forgive her."

Although he hated King for kicking him earlier, he didn't dare to speak out the anger in his heart.

When he thought of the Seymour family, especially Michael, who was forced to commit suicide by King, all he felt was fear.

After all, no one at his age would want a miserable end.

Julie stared at King as if trying to see through the golden mask.

However, all she could see in his cold eyes was a disappointment.

An inexplicable emotion surged up in Julie's heart. Was King disappointed with what she said? Did he want her to slander Liam? But why?

At the thought that King might also target Liam, Julie became restless. She immediately added, "Liam and I were a couple before. Although we broke up, he never badgered me or forced me to do anything. I hope you won't make things difficult for him."

Upon hearing this, King lowered his head and fell silent.

But the atmosphere in the Emperor Banquet Hall became more and more depressing. It was as if a giant boulder was pressing on everyone's heart.

Everyone felt suffocated. It was getting more and more difficult to breathe. But they could only look at King, trying to figure out what he was thinking.

However, the next moment, King suddenly laughed. "Ha-ha! Okay, I believe what this beauty is saying."

Everyone in the hall immediately understood. They started whispering to each other.

"Indeed! King takes a fancy to Julie."

"Everyone loves beauty. A man as strong as King certainly loves a peerless beauty like Julie."

"Oh, my God! If King only turns his eyes on me, I will do anything for him to love me."

Tyler had been hiding in the crowd and just listened to their discussions. He clenched his teeth so hard that he didn't even notice the blood oozing out of the corner of his mouth.

If only he could, he wanted to curse King. He had already spent three hundred million dollars becoming King's disciple. But King stole his woman.

Moreover, if King really let go of Liam, then he would become a buffoon. Tyler felt an impulse. He stepped forward and said in an agitated tone, "King, my fiancée is just so kind that she doesn't want to make a fuss. But I was humiliated by Liam, so I must avenge myself. You are my

master now, and I am your disciple. Humiliating me is equivalent to humiliating you and the Dark Night Organization. Master, I'm willing to give you another one hundred million dollars. Please punish that bastard Liam."

Everyone gasped upon hearing this.

Spending four hundred million dollars just to kill a person like Liam was simply unprecedented.

Tyler must really have a deep grudge against Liam.

At this moment, not only Tyler but also the other people around looked at Liam with mockery in their eyes.

Judging from how King amassed wealth just now, how could he not be willing to accept the task?

There was no doubt that Liam would die today.

Liam crossed his arms over his chest and looked at the people in front of him indifferently. He even wanted to laugh.

Tyler sensed Liam's gaze, and he felt like Liam was looking at him as if he was an idiot. He clenched his fists and gritted his teeth, wishing to eat Liam alive.

Chapter 351 The Fake King!

"Oh?" King stared at Tyler with a cold glint in his eyes and waved.

It took Tyler awhile to comprehend the meaning behind his actions.

Gritting his teeth, he produced another bank card from his pocket and handed it respectfully to King. At the same time, he said in a flattering manner, "Master, here is one hundred million. Please accept my humble offering."

King pocketed the bank card and gave Tyler a pat on his head. Then, acting as though he was his elder, he gave him a faint smile and said, "My dear disciple, I will take this. Don't worry, you will be avenged!"

At first, Tyler was a little distressed. After all, it was four hundred million in total.

An ordinary person might not be able to make four hundred million despite living over ten lifetimes. However, he had given it away in such a wanton manner!

Yet, the despair in his heart lifted when he heard that King was willing to avenge him.

His heart brimming with ecstasy and excitement, his eyes started to fill with tears.

Finally, Liam was going to be killed!

At the moment, every single cell in his body trembled with excitement. It felt so good!

However, the next moment, King was seen raising his hand and a forceful blow was delivered across Tyler's face, sending Tyler flying several feet away.

Just like a top, Tyler spun in the air several times before crashing heavily onto the table.

Shocked to their cores, everybody stared wide eyed at the scene before them.

What was going on?!

This was an unexpected twist of events!

King had pocketed four hundred million and promised to avenge Tyler. So, why did he slap Tyler instead?!

Sneering, King waved his hand and walked slowly toward the central seat of the hall.

Seeing this, Sutton quickly stood up and greeted him in a flattering manner.

Glancing around the crowd with his piercing eyes, King started to mock them.

"Did I say that I would take in a disciple? In fact when did I ever promise that I would take orders from you or kill anybody for you after receiving your money?"

Everybody was shocked by his statement.

Suddenly, he bellowed, "Do you think you can order me to do anything?!" His words rendered everybody speechless.

With those words, all the tycoons and business magnets there couldn't help but gulp. At the moment, they knew they were tricked.

Their eyes widened as their breathing quickened. They felt as though their hearts would leap out of their chests.

No wonder he accepted the money as soon as he saw it. In the beginning, they thought that even King was not immune to the temptation of money.

In the end, he proved them wrong. In fact, he didn't care about anybody's opinion at all. He fucking accepted it with no strings attached! It was sheer robbery!

Wouldn't all that money they had given him be in vain?!

Many people present today had attended the birthday party held by the Seymour family before.

Back then, the image of the dominating King was still vivid in their minds.

The Seymour family, the Crocodile Gang, dozens of killers, more than a dozen gunners, and even a major from the army were no match for him!

What else could they do!?

Ask him to return the money?

That would be suicide!

Tyler got up awkwardly, his eyes bloodshot. Then, he roared hysterically, "You fucking took four hundred million from me! It's okay if you refused to avenge me, but why the fuck did you beat me?! Are you out of your mind?!" A moment of silence ensued.

Four hundred million! He was a fool! How could he give it all away without batting his eyes.

For a moment, all the people around looked at Tyler with disdain and hatred.

Tyler felt their penetrating gazes upon him. At the moment, he felt as if they were looking at an idiot!

The look was exactly the same as that in Liam's eyes just now!

The crowd's mocking gaze was akin to a soundless slap that landed upon him again and again, causing his humiliation to increase with each passing moment.

"Bravo!"

Suddenly, Kevin stood up and applauded.

Just now, he had been taking in the scene before him calmly without paying a single penny.

With resentment in his eyes, Tyler stared at Kevin and asked coldly, "What is the meaning of this, Kevin?"

Kevin gave Tyler a ridiculed look and said sarcastically, "Tyler, I think you have lost your mind because of revenge. Are you even sure that the man standing here is the real King?"

With that, everyone frowned as they cast furtive glances at King, who was seated at the central seat.

Kevin smiled faintly, as if everything was under his control. Then, he continued, "Judging from his behavior, I think he is obviously in cahoots with Liam!

Since this King appeared, I haven't seen a single trace of fear upon Liam or anyone from the Kingland Group. Is this even normal?" His statement sent shockwave through the crowd.

He was right!

Everyone felt as if their heads had been struck by lightning as they quickly recalled what had happened before. The more they thought about it, the more they felt that Kevin made sense.

In an instant, they were overcome by a sudden gush of shame!

All the people present today were billionaires. How could they be fooled like this?!

With only a golden mask on his face, anyone could look like King as long as they cut a similar figure. As for the voice, they could always use a voice changer. As such, any Tom, Dick or Harry could impersonate King!

All of a sudden, everybody's face turned beef red with anger.

At this particular moment, Tyler stared at Liam with hate filled eyes. He wanted to kill Liam now more than ever!

Clenching his fists so tight that his nails were practically digging into his flesh, he roared, "Liam, you son of a bitch! How dare you fool us? Damn it!"

For a moment, the crowd's anger had reached a crescendo as the other big shots started to bellow one after another.

"Little bastard, I will make sure you won't be able to survive today and spend the money you cheated us out of!"

"Give me back the money and perhaps I'll leave your corpse complete!"

"You little bastard, how dare you fool me? I'll break your limbs and make you beg on the streets for the rest of your life!"

Hearing the curses of the crowd, Liam suddenly burst into laughter.

His laughter resonated through the entire hall, surpassing the angry curses of the crowd.

The rich looked at each other, not knowing his intentions.

Liam sneered as he surveyed his surroundings with contempt. "I didn't utter a single word since King appeared. Even if this King is a fake, what does this have to do with me?"

Chapter 352 The Man In A Black Robe

Everyone was rendered speechless, thinking Liam's retort was reasonable.

All these rich people in the hall were not idiots. They just needed to vent their anger after they were conned into giving out their money.

At this moment, Kevin walked slowly to the front of the crowd. He looked at Liam disdainfully and asked loudly, "If this fake King isn't colluding with you, why does he seem to be protecting you? And why did he had to ask a strange woman's opinion many times?"

Everyone frowned, giving Kevin's words careful thought.

Would a big shot like King really lack women?

Of course, they knew that the answer was no.

And every time someone wanted to deal with Liam, King took action.

So who would believe King and Liam had nothing to do with each other?

Everyone was suddenly enlightened. Their faces flushed from shame, and they were even angrier.

They were almost fooled by this bastard Liam again.

With this realization, these rich people began cursing again.

"You bastard! How dare you lie to us! I will definitely make your life a hell."

"Liam, you little bastard! Kneel down and kowtow to me. Otherwise, I will kill you now." ④

"Do you think you can rest assured because Aikin is helping you? I propose to boycott Kingland Security in Salem forever."

Tyler just stood aside, staring at Liam. The anger in his heart was like an inflated balloon that was about to explode.

His face looked ferocious, and he gritted his teeth tightly. Blood already oozed out from the corner of his mouth, but he didn't notice it.

He suddenly stepped forward and shouted angrily, "Liam, you liar! Give me back my money. Otherwise, you will suffer from endless revenge

After saying this, he turned his head, looked at Aikin, and roared, "If the Riley family can't do anything to you, I will seek help from the Norris family in the capital."

When the crowd heard Tyler mention the Norris family, their hearts trembled.

They almost forgot that the Norris family was behind Tyler. The Norris family was a behemoth in the capital.

If the Norris family decided to help, it was very likely they could get their money back.

This realization made everyone's faces soften. And they looked at Liam with eyes full of ridicule.

But what happened the next moment shocked them all.

A crisp slap sound echoed in the hall.

It turned out that Liam stepped forward and slapped Tyler in the face. Then he said, "I've said I have nothing to do with King."

After saying this, he gave Tyler another heavy slap.

"And I told you I would never let my woman be hurt again."

Then came the third slap.

"I also told you to behave and warned you not to provoke me again."

Every time Liam spoke, he gave Tyler a heavy slap.

As a result, Tyler's face was purplish blue and swollen.

He staggered back to Kevin's side, covered his right face with one hand, and pulled Kevin with his other hand. He shouted, "Back then, he also hit me in the hotel of your family. This is the second time. By doing this, he is humiliating your Evans family."

When Kevin heard this, blue veins throbbed on his neck. He clenched his fists tightly. Anger surged in his heart.

What happened last time had already made him a laughingstock in the upper-class circle.

Now, Liam did this again. He was just a punk, but he dared to hurt people in the hotel owned by the Evans family.

He must be courting death.

"You little bastard! You are doomed today!" Kevin shouted. He grinned hideously and clapped his hands.

Suddenly, there were a series of heavy footsteps outside.

Each sound was like a cold and ruthless knife stabbing everyone's heart. Then the door of the Emperor Banquet Hall was suddenly pushed open from the outside.

A woman with a stern face appeared right before everyone's eyes.

It was Scarlett.

Today, she wore a black suit, a tight black skirt, and a black peacock hat on the top of her head. She looked like a young woman attending a funeral but full of special temptation.

Beside her was a monstrous man more than two meters in height.

The man was dressed in a black robe, but the aura his body exuded was full of the pressure of a predator. He was incomparably terrifying.

Through his black hood, he stared at Liam with eyes full of resentment.

Liam frowned. As he stared at the man in a black robe, he felt a strong sense of familiarity.

A name involuntarily came to his mind.

Ajax!

Liam was also shocked by his own thought.

Why would he think of Ajax? Ajax couldn't compare to this monstrous man in front of him in terms of size or the feeling it gave him.

Kevin quickly approached Scarlett and said with a sinister smile, "Thank you for coming to help."

With an expressionless face, Scarlett said in a cold voice, "I'm just here to ask him something."

Then she looked at Liam coldly and said, "Do you remember Frey and the cruise ship on Hoiwa Island? Tell me."

Chapter 353 Are You Ajax

Liam didn't show any signs of fear. He looked straight at Scarlett and said indifferently, "I don't know what you're talking about."

It was not that he didn't want to admit it. But he was trying to dissociate himself from King at the moment.

After all, if he admitted it now, today's arrangement would be in vain.

Moreover, Liam never exposed anything about King since the beginning. Scarlett probably just got some information from Ajax.

Otherwise, she would have directly taken her revenge on him instead of questioning him.

At this moment, Scarlett's eyes became colder. She looked at Liam and said, "You'd better not lie to me. Otherwise, you will regret it."

After saying this, she glanced at the man in a black robe beside her.

The man in a black robe trembled all over. Then he laughed sinisterly. "It doesn't matter whether he is King or not. Just kill them both, okay?"

Everyone was shocked upon hearing this. Then they began discussing again.

"Who is this man? He is so arrogant."

"His voice is very strange and gravelly. It seems there's a frog in his throat."

At this moment, a fat woman beside them curled her lips disdainfully and whispered, "It's broad daylight, and he is heavily dressed in a black robe from head to toe? Is he out of his mind?"

The woman's voice was so low that only the people around her could hear it. But Liam still heard it.

However, Liam suddenly felt his hair stand on end. And a feeling of extreme danger surged in his heart.

Then everyone was stunned by a loud bang.

The noise came from the man in a black robe.

And before anyone could react, a hole suddenly appeared in the

woman's chest, and blood poured out like a fountain.

She fell heavily behind with eyes wide open.

The woman died on the spot.

Everyone was so terrified that they quickly scattered in all directions.

"What's going on? What happened to her? Why is she dead?"

"This is so scary. What kind of party is this? Damn! I will never come to any parties of the Seymour family in the future."

"I don't want to die. I want to go. Get out of my way! I want to go out. Let me go!"

The man in a black robe sneered and said hoarsely, "Shut up! Damn it!"

Kevin swallowed his saliva hard, and his eyelids twitched wildly.

Just now, he was standing at the side, and he didn't see clearly how the man in a black robe attacked.

Unexpectedly, this man was a real master.

He felt horrible.

But there was one person in the crowd whose face was full of madness and joy.

And that person was Tyler.

He clutched his stomach, forcing himself not to laugh. His eyes were full of ecstasy and madness when he looked at Liam.

No matter what, Liam would definitely die today.

Everyone covered their mouths tightly and kept silent. They looked at the man in a black robe in horror, fearing they would attract his attention.

"Are you Ajax?"

At this moment, a magnetic voice suddenly echoed in everyone's ears.

Everyone's eyes widened when they heard Liam's question. They stared at the man in a black robe in disbelief.

Was Ajax this terrifying?

Liam must be kidding them!

"Ha-ha!" This time, malicious laughter echoed in the banquet hall.

The man in a black robe slowly took off his hood, revealing the face

hidden under it.

Although his face was stiff and full of scars, everyone was sure that he was Ajax.

Ajax's face remained motionless, but he let out a sinister laughter. "Liam, I have become a monster because I want to kill you."

"So?" Liam asked calmly.

Ajax looked at Liam with eyes full of resentment. He forced a smile and snapped, "You must die today!"

Chapter 354 A Group Of Fools

When everyone heard Ajax admit it, their eyes widened in shock. They were too stunned to react for a while.

The main purpose of the celebration party held by the Seymour family today was to hand over Ajax to King, right?

Besides, except for his face, his monstrous appearance didn't look like Ajax at all.

Everyone started whispering to each other again.

"Is he really Ajax? What happened? Why did he become like this?"

"Since Ajax is back, and he has become so powerful, what can happen to Sutton now?"

Everyone turned and looked at Sutton.

Although Ajax and Sutton had the same surname, and they were from the same family, they were deadly enemies.

It seemed that Sutton's position as head of the Seymour family would end here.

Sitting next to the central seat, Sutton looked at Ajax in the distance. His face was pale, and his lips trembled. But he couldn't say a word.

He had seen with his own eyes how Ajax killed that lady in the blink of an eye.

What about him?

He was just an ordinary person. If it was him in the place of that lady just now, he would have died in the blink of an eye too.

Ajax was a monster. How could Sutton possibly deal with him?

So Sutton turned to Liam for help.

However, Liam just glanced at Sutton indifferently. He had a composed smile on the corner of his mouth and incomparably calm eyes.

Sutton saw the calmness on Liam's face, and it slightly reduced the fear in his heart.

He was not afraid, thinking Liam would definitely make a move.

After all, the grudge between Liam and Ajax was much deeper than between him and Ajax. The hatred between Liam and Ajax was unfathomable.

Ajax looked at Liam with a playful smile and said sinisterly, "Actually, you can also live today."

"Oh, really?" Liam smiled faintly. He even disdained looking at Ajax.

Ajax's face twisted when he saw Liam's calm expression. He snapped, "As long as you kneel and kowtow to me, cripple your limbs, disfigure yourself, swallow the hot charcoal, and finally lick my toes like a dog, I will let you go. Ha-ha!"

After his last sentence, Ajax laughed like a lunatic.

Everyone looked at Liam with a trace of pity. ④

Ajax's requests were no different from killing Liam.

However, when they thought that Liam was about to die, the pity in their hearts quickly changed to an incomparable sense of happiness.

After all, most of them had experienced insult and humiliation from Liam before.

Liam was just a gangster who had no background. He was only good at fighting.

Normally, someone like him was simply a good-for-nothing. He wasn't even worthy of their gazes.

Kohen, on the other hand, was aglow, and his heart was filled with joy. He muttered to himself, "This bastard will finally die."

Beatrice, next to him, covered her swollen right face with her hand and said viciously, "The Evans family is the most powerful in Salem. This bastard Liam has offended not only Mr. Evans but also the monster Ajax. He is doomed."

In the face of the crowd's ridicule, Liam squinted at them and snapped coldly, "You idiots!"

This scene was very similar to what happened at Michael's birthday party held by the Seymour family.

These people around him seemed to really regard themselves as gods. In their eyes, others were just humble ants they could trample on at will.

But in his eyes, these people were nothing but contemptible fools.

Sure enough, his words still hurt everyone's heart.

They all flew into a rage. They pointed at Liam and cursed him.

"You bastard! Who are you cursing?"

"At first, I felt you were a little pitiful. But now, I already feel that a person like you might as well die."

"You are just a stray dog that can only hide in the dark corner and beg for food. What are you barking for now?"

"Ha-ha!" Ajax suddenly laughed grimly. The sound of his laughter dinned in the ears of the crowd.

He jumped up and stepped down with his right foot.

A loud bang sounded.

The granite floor tiles instantly cracked into countless sharp fragments and shot toward Liam in the distance.

The next moment, Ajax suddenly squatted down.

Then his dark figure rushed out like a preying cheetah.

All everyone could see was a blurry black figure flashing through. Then Ajax appeared behind Liam.

He roared, "Go to hell!" His black cuff opened, and sharp blades shot out from his intact fist.

Those sharp blades, shining with terrifying silver light, went straight to Liam's heart.

Chapter 355 I Thought You Wouldn't Feel Pain

Another loud bang echoed in the hall.

It was as if a piece of hard metal and marble collided heavily, creating a loud noise on the floor.

What everyone saw was Liam pressing Ajax's right fist hard on the floor. Ajax pulled his hand hard. But Liam's hand was like a mountain, firmly pressing on his fist and making it unable to move at all.

Liam raised his other hand, and his fist smashed Ajax's face hard like a cannonball.

Ajax's facial muscles tautened. He turned his head slightly and lowered it.

Suddenly, Liam felt a strong killing intent aimed at him.

Ajax suddenly opened his mouth, and numerous poisonous needles flew out of his teeth. ③

Fortunately, Liam was prepared. He slightly twisted his head to dodge the poisoned needles. Then his waist turned around like a spring, and he kicked Ajax.

His leg gyrated one hundred and eighty degrees. This kick, mixed with the wind, hit Ajax's waist heavily.

"What?" Ajax groaned and was instantly thrown ten meters away.

His body hit the wall with a loud bang.

As his body fell to the floor, a deep hole was formed in the wall of the Emperor Banquet Hall. And the black robe on his body scattered on the floor.

Everyone's eyes widened as they watched the scene. They kept swallowing their saliva hard.

They wondered if Ajax and Liam were still human beings.

They were too strong, and they moved too fast.

Even Kevin stepped back several steps in a row when he saw this. He must admit that he was a little scared.

Could it be that this bastard Liam was really King?

He turned to Scarlett and said in a trembling voice, "Miss... Miss Duncan, it seems that Ajax can't defeat Liam."

Scarlett's face remained expressionless. She said coldly, "Don't worry. It's just the beginning."

At this moment, Ajax slowly stood up from the floor, shook the dust off his body, and laughed coldly again.

The muscles on his body bulged and expanded again. Then he rushed towards Liam like a heavy tank.

Bang!

A loud explosion sounded in the air.

Liam's and Ajax's figures collided at an extremely high speed.

A few more loud bangs echoed in the hall.

The two kept colliding with each other.

The floor under their feet was constantly cracking and breaking into pieces.

The scenes were like in a movie with special effects.

Scarlett crossed her arms over her chest, glanced at King, and sneered, "Your man won't live long. Why don't you make a move?"

She paused, and a trace of mockery finally appeared on her usually expressionless face. She said word by word, "Are you a fake?"

"His strength is already enough to overwhelm you. I don't need to make a move." King was still wearing a golden mask, so no one could detect his expression. Only his cold voice could be heard.

When Scarlett heard this, a sullen look appeared on her face. And she was about to continue mocking.

However, what happened next made her swallow back the words she wanted to say.

Liam held Ajax's throat tightly with one hand and hit Ajax's face with the other.

A series of bangs echoed again.

Ajax was pinned to the floor, and Liam's fist kept hitting him violently.

Liam was so fierce that the floor cracked continuously. Broken pieces of tiles splashed everywhere.

"He will be killed!" someone in the crowd suddenly shouted, and the voice instantly caused a burst of screams.

After hitting Ajax continuously for more than one minute, Liam stopped. Ajax lay on the floor silently.

Liam stood up, wiped the blood on his fist, and muttered to himself in surprise, "Ajax's bones have been completely replaced by metal, and there are also all kinds of biological weapons embedded in his body. Obviously, he was mechanically modified."

Ajax was indeed very strong now.

But Liam was King. Of course, he was stronger.

Liam pulled Ajax's arm and asked coldly, "You wanted to break my limbs, right?"

Then he pulled Ajax's arm hard.

"Ahhh!" A heartbreaking scream echoed in the entire Emperor Banquet Hall.

Liam smiled coldly and said lightly, "I thought you were a robot, and you wouldn't feel pain, let alone fear death."

After saying this, he grabbed Ajax's other arm and pulled it hard too.

"Ahhh! Nooo!" Ajax lay on the floor, and his mechanical face finally revealed a trace of ferocity. He roared, "You bastard!"

But before he could say more, blood suddenly spurted out from his body.

Ajax's arm was directly twisted off by Liam.

The banquet hall fell into dead silence.

After witnessing everything, the crowd had nothing in their hearts now but fear.

Chapter 356 We Are On The Same Side

At this moment, everyone was terrified.

Three loud gunshots suddenly rang out in the entire Emperor Banquet Hall.

It turned out that Scarlett took out a Magnum pistol and shot Liam three times.

However, even if Liam was fighting with Ajax, he kept an eye on Scarlett.

So the moment she took out her gun, he had already dodged.

Another three ear-piercing gunshots sounded.

Everyone trembled in fear.

Liam sought help from the huge stone pillars of the Emperor Banquet Hall to easily dodge this round of bullets.

But one bullet hit Tyler's thigh.

"Ahhh!" Tyler's painful scream echoed in the hall.

He lay on the floor, rolling in pain.

He didn't hate Scarlett because of this. Instead, he blamed Liam in the distance.

If Liam didn't dodge, the bullet wouldn't have hit him. Liam would have been shot dead.

The resentment in Tyler's heart grew like the root of a tree, crawling into his heart and entangling it tightly. It sank deeper and deeper to the bottom.

At this moment, Liam still kept moving. The bullets from Scarlett's pistol were like ghosts following him closely all the time.

But although his body moved violently, his mind had always been calm.

He could say that Scarlett's marksmanship could be ranked in the top three among the people he had met.

He must admit that she was very powerful.

When everyone in the banquet hall saw Liam in such a mess, they all

breathed a sigh of relief.

Sure enough, no matter how good he was at fighting, he was no match for the pistol.

His strength was far weaker than King's.

Suddenly, Liam bent his knee. He was shot in the leg.

He quickly grabbed a table knife and shot it straight at Scarlett's pistol.

Everything happened so fast.

Before Scarlett could react, her pistol was already cut in the middle. ②

The expression on Scarlett's face changed. She groaned coldly, threw her pistol away decisively, and tossed a smoke bomb forward.

In an instant, a cloud of billowing gray smoke filled the entire banquet hall.

Scarlett took this opportunity to grab Ajax on the floor and disappear from the cloud of smoke.

Everyone in the hall couldn't stop coughing.

But many of them tried to crane their necks and fan the smoke in front of them away to clearly see what was going on.

However, as the smoke gradually dissipated, the scene in front of them made them feel extremely desperate.

Liam stood in the middle of the Emperor Banquet Hall, pouring himself a glass of red wine as if nothing had happened.

"Ha-ha!" While everyone was still in shock, Sutton in the crowd suddenly burst into laughter.

At this moment, he only felt incomparably happy and relieved.

Sure enough, no matter how strong Ajax was, he could only run away like a stray dog after being beaten by Liam.

Choosing to be on Liam's side was the rightest thing he did. He won the bet.

He was still the head of the Seymour family.

The rich people in the crowd all looked at Sutton from a distance with different expressions.

The Seymour family had already fallen from power. Even if Sutton was

still the head of the Seymour family, they were not very afraid of him anymore.

They just thought he was so lucky.

Meanwhile, Kevin looked at the still intact Liam, so frightened that he couldn't help trembling.

Since Liam won, wouldn't he be dead?

He was doomed today.

Liam seemed to have seen through Kevin's mind. He put down his glass and slowly walked towards Kevin.

Kevin took several steps back, swallowed his saliva repeatedly, and said in a panic, "No, don't come over! I have money. If you forgive me, I can give you money, no matter how much you want."

Liam smiled coldly and said in a voice that seemed to come from a bottomless abyss, "I don't think I've ever come to provoke you, have I? But you? You came to me over and over again, wanting to kill me. You deserve to die."

These words made Kevin's legs weak. He directly knelt down in front of Liam.

He quickly denied, "No, I didn't mean to go against you. It was all because of Tyler. He gave me money to deal with you."

Tyler, lying on the floor at the side, was already in so much pain that he was about to faint.

When he heard Kevin betray him without hesitation, all his grievances and resentment turned into endless anger which surged in his heart.

Suddenly, Tyler spat out a mouthful of blood.

He craned his neck and roared, "Kevin, we two are on the same side. Don't try to dissociate yourself from me."

Kevin pointed at Tyler and said resentfully, "Do you think you deserve to be on the same side as me. You wish!"

Everyone's face turned deathly pale as they watched this scene.

It seemed no one could deal with Liam today.

At this moment, King suddenly stood up from the central seat and said, "Kevin, don't be afraid. I can kill Liam."